



GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 08

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

Synopsis

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 701: Assistance!

One officer came up to Lie Ming Yi and spoke with urgency, "Not good! Commander, the zombies are scaling up the mountain!!"

"What?" Lie Ming Yi's face fell when he heard it.

The terrain that Lie Ming Yi had chosen to set up defense was narrow, and the only way through was to go through the narrow valley within the gorge. Usually, the zombies were stupid and would usually try to squeeze through the valley. However, the horde was actually trying to climb the mountain, which was a terrifying thought to Lie Ming Yi's troops.

Just defending the gorge had already caused Lie Ming Yi to lose over a hundred soldiers, on top of the destruction of the various trap and defensive structures. If the zombies were to really scale the mountain, the entire brigade would be in danger.

The troops Lie Ming Yi commanded were simply too little compared to the 2 million zombies. There was a 1:1000 difference, and without the advantage of terrain, equipment, and intelligence, they would have long since been wiped out.

At this time, another commander charged into the command center and exclaimed excitedly, "Brigade Commander!! Brigade Commander!! Leader is here!! Leader has arrived with reinforcements!! He had already crushed the main zombie force and is here to help us!!"

"Awesome!! Long live Leader!!"

"Fuck yeah!!! Leader!!!!"

"....."

The command center immediately erupted in cheers, at their most dire of situations, Yue Zhong had personally led troops to come help them, pushing their morale through the roof.

Lie Ming Yi was excited but he couldn't help asking, "What? Leader had already crushed the main zombie force? How is that possible? There are over 10 million zombies there?!"

The rest of the people calmed down and looked towards the officer curiously. Just fighting 2 million zombies was already stretching them thin, which soldiers dying every second. They had found it extremely tough against this horde that had an intelligent commander behind them.

Yue Zhong had told Lie Ming Yi and the rest to hold on for 3 days, after which they had to evacuate. However, who knew that within a short period of time, they were already beginning to feel a tremendous pressure. Yet, Yue Zhong had somehow managed to destroy the main force, and they all couldn't help but feel curious.

The officer replied, "Leader had directly ordered a nuke on the commander of the horde, instantly wiping out the main controllers. The horde immediately came to a stop after that."

"Nuclear missile?!"

When the officials heard this, they all sucked in a breath of cold air. They all knew the kind of damage and long-term effects of a nuclear weapon, Yue Zhong was actually forced to this extent, it seemed that it wasn't as simple as they had thought.

On the other hand, using a nuclear missile to defeat 10 million zombies, was a decent trade-off.

The 20 Thunder Fighters were dropping cluster bombs everywhere on Liu Yue Mei's instructions, annihilating the Z-Types.

After the horde lost their 200-odd Z-Types, the main Z3 in control quickly tried to flee, only to be blasted to pieces by the rockets fired by the 20 Thunder Fighters.

The moment the Z3 was killed, the zombie horde instantly crumbled, with hundreds of thousands trying to flee under the

instructions of those Z-Types that were still alive, while the vast majority stood still and did not move any further.

"Powerful!!"

Within the command center, everyone saw the huge mass of zombies coming to a halt, as though they were marionettes that had lost their strings, and their hearts were filled with shock.

"This is Yue Zhong. Lie Ming Yi, heed my commands, send a company to assist the 5th Brigade, and another company to assist the 4th Brigade. The remaining troops will clear this place."

Lie Ming Yi responded in a resounding voice, "Yes! Leader!!"

Since Yue Zhong had given his command, Lie Ming Yi just had to follow.

Within the Thunder Fighter, Yue Zhong spoke to Zhao Tian Gang, "To the 3rd Brigade!"

Zhao Tian Gang couldn't help but blurt, "Leader, it's getting late. You should head back to recover. Our ammunition also requires some refilling."

After 2 major battles, the 20 Thunder Fighters had spent much of their ammunition and fuel. They had to replenish before they could continue. Furthermore, Zhao Tian Gang knew Yue Zhong's condition was serious, requiring rest and recovery. He had never seen someone whose chest had been impaled and lived. He knew that while Yue Zhong was still not dead, he was definitely in pain, as evident from the amount of perspiration.

Bai Xiao Sheng frowned and replied, "That's true! Boss, the 3rd Brigade is full of the Mongolians and were our enemies not long ago. It's good for their strength to be worn down by the zombies. Whereas you're really too injured. You need rest."

The 3rd Brigade was formed from the Mongolian troops, their commander Hu-er Ran. Since the majority of them were Mongolians, even though Yue Zhong placed a few Han

commanders in, the rest was still fiercely loyal to Hu-er Ran. Even though they were enemies once, Yue Zhong could not help but admire Hu-er Ran's charisma as a leader.

They had a strong independent streak and had the potential to revolt or rebel. Hence, Yue Zhong had always been guarded against them. Many troops also did not view the 3rd Brigade as their comrades.

Bai Xiao Sheng himself viewed them with contempt, even lower than the Tiger Wolf Army that was made up of ex-Scum Battalion members. After all, they were a risk.

Yue Zhong frowned, "Regardless of who they are, as long as they haven't rebelled, they're my troops and your comrades. As to our comrades, it doesn't matter what problems we have, we need to prioritize the missions and celebrate success together. Support one another. Only like that will our troops remain united, and truly become a single united army. This is a question of principle. Let the rest of the Thunder Fighters head back to refuel and refill. Zhao Tian Gang, take me to the 3rd Brigade's area. This is an order! Cough cough!"

Although he was guarded against them, he could not deny the many contributions they had done for him. Hu-er Ran had led the 3rd Brigade to recover many cities.

In order not to give Yue Zhong any excuse to take them down, Hu-er Ran had led the 3rd Brigade on multiple expeditions with all their might, killing zombies. While their equipment might not be on par with the 1st Regiment or 2nd Brigade, the numbers of zombies they killed were no lesser.

During this period of war, Yue Zhong would definitely do something to shoot himself in the foot.

After he spoke finish, he was struck by another coughing fit, throwing up blood, and the perspiration flowing down his face like rain.

Zhao Tian Gang did not dare disobey, and immediately maneuvered the Thunder Fighter in the direction as he replied, "Yes! Leader!"

The other 19 Thunder Fighters immediately returned, while Zhao Tian Gang brought Yue Zhong towards the 3rd Brigade.

Xu Yuan Gorge.

By now, the entire Xu Yuan Gorge had turned to a scene right out of hell, as gunshots rang out everywhere, corpses strewn all over the ground.

A number of rockets blasted the dense zombies, blasting hundreds of them into pieces, however, the endless sea continued to fill up the gaps.

There were many traps and constructions that had been overrun by the zombies, and the zombies were not only continuing their advance through the valley but up the 2 sides as well.

Ordinary zombies would not climb up the hills, however, the Devourers and Hunters could scale those hills with ease as they lunged for the soldiers.

Hu-er Ran had led his troops against countless skirmishes against zombies before, against the Devourers and Hunters, they were somewhat prepared.

The Devourers and Hunters had not climbed far, when the areas they were at suddenly exploded with a powerful force, blasting them into pieces.

Throughout the 2 hills on either side of the valley, Hu-er Ran had long since planted a huge number of landmines as well as remote-controlled explosives. The moment the evolved zombies tried to attack, he would cause those traps to go off.

Even then, in spite of all his preparations, a number of evolved zombies managed to make it past the hills and started their attacks on the soldiers of the 3rd Brigade.

Every single one of those zombies was extremely strong and they easily slaughtered a number of the ordinary soldiers of the 3rd Brigade before the experts stepped in to counterattack.

Hua Bu La Ci was extremely anxious as he urged, "Great Khan!! We can't go on like this!! If we continue, we're going to be wiped out! Let's flee!!"

The 2 million zombies were just like a sea, and even after all of Hu-er Ran's preparations, many soldiers were lost to the relentless zombies.

After battling an entire day, the 3rd Brigade had lost 500 people, purely from battle. The scary thing about fighting zombies was that as long as a person was scratched, there was no chance of survival.

Yue Zhong had managed to live after being slashed by Feng Bo because he had already used the G-Vaccine, and he had already developed an antibody towards the zombie virus, and he could no longer turn into one.

Hu-er Ran's gaze was complicated as he surveyed the front lines, before he spoke, "No! We have to hold out! Three days! Regardless of the price, we have to defend for 3 days. This concerns the survival of all our people of the Central Plains. We can only win! Even if I were to die, we must definitely not retreat!"

Hu-er Ran was once the leader of the Central Plains after all, and he could see the big picture. He knew clearly that once they lost this battle, the ordinary survivors of the Central Plains would not stand a chance. For the sake of the big picture and the people, he was willing to sacrifice himself.

Hua Bu Lai Ci screamed out, "Great Khan!! It's not worth it!! Yue Zhong has never viewed us as one of his, our weapons and equipment can't compare to the 1st Regiment nor the 2nd Brigade, even the 4th and 5th Brigade have better equipment than us! It's not worth sacrificing ourselves for him!! He will make use of the

zombies to wear us down, and not save us at all!!"

Chapter 702: The Might of the Sky Fortress!

Hearing Hua Bu La Ci's words, the rest of the commanders of the 3rd Battalion began to waver. They knew that Yue Zhong was indeed cautious about them. If it wasn't for the fact that the number of zombies they were about to face reached 2 million, he would not have equipped them so generously. They were also worried that Yue Zhong might abandon them, allowing the zombies to wear them down, before taking the opportunity to wipe them out.

This was the tragedy of their troops. They had to worry about equipment, the differences in treatment, and even the possibility of abandonment. The worst was being treated as cannon fodder.

Hu-er Ran maintained his position, ordering coolly, "No retreat!"

Just as Hua Bu La Ci was about to try and persuade him again, an officer charged in excitedly, "Leader is here! He's here to help!!"

"Thank the heavens!!"

"The Leader is here? He truly didn't abandon us!! Long live!!!"

"...."

When they heard this, the command center immediately erupted in cheers, once Yue Zhong came himself, it meant that he would not give up on them.

The commander continued, "There's news from Leader's side earlier, they had already defeated the main driving force of the zombies, and had helped the 2nd Brigade defeat the 2nd area."

"For real?"

"Unbelievable!!"

"How is that impossible?"

"It can't be?"

"...."

Hearing those words, all the commanders broke out in a discussion, their faces filled with disbelief. They could all swear as to the terror of the zombies, having faced them up close on the front lines. The 2 million zombies were enough to fill them with despair, and they weren't even confident holding out for 3 days.

Yue Zhong had to deal with 10 times the number, and yet he had managed to defeat them?

Hu-er Ran's eyes were filled with suspicion, as he asked, "Did Leader say how he defeated them?"

Although he could not believe that Yue Zhong had defeated the zombies so easily, he knew Yue Zhong would not treat it like a joke.

The officer replied, "Nuclear missile! Leader had fired a missile at the commanding zombies, and immediately defeated them in one fell swoop!!"

"Nuclear bomb!!"

When they heard this, all the officers felt their hearts turn cold. It was a terrifying man-made weapon. All along, they had been using military tactics and strategies, and never would have expected Yue Zhong to actually fire a nuclear missile on China itself.

Hua Bu La Ci turned pale, not daring to say anything else. Yue Zhong had actually used this, he was obviously pushed to a corner. Had he utilized it against them, the 3rd Brigade would not have survived.

Hu-er Ran felt a chill, "Nuclear bomb! What a ruthless decision!"

The effects of a nuclear weapon on its environment were extremely devastating. Hu-er- Ran knew that if he was in Yue Zhong's shoes, he could not have made such a decision easily.

Once a nuclear weapon was used, the area of damage would be a wasteland for at least a 100 years, furthermore, it was uncertain the kind of mutations that would occur around.

"Leader is here!! Quick go welcome him!"

Not long after, Yue Zhong arrived in front of the command center in the Thunder Fighter.

"Salutations to Leader!"

The moment he alighted, the commanders of the 3rd Brigade immediately came forward to greet him.

Hu-er Ran took one look at Yue Zhong and exclaimed, "Leader! You're injured?"

By now, even though Yue Zhong had switched to a new set of uniform, every single step he took caused him to grimace, with perspiration flowing down his forehead while Bai Xiao Sheng supported him.

Hu-er Ran knew that Yue Zhong was the strongest among them, and even against the Apostles of the KoG, he still had means to deal with them. Yet now, he was obviously injured badly.

Bai Xiao Sheng coldly, ordered, "Leader was gravely injured when he fought the commanders of the main zombie horde, however, he insisted on coming here to support your troops. Hu-er Ran, Leader has already given the order for you guys to maintain your stance here for a day. Can your 3rd Brigade achieve it?"

"Yue Zhong is heavily injured!" When Hu-er Ran heard this, his heart skipped a beat. He became agitated, after all, he was a warlord as well, and from time to time, he would still think of rebuilding the Great Mongolian Empire. Up till now, he had carried out his duties for Yue Zhong because he was forced to. Since Yue Zhong was injured now, it was a great opportunity for him. If he could off him, Yue Zhong's faction would be split apart, and he had the chance to rebuild Mongolia.

When he thought of the possibility of rebuilding Mongolia, Hu-er Ran's mouth turned dry and his heartbeat quickened. Although he was the commander of the 3rd Brigade, due to the caution and wariness that everyone showed them, he didn't feel as though he could live freely, unlike when he was the king.

Hu-er Ran's eyes flashed with a vicious glint, as he looked towards Yue Zhong, only to discover Yue Zhong smiling, yet not smiling, at him. His gaze landed on the people beside Yue Zhong, and the ambition that was rising in his heart was immediately doused.

Beside Yue Zhong stood Ji Qing Wu and Yin Shuang.

Hu-er Ran had seen for himself how Yin Shuang could pummel an Apostle, if she was to go crazy here, the entire 3rd Brigade might not be able to withstand a single blow from her. He had no confidence in facing her headlong as well.

Hu-er Ran immediately abandoned whatever thoughts he had, as he gathered his subordinates and saluted Yue Zhong, replying respectfully, "Yes, we promise to fulfill our mission!!

Yue Zhong looked at him and thought to himself, "He's still ambitious as ever, and is smart enough."

Had Hu-er Ran dared to act against Yue Zhong, then Yue Zhong would have the excuse to wipe out Hu-er Ran and his men, removing the 3rd Brigade in the name of martial law. However, Hu-er Ran had not taken the bait, and thus, Yue Zhong did not have a reason to go crazy either.

Of course, with Yue Zhong's current strength, he could still force a cleanse on the 3rd Brigade. However, it might cause the rest of the people who had submitted to him to feel apprehensive, and the trust in him would be affected greatly. Once that happens, his faction would start to slowly erode, after all, who would be willing to follow a leader who went back on his words? His promises would not be worth anything then.

The moment he went to the front lines, the morale of the 3rd Brigade instantly soared, and their combat prowess increased by 30%, eradicating a few waves of zombies with ease.

Since he had come down personally, it meant that he would not abandon the 3rd Brigade, therefore, the soldiers were much more willing to give it their all.

Soon after, night fell.

When it was evening, flares were shot into the skies, illuminating the entire Xu Yuan Gorge.

Under the command of the Z-Types, the zombies continued their relentless assault on the Xu Yuan Gorge.

The combat effectiveness of humans would be affected in the night. Furthermore, they had already fought an entire day. Everyone was exhausted, and the casualty count was increasing.

Hu-er Ran could only deploy the supplementary group to assist the soldiers at the front lines, while they slowly gave up on point after point.

Hu-er Ran prepared many barrels of oil at each defense point, each time the zombies overrun a place, he would set fire to the place, burning the zombies.

It was just that there were simply too many of them, and the 3rd Brigade was truly lacking in weapons. Their heavy weapons could not compare with the other 4 Brigades, and under the wave-like attack of the zombies, they could only abandon posts after posts.

"The 3rd squad is wiped out!"

"1st Platoon has lost 5 men!"

"2nd Platoon requests aid!!"

"3rd Platoon requests artillery fire!!"

"...."

Following the flow of battle, the number of calls for help began to pour in, and Hu-er Ran's face turned paler by the second.

After hesitation, Hu-er Ran walked up to Yue Zhong and exclaimed bitterly, "Leader!! I'm afraid our 3rd Brigade might let you down!! The zombie horde is too strong, and we might not be able to last past tonight!! Leader, please be prepared!"

The zombie horde was like a sea of waves, relentless and without rest. If it had been humans, after losing a certain number, the rest would quickly fall back. However, the horde knew no fear and would continue to charge forth. Although many of them were blasted apart, they did not possess psychological issues, nor the stamina of humans, as compared to humans who were at the mercy of both.

In a war between humans, both sides would need to defend while allowing for rest, hence a battle could drag for days. However, against the zombies, it was possible to determine the victor in a day, it was either the zombies being wiped out or humans being overwhelmed.

After the apocalypse, even battles had changed and morphed.

Yue Zhong replied solemnly, "Hang on! Our reinforcements are coming!"

Hu-er Ran was shocked, "Reinforcements?"

"What in the world is that...?"

"UFO?"

"No! Is that the seat of God?"

"...."

Right at that moment, a flurry of discussion began to break out among the soldiers.

In the sky, the huge Sky Fortress floated across, swiftly approaching Xu Yuan Gorge. When the soldiers saw the Sky

Fortress, they were shocked, it was the first time coming across this thing. It seemed like something out of a sci-fi movie from before the apocalypse.

Suddenly, a number of holes opened at the side of the Fortress, as many machine guns, laser guns and laser cannons appeared.

At the next instant, the Sky Fortress began to rain hell upon the zombies in a shower of bullets and laser beams, blasting a wide area.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As though going through a baptism, the entire horde was blasted mercilessly.

Hu-er Ran looked at the mighty Sky Fortress up in the sky and his heart trembled, "What a terrifying weapon of war! Is this the reinforcements he was referring to? That's too overpowered!!"

Just that single Sky Fortress was enough to devastate the entire 3rd Brigade, and having witnessed the prowess of the Sky Fortress, Hu-er Ran buried his ambitions deep in his heart.

Chapter 703: Cleaning up the Traitors!

"Too strong!! What a terrifying Sky Fortress!" Chen Yan, the commander within the Sky Fortress watched as the zombies below were being wasted away like nothing, his heart full of excitement and shock.

It was the first time they were utilizing the Sky Fortress for battle, and they had stocked it up with large amounts of ammunition. As they flew across, the countless bullets and explosives rained down, blasting the zombies into pieces.

The soldiers on board the Sky Fortress erupted in cheers as they watched the zombies scatter.

The moment it appeared, the advance of the zombie horde came to a stop.

The soldiers of the 3rd Brigade also became revitalized and held out for the entire night.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong had sent out Liu Yue Mei who had rested and recovered her Spirit, sending out the 20 Thunder Fighters as they began their assault on the horde, pinpointing the Z-Types.

As the explosions rang out, the Z-Types were taken out one by one, and the entire horde soon crumbled.

The moment they defeated the zombies facing the 3rd Brigade, Yue Zhong immediately brought Liu Yue Mei and continued towards the other areas.

The rest of the zombie hordes were dealt with one by one under Yue Zhong's strategy.

With the main commanders of each horde wiped out, Yue Zhong then left his forces on the front line to continue dealing with the rest of the horde, while he retreated to rest.

Having lost the intelligent commanders, the rest of the zombie hordes were like punching bags to be killed by the 6 units of Yue Zhong's forces.

Every day, a large number of zombies would be dealt with by a multitude of methods, and the corpses transported back to be converted to nutrients for the Mother Tree, Rice Tree and the rest of the Mutant Plants.

Bì Lǚ, under Ji Qing Wu's watch, led 10,000 treants to hunt the zombies as well. Each day, the Treant army was able to slaughter at least 200,000 zombies alone.

The moment the Z-types and intelligent commanders of the zombies were killed, it spelled the doom of the huge zombie horde. However, because of the sheer numbers, even if all of Yue Zhong's forces were to go all out, they required time.

The zombies had no commander and were gathered together, it was the best situation to deal with. In order to quickly eradicate these 10 million zombies, Yue Zhong had also brought most of his forces here to deal with them.

If these 10 million zombies were to suddenly come under the control of an intelligent evolved being, even if Yue Zhong were to use another nuclear missile, he would not be able to wipe them all out. Therefore, he was unwilling to allow them to exist for a moment longer than necessary.

On a large field in Ulan City, a number of soldiers were standing around, while a thousand survivors were tied up and forced to kneel. Their faces were pale with fear. Beyond the perimeter, the other survivors of Ulan City were pointing at them and murmuring among themselves.

Yue Zhong sat on a sofa, with Zhuo Ya Tong and Yin Shuang in his embrace, as he looked at Situ Jin who was brought before him with an indifferent expression, "Why did you betray me?"

Yue Zhong had not expected that this honest and professional soldier would choose to betray him. He had been on guard against Hu-er Ran, and instead, it was Situ Jin who he valued greatly and appreciated who had betrayed him. Whereas Hu-er Ran had been the one to fight with all his might on the front lines, and even in the direst of circumstances, he had not turned against Yue Zhong nor flee.

When Yue Zhong was dealing with the 6 separate zombie hordes, it had been his weakest moment, and thus, he had left the Sky Fortress as a trump card just in case Hu-er Ran rebelled. The ironic thing was that, instead of Hu-er Ran, it had been Situ Jin.

Situ Jin's gaze was complicated as he eyed Yue Zhong, before softly replying, "You're unorthodox."

A lot of people valued orthodoxy, especially military men. It was precisely because Yue Zhong had been a normal person before the apocalypse, that Situ Jin chose to betray him. In every generation, there would be those who were loyal to the system, and the old order. It boiled down to a difference in beliefs.

"Orthodox?" Yue Zhong's mouth twitched, as he let out a cold, condescending laugh, "Lian Da Zhong, convey my orders. Round up these rebels and throw them to the zombies. The women are sentenced to the Women Battalion, while the rest of the men are to be thrown into the Scum Battalion."

Being fed to the zombies alive was one of the cruelest punishments. After they were eaten alive, they would be executed to prevent the turning, then used to nourish the Mother Tree. The moment the rebels heard Yue Zhong's order, their faces turned pale and began to curse out loud.

Beside Situ Jin were many military officers, they were his buddies and comrades and were the main culprits in this rebellion as well. The moment they heard the sentence, they were all frightened.

One of Situ Jin's oldest friend, the owner of the restaurant, kneeled down and began to kowtow profusely, causing his forehead to bleed, "Leader!! It was none of my business!! Situ Jin had forced me!! Please spare me!! Please, Leader!! I still have a 12-year-old daughter to take care of! Please!!"

Another young officer kneeled down and begged profusely as well, "Leader!! It was all Situ Jin, it was Situ Jin this bastard who forced me!! I wasn't willing to betray you, he held a gun against me!! Please, spare me!! I'm willing to go to the Scum Battalion to kill zombies. Please!!"

"....."

Other than 7 or 8 of them who knew they had no way out, the rest began to denounce and curse Situ Jin as they kneeled and cried out for their lives. They did not want to be torn apart alive by the zombies.

Situ Jin got down on his knees and begged, "Yue Zhong, this time, it's my fault!! I shall take responsibility! Take it out all on me!! This has nothing to do with the innocent, please show mercy and leave their families alone!"

Yue Zhong stared at him hatefully while speaking icily, "You want me to let these bastards go? No fucking way! Our tens of thousands of brothers-in-arms had been fighting with their lives on the line, and for what? Wasn't it to protect you fucking lot? You bastards dare to strike us in the back when we're risking our lives if you guys had succeeded, what then? Our brothers would all have to die with no burial grounds! Our families would suffer the same fate!! And you bastards still want to live?! You want to be a hero here?! Fucking eyesore!! Drag him away!"

One soldier came up and stared at Situ Jin with hate in his eyes, smashing down with the butt of his rifle, knocking Situ Jin's teeth out, "Bastard!! Shut the hell up!! My brother had died on the frontline, and he was harmed by you bastards who backstabbed

us!!"

When Situ Jin was smashed in the face by that soldier, his eyes turned dim, filled with pain. He was also from the military and knew the pain of the betrayal of his own people. The soldier's words caused his heart to be full of pain and regret.

The rest of the soldiers watched coldly as the traitors were dragged out one by one, thrown towards the punishment pit.

In the pit, there were a dozen zombies caught by the soldiers of Yue Zhong's army.

One of the rebels was dragged by 2 soldiers towards the edge of the pit, before being shoved in.

"No!!!! No!!!" The rebel dropped in, his face turning pale, as he shrieked out like a pig being slaughtered.

When the dozens of zombies caught the scent of a human, they began to shamle forwards, opening their rotting mouths and bit down viciously on the body of the soldier, tearing off huge chunks of meat.

"Ah!!! AHHH!!!"

The rebel screamed out loud as he was torn apart by the zombies, the scene extremely gory.

One by one, the rebels were thrown in and screamed as they were eaten alive.

Those who took part in the protest all felt their hairs stand in fear. Many of them had never seen how Yue Zhong did things, seeing it now caused them to be filled with intense fear.

Soon after, soldiers from the Scum Battalion marched out with whips in their hands, entering the field to drag off the soldiers who took part in the protests and their families, dragging them towards the Scum Battalion, where they would be treated as cannon fodder in the first instance.

Battling on the front lines was extremely tough, plus they needed all the help they could get, that was why Yue Zhong would sentence them to the Scum Battalion, otherwise, he would have killed them all.

Yue Zhong then turned to Ying Kong who stood at one side, speaking softly, "Ying Kong, you done well this time. How would you like to be rewarded?"

This time, in spite of Situ Jin's betrayal, Ying Kong had chosen not to follow suit, instead, he stood against his ex-superior. This pleased Yue Zhong greatly.

Ying Kong immediately got down on his knees, pleading, "Leader, I only hope for you to have mercy on the family members of Commander Situ and the rest. I do not need any rewards!"

Yue Zhong's countenance turned frosty, as he rejected it, "No! As criminals, I cannot pardon them. Otherwise, there will be no end to such episodes."

Ying Kong sighed in his heart and knew that this person was hard to budge. He pondered a while before speaking up, "In that case, I hope to fight on the front lines, Leader!"

Yue Zhong nodded, "Ok! I promise you. From now on, you are the platoon commander of the 2nd Brigade 1st Company 2nd Platoon. Go!"

Ying Kong saluted, "Thank you, Leader!", before leaving, slightly forlorn.

Yue Zhong then turned to face Lian Da Zhong and Cha Bi Lai, speaking indifferently, "Lian Da Zhong, Cha Bi Lai, this time, you 2 have done a great service."

Lian Da Zhong immediately began to shower words of praise while being smug, "It's all because of your amazing leadership and wise decisions, Leader. That was how we could have done this."

Yue Zhong continued mildly, "I intend to set up a 6th Infantry

Brigade, the commander shall be you, Lian Da Zhong, while Cha Bi Lai shall be the vice-commander. You may select your troops from the supplementary troops."

The both of them immediately began to thank him profusely, "Thank you, Leader!! Thank you!!"

Chapter 704: Gates of Hell!

Although Lian Da Zhong was a shrewd person, he did contribute in his own way. Furthermore, he was somewhat loyal to Yue Zhong. That was why Yue Zhong was comfortable with giving him such a rank and post. Together with Cha Bi Lai, whose ability to command was exceptional, both of them would have no problems leading a brigade of their own.

Once he made his decision, he immediately pulled out 3,000 people from the supplementary troops and established the 6th Division, throwing them right into training and the killing of zombies.

Meanwhile, in Europe, the base of the Kingdom of God, the Council of Elders were currently engaged in heated discussion.

"Nuclear missile! That Yue Zhong actually dared use the missile! Didn't China promise not to use it first? How can they break their promise?!"

"Yue Zhong and the old China has no relations, it's no surprise that he used it."

"20 million zombies, and he managed to navigate through such a difficult situation! Truly fearsome!"

"Sky Fortress, that huge metal chunk flying in the air must be the Sky Fortress. Seems like he has already gained the core diagram of that technology."

"Yes! That's the Sky Fortress! We must get the blueprint from him!"

"How could he give it to us so easily?!"

"...."

Inside the meeting hall, as the Elders argued back and forth, they were filled with trepidation towards Yue Zhong's ever-increasing

military might. Especially the possession of the Sky Fortress.

The entire thing would require all 7 pieces of the blueprint, and the Kingdom of God themselves possessed a few of those blueprints and knew how mighty the entire thing could turn out.

Once it is manufactured, warfare would change entirely.

Erek heard the arguments going back and forth, while he sighed silently, "Nuclear missile! He actually resorted to that!"

With nuclear weapons, Yue Zhong had become a feared entity, especially since he even dared to fire such a weapon on his own home ground, not to mention any other countries.

The moment they knew he had used such a weapon, everyone in the Kingdom of God had become nervous about him, forget about sending any troops to deal with him.

Because of that single missile, the entire upper echelons of the Kingdom of God was thrown into a debate.

Yue Zhong did not know about the ongoing in Europe, he was only concerned with deploying his troops to wipe out the zombies that had lost the command of the Z-Types.

After 2 months, the huge horde was finally entirely eliminated, and the total expenditure of ammunition had been 90%. 3,000 soldiers of the Scum Battalion had perished, while hundreds of elites were lost as well.

Having finally eliminated the zombies, Yue Zhong led his troops into the capital.

Since all the zombies in the Capital had been brought away by Xuan Yuan and Feng Bo at that time and were already eliminated, Yue Zhong walked in extremely relaxed.

The Capital!

A jeep came to a halt on the dusty pavement, while Yue Zhong and Yao Yao stepped out.

Yao Yao, a natural Agility-based Evolver, had already grown to possess the Strength and Vitality traits as well, becoming a Triple-Attribute Evolver. Her level had reached 60, and since Ji Qing Wu was afraid of Yue Zhong being targeted, she had asked Yao Yao to come along as Yue Zhong's guard.

Yue Zhong took a look at the once-lavish place, his eyes flashing with a strange glint, "So this is the Forbidden City?"

After he had recovered the capital, he had received a notification telling him to enter the Forbidden City, where he would truly complete the mission for recovery of the capital.

Yue Zhong laughed mildly as he walked further in.

Yao Yao followed closely behind.

The moment Yue Zhong stepped no more than 10 meters in, a flurry of notifications sounded out in his mind.

"Congratulations! For conquering the capital of China, you have gained the title 'Conqueror of the Capital of China!' The title grants you +5 in all 6 attributes. The title cannot be re-earned! Titles' effects can be stacked!"

"You have brought your troops to conquer the capital of China and gained +5 levels, earning 10 points to be allocated!"

"You have brought your troops to conquer the capital of China, earning 1,000,000 Survivor Coins!"

"You have brought your troops to conquer the capital of China, earning Level 5 Defense Vest!"

"You have brought your troops to conquer the capital of China, earning 2 skill points to be allocated!"

"Congratulations on reaching Level 90, you have gained 1 skill point!"

As the notifications rang out, a black Defense Vest appeared in his hands.

"Level 5 Defense Vest: Upon equipping, +25 to all attributes. It can withstand the bullets from a 25mm heavy cannon, prevents radiation, poisonous gas, and the ability to resist all sorts of harsh environments!"

With a single thought, he quickly allocated the 2 precious skill points into his Devil Flame skill, and in his mind, the Devil Flame rune went through another transformation, gaining new lines of runes, and reaching a +2 Enhancement.

"As Yue Zhong had recovered the capital of China, defeating over 10 million zombies and the evolved intelligent beings, the 2nd Stage is brought forward. The Gates of Hell have officially opened!"

As the sound rang out in his mind, at the same time, a number of gigantic and monstrous doorways appeared all over the globe. The doors were etched with all sorts of engravings, depicting skeletons, Mutant Beasts, demons, werewolves, giant bugs. They gave off a terrifying aura.

When the doors appeared, all lifeforms near them were instantly filled with fear, as they scrambled to flee as far as they could. Many zombies didn't manage to react at the first moment and were turned to dust.

At the same time, one of these doors appeared in front of Yue Zhong suddenly.

"The Tides of Hell has begun, from now on, 20 random people who have yet to join any faction possessing a Novice Village would be pulled to the Abandoned Lands of the 2nd World at any random time."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his heart turned cold. Fortunately, he had already gained control of a God and Devil Novice Village early on, otherwise, had this announcement come on, he would lose 20 people randomly from time to time.

"You are the first leader to have recovered the capital of a major

country, and thus, possess the qualifications to enter the beta-experience for the 2nd Stage. Are you going to enter the beta-experience for the 2nd Stage now? If you give up the right to enter now and would like to enter the beta-experience again, you will have to bring your troops to conquer another major capital that possessed over a billion people, with over a hundred million people in your faction."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his face fell, "Fuck! Why is it like this?"

By conquering the capital of China, he had already expended over 90% of his reserves. If he wanted to conquer any other countries, it was basically an insurmountable task. He had never expected to have to make a choice the moment he conquered the capital.

"Should you enter now and last an entire year, once you return to this world, you'll gain a treasure - Heart of Hope."

Yue Zhong took a deep breath and asked, "Am I able to communicate with those from this world when I'm over there?"

"You may make use of the system as well as people present in the Evolving Temples to communicate."

"Give me a moment!"

"You still have 30 minutes to make a choice."

Yue Zhong swiftly summoned the few subordinates of his that he trusted and relayed everything he needed to, before sending them away from the Forbidden City.

When he had entered the Forbidden City, it was shrouded in a layer of mysterious lights, forbidding him from communicating with anyone outside of the light. However, the people beside him could pass through the barrier to go out.

When everyone had left, Yue Zhong then spoke solemnly, "I choose to enter the 2nd World!"

The moment his words landed, the Gates of Hell in front of him opened slowly, revealing a tunnel in the void.

At the same time, there was a flash of light, as a golden imprint appeared on his right hand.

"This is the system imprint, with it, you may communicate with those in your Evolving Temple. However, you may only use this once a month. You may test it out now."

He looked at the imprint and with a thought, he found his consciousness appearing inside the Job Change Statue in the Evolving temple. He could clearly see a few soldiers currently undergoing job changes and choosing their skills.

Right now in Guang Xi, due to Yue Zhong's development, many soldiers were brought there to become Enhancers, undergoing job changes.

Yue Zhong could become a hegemon over the Central Plains was because of the Enhancers that came out from his Evolving Temple.

"The gates would remain open for 10 seconds! Please enter immediately! After that, it will close shut!"

He heard the notification, turning around to look at the Gates of Hell. He took a deep breath and stepped inside.

Everything about the 2nd Stage was unknown, Yue Zhong only knew that things were about to get rougher, and he needed to check it out properly, in order to deal with anything.

When he entered the Gates, they quickly close behind him.

The scenery in front of him distorted and before he knew it, he had arrived at another place.

Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings, only to see the entire place covered with blackened dirt, not a single hint of green anywhere.

The sky was overcast and grey, as though covered with dust

everywhere, giving off a sense of suffocation.

Yue Zhong around this bleak place, and could not help but suck in a breath of cold air, "This is the 2nd World?"

He tried to look closer all around him, only to discover a wide barren land.

He found a piece of shrapnel and held it up to take a look, noticing that there were similarities between it and the shrapnel back at his world, "There must have been some major battle here!"

Chapter 705: Enter! The 2nd World!

Yue Zhong stared at the piece of shrapnel, thinking silently, "It's fortunate, at least this piece means that the technology of this world isn't too far out."

Had the science of this world been too overpowered, he was afraid that he might get crushed to death without understanding what had happened.

Yue Zhong looked around, failing to find anything of value, before pulling out a compass to determine a direction and started walking.

He had just walked a few steps when suddenly, a man in tattered clothes appeared in front of him in a flash.

Following that, a number of people appeared in a similar manner beside him.

Yue Zhong took a few steps back, raising his Flame Blade up in wariness as he looked at the humans who had been sent over.

Yue Zhong was extremely clear that even though he was the Evolver with the highest-level back on Earth after all those additional rewards, there were other people whose strength might not necessarily be weaker than him. They might even surpass him. The Apostles of the Kingdom of God were existences that were on similar levels.

Some Evolvers had hidden away in the various mountain gorges in order to become stronger. These cultivators were not to be underestimated. Furthermore, who knew what mutations and evolutions had occurred, should Yue Zhong come across some sick freak who trained every day, even he did not have the confidence of dealing with them.

The lights flashed continuously for a while, as people were teleported with each light.

Yue Zhong observed the people carefully.

From among them, there were a few solo ones, as well as groups. The most was an entire group of 20 being sent over. This bunch looked to be students, some were naked obviously in the middle of something, while some were in non-mainstream makeup. The majority of them were Asians, while 6 groups were black, and the other 7 white.

When they were sent over, each of them had fearful expressions as well, while the majority looked around in alarm just like Yue Zhong.

Somehow, the groups of people segregated themselves according to their skin color extremely quickly.

One burly man, who had a ferocious expression barked out loudly, "What is this place? Damn it, is this another joke by that shitty God?"

Among the group of female students who had makeup on, one of them who had cute features suddenly squealed in delight, rushing up to an extremely handsome man, "Kang Ryu Chan!! You are Kang Ryu Chan of the Eastern Sunshine group! I'm a huge fan!! Ryu Chan, can you sign an autograph for me?"

"Kang Ryu Chan!! Eastern Sunshine's Kang Ryu Chan!!"

"Ryu Chan, I'm your fan!! Please give me an autograph!!"

"Ryu Chan, I love you!!"

"...."

The few female students squealed in delight as they surrounded Kang Ryu Chan, gushing over him.

The Eastern Sunshine was a Korean boyband before the apocalypse and had some fame in China, earning many female Chinese fans.

A particular man who stood beside him looked at the Chinese

girls and laughed coldly, "Ryu Chan, you're truly famous eh!! Hehe, these Chinese girls are so crazy over you, adore you. You better control them well, they have some worth to them. It's time I give vent to these stupid women."

The corners of Kang Ryu Chan's mouth lifted slightly as he replied, "Yes! Mr. Taewon!"

After which, Kang Ryu Chan began to address the students with the professional smile he had been so used to, accompanied by another man.

A number of gazes fell on those girls and Kang Ryu Chan.

Yue Zhong swept a glance at them, laughing coldly as he edged away. These stupid women would pay the price soon for their idiocy.

The commotion began to attract the attention of a few people. A group of 8 naked men and women turned to look at Kang Ryu Chan and the students.

One of the burly men had his sights set on one of the students, his eyes brightening as he licked his lips, "Not bad! These little chicks seem pretty hot."

Without any intention to get dressed, he directly walked towards those fangirls while still naked, reaching out to grab one of them, while laughing boisterously, "Little bitch, get on your knees, let your master, I, have some fun!!"

Since all morals and ethics had gone out of the window since the apocalypse, the burly man had thrown all dignity and shame to the wind.

The fangirl immediately screamed out in fear, "Help!! Ryu Chan, save me!! Help!! Help!!"

Kang Ryu Chan immediately stepped forward righteously in front of the fangirl and barked out, "Excuse me, sir! Please stop your depraved acts right now!"

"Ryu Chan is so handsome!!"

"Kyaa!! I'm in love with you, Ryu Chan!!"

"Next time if I do marry, I must marry a Korean man. Korean men are all so charismatic!!"

"..."

One by one, the girls saw how Kang Ryu Chan stood in front of them so valiantly, their eyes flashing with adoration. The idol in their eyes was as heroic and charming as the Prince Charming of their dreams.

The naked man immediately grew furious, sending a powerful slap across the handsome mug of Kang Ryu Chan, "Fuck!! This senior's matters, who the fuck gave you the right to interfere, Korean dog?!!"

With a resounding 'pa', Kang Ryu Chan was sent sprawling to the ground, a few of his teeth knocked out, his entire face bleeding.

Seeing how Kang Ryu Chan was sent flying by a single slap, the eyes of the person named Mr. Taewon turned cold, as he waved his hands.

2 other men bellowed in rage and got into a posture of taekwondo, before charging towards that naked man with a speed far surpassing a normal person.

Yue Zhong eyed the 2 men and recognized their abilities, "Enhancers!"

"Scram!!" The naked man turned to glare at them, his right fist hammering out like a cannon.

The 2 Koreans were immediately sent flying backward, spitting out a mouthful of fresh blood before losing all signs of life.

After killing the 2 Koreans in such an explosive fashion, his face flashed with a savage look as he grabbed Kang Ryu Chan by the head, lifting him up, "Gigolo, fucking kneel, or this senior will rip

off your head!"

Kang Ryu Chan eyed the naked man, his body shuddering as fear flashed in his eyes. He immediately got down on the ground in front of the naked hooligan, kowtowing, "Please spare my life, master!! Spare me!! Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!!"

Those students had been protected all these while and did not experience the true cruel reality of this apocalypse, but Kang Ryu Chan knew, if he were to infuriate such cruel experts, he would definitely die as an ordinary person.

"Ryu Chan!!"

"Ryu Chan!!"

"....."

Seeing him kneeling so pitifully and kowtowing, the fangirls felt their hearts ache, as though their fantasy had been crushed.

The pretty fangirl rushed up towards the naked man with a pale face, "Don't you bully Ryu Chan!! You bastard!!"

These young teenagers were going through their rebellious phase, and their thinking was still naive, hence, this young fangirl could not stand for her idol to be mistreated.

The naked man laughed cruelly as he shot Kang Ryu Chan a glance, "Hahaha! Little rascal, seems like you don't truly understand the character of this Korean punk that you idolize. Interesting! Let me show you how cruel society is!! Kang Ryu Chan! Go tear her clothes off, and make her kneel. If she doesn't, feel free to break her legs!!"

The fangirl was shocked and retreated a few steps, before mustering her courage to shout, "Ryu Chan would not do that!!"

The originally kneeling Kang Ryu Chan immediately exploded out like some deranged demon, grabbing the girl's clothes forcefully and ripped them off.

With a loud tear, the girl's clothes were torn off completely, revealing her bra and underwear.

Kang Ryu Chan looked as though he was possessed as he roared, "Kneel!! Kneel in front of master!! Otherwise, I'll break your legs!!"

In order to live on, Kang Ryu Chan could only betray his own fan. In any case, it was not like he had any favorable feelings for her.

The fangirl could only stare blankly, the image of her idol shattering all around her. For this man in front of her, she had fought daily on the various discussion boards online. Even if this man had caused a woman's miscarriage by kicking her, she had still shielded him and believed in him. As long as any of her friends dare speak ill of her, she would immediately fall out with them. For this man, she had even ignored her own safety to protect him. Now, he was forcing her to sacrifice her body, causing her to feel a rocking sense of despair.

In her shock, she kneeled down subconsciously, her expression full of despair and numbness.

"Lan Lan!! Kang Ryu Chan you bastard!!"

"Kang Ryu Chan you beast!!"

"...."

Seeing the utterly different Kang Ryu Chan, the rest of the fangirls began to curse out loud at him.

The naked man laughed out sadistically, "HAHAHA! Good!! Kang Ryu Chan, well done!! When this senior I, am done fucking with this girl, you and I will fuck her together!! Being fucked by her idol, she must be so excited and happy!! Hahahaha!!"

Kang Ryu Chan could only nod his head in a pathetic manner, like a dog, "Yes!! Yes!! I'll fuck her properly!!"

The rest of the spectators stared at Kang Ryu Chan, their eyes filled with repulsion and reproach.

At this time, Yue Zhong spoke out coldly, "Are you done? If you are, get the fuck back."

The naked man frowned and turned to face Yue Zhong, only to stare down the wide twin barrels of the Stinger pointing at him. Immediately, he felt an overwhelming sense of danger. He laughed dryly and immediately apologized profusely, "Sorry! Sorry!!"

Chapter 706: Strange Land!

Based on Yue Zhong's personality, if someone had tried to rape a woman in front of him, he would definitely have blasted off his head without saying anything. However, it was just that he didn't care for Kang Ryu Chan much as well, and decided not to deal with the naked man yet.

The naked man chuckled a little, before returning to his group. He did not choose to antagonize Yue Zhong, as his guts told him this man was terrifying, should he attempt to, he would most likely die.

The fangirl who had her clothes ripped by Kang Ryu Chan had a complicated gaze, as she stared at Yue Zhong deeply, before walking over, "Thank you!!"

After that, she returned to her friends, without so much as a second glance at her idol, and the whole bunch of them joined the rest of their friends.

When the scene was over, this group of survivors that had been thrown into the 2nd World had already segregated into different groups.

After they separated themselves, a middle-aged man in a suit asked, "What the hell happened? What is this place? Does anyone know?"

"No!"

"Nope!!"

"..."

Everyone shook their heads, their expressions bewildered. They had been living decently on earth, who knew they were suddenly transported to this place.

Especially those girls who only knew to chase their idols. They

had been living a carefree life under the protection of an expert, but now, they have seen for themselves how terrifying humans could be.

Yue Zhong was clear that this was a world of the 2nd Stage, other than that, he knew absolutely nothing. Hence, he kept silent, standing at a corner quietly while observing the rest.

One bespectacled man who looked dignified spoke out, "Everyone, keep quiet! Quieten down! Right now, regardless of where we are, we should stick together! I think we might have been teleported here by that God. It is important to find water and food. Without it, we will die here!!"

Hearing his words, everyone else felt their hearts run cold. They had not brought much with them. In a way, they had truly been thrown here without so much as a warning. There were no resources or rations they could have prepared beforehand. In such conditions, if they didn't find water or food, they would not last more than 3 days.

The middle-aged man continued, "Everyone, I'm called Ma Fan. A snake cannot live without its head. If our small group does not have a leader to help command everyone, it's not ideal. Ma Fan is not talented, but I'm willing to take on the heavy responsibilities of being a leader and lead everyone out of this dangerous place.

Ma Fan was a smart person. He knew the importance of being in a leadership position. In China, all the good stuff had been enjoyed by the leaders, while the rest of the people had to slog just to attain barely 1/10th of what the leaders had.

The naked man glanced at Ma Fan and spat, "Hmph! Who the fuck are you? Do you want to be a leader? You better challenge this senior fist. As long as you can win me, you can be the leader for all I care."

Ma Fan was seemingly not angry as he chuckled, "Of course, the most important trait of a leader is his wits, not combat strength. I

graduated from MIT and was a chairman of the Tianlu Group. I believe that I have the means to lead everyone out of danger."

Ma Fan was not those who sought to settle things by strength. After all, he was not one to work to his disadvantages.

Yue Zhong eyed these unreasonable people and shook his head, walking towards the distance. He didn't want to have anything to do with them.

This 2nd World was definitely fraught with dangers, Yue Zhong wasn't willing to risk his lives for this bunch of people, nor was he willing to be their subordinate.

The moment he moved, the rest of the groups hesitated before moving in their own directions. After all, there was only death should they stay.

There was not a hint of greenery of life, nor food or the most precious, water. In order to live, they had to at least find a water source.

The group of fangirls chattered for a while before following Yue Zhong.

The one who was the prettiest and had her clothes ripped earlier ran up to Yue Zhong's side, "Hello. I'm called Xiao Lan. What's your name?"

"Yue Zhong!" Yue Zhong replied indifferently while continuing.

Xiao Lan gritted her teeth and continued, "Yue Zhong, thank you so much for just now. I didn't expect Kang Ryu Chan to be such a person. I was truly blind!!"

She had liked Kang Ryu Chan, only to be let down with the earlier episode. It caused her idolization and feelings about him to crash and disappear.

Yue Zhong continued walking when he suddenly frowned, as a powerful sense of danger arose in his heart. He immediately

barked out, "Stop!"

Hearing his shout, those who were on the same path were taken aback.

Many looked forward, yet did not discover anything.

One young hooligan looked at Yue Zhong and smirked, "There's nothing! Don't try and frighten us, fool!!"

The 8 hooligans shot condescending looks at Yue Zhong before continuing forth, "Let's go! Coward!!"

One of them gave a wolf whistle to Xiao Lan and the rest, "Beauties! Come with us!! There's no future with this scaredy-cat!! Us brothers will protect you girls!"

They pulled out their melee weapons, consisting of machetes and butcher knives, showcasing their muscles, hoping to attract Xiao Lan and her friends over.

If Yue Zhong had not shown his weapons earlier, they would have long since rushed over to chop him to death and snatch Xiao Lan and her friends away. However, they were wary of that Stinger in his hands and did not dare go overboard.

Xiao Lan and the rest retreated instead, standing behind Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong himself did not bother about those youths, instead coldly staring ahead. It was a vast plain of nothing, and there was no difference between the area in front and everywhere else. He did not sense any life forms, however, his danger perception was ringing like crazy, every cell in his body taut and screaming at him not to advance further.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed as he sucked in a deep breath and said solemnly, "Retreat!"

After that, he quickly moved away.

Xiao Lan and the rest exchanged looks and followed his lead.

They might be innocent, but they could tell that Yue Zhong was not joking.

One of the hooligans continued to jeer, "What a coward! There's nothing there! Brothers, let's go!! We'll take a look!"

"Go!"

One of them looked at Yue Zhong with despise, in order to show off their bravado, they began to walk towards the region.

They pulled out their weapons and looked around warily.

The leader walked for a few hundred meters, and did not discover anything amiss, before turning to shoot another look at Yue Zhong, "What the heck! There's nothing! Coward!!"

Yue Zhong ignored them and continued to stare at the rest of the groups, noting that most of them had already become smaller dots in the distance as they went about their own ways.

No one was willing to wait for their deaths here in this desolate place. They had to look for food and water, otherwise, they were doomed.

Xiao Lan then said, "Yue Zhong, let's go over! If we stay here, we'll just be waiting for death."

Yue Zhong looked at the position of the youths and replied, "It's dangerous there! We can't go over."

He was extremely confident in his perception of danger after going through so many battles. It had saved his life countless times. Although he couldn't pinpoint the danger, he was not willing to go.

One of the girls, who looked like a bookworm, with her hair in a single ponytail, wearing thick spectacles, couldn't help but ask, "Yue Zhong, I'm Shen Yi. Do you mind telling us what danger is there?"

Yue Zhong replied mildly, "I'm not too sure myself, I just feel

that it's extremely dangerous there."

Another girl who had maroon hair, her skin fair and her makeup thick, shot Yue Zhong a glance, her beautiful features showing contempt, Coward! You retreat every time you feel danger? Are you still a man? Men should be brave and face every obstacle that comes their way. You haven't even seen the shadow of your enemy and retreated, are you still considered a man?"

This pretty yet proud girl was called Kong Cui Yun and was one of the prettier ones in the group. Although she wasn't drop-dead gorgeous, she was a decent beauty. She had been termed as a wallflower before and had been the object of pursuit of many boys.

Yue Zhong glanced at her and ignored her.

In all his conquests, he had come across countless beautiful women. While Kong Cui Yun was pretty, she wasn't comparable to the beauties in his own harem, and could not affect his mental state.

Kong Cui Yun saw Yue Zhong actually ignoring her, and a sense of fury arose in her heart. She frowned and was about to shoot her mouth off.

At this time, one of the girls shrieked in fear, "He's spewing blood!!"

Everyone looked towards the direction, only to see the loud youth kneeling on the ground, his complexion pale. His body was trembling uncontrollably as he continued to spit out mouthfuls of blood.

One by one, the rest of the youths also began to kneel, their faces contorted in pain as they spat out blood, rolling around as they struggled madly.

Kong Cui Yun watched this in horror, her own face turning pale. Had it not been for Yue Zhong's warning, they would all have been part of the scene in front. Thinking to just how she had mocked

him for being a coward, she felt her face burning in shame.

Chapter 707: Brutal Human-like Creatures!

At that moment, there were many people doubling over as they coughed out blood, while those who could immediately ran away from their positions.

Everyone looked all around in fear, not knowing what was happening.

"What is this place?"

"What's going on?"

"..."

Everyone broke out in panic, and some even screamed out of fear. Dying without any reason was even more terrifying than facing Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong looked all around, and he couldn't help but frown further. He had never seen such a scene before.

Yue Zhong surveyed the surrounding and walked towards the west, "Head that way!"

"Wait for me!!"

Kong Cui Yun and the rest were jolted and quickly followed after him. They had finally recognized his abilities and began to rely on him. Since they had been protected back on Earth and had not yet been exposed to the reality of the apocalypse, they could only rely on an expert in this strange environment.

The moment Yue Zhong moved, many gazes fell upon him, among them, there was despise, expectation and even ridicule.

To their shock, as Yue Zhong continued ahead, there was no problem even after several hundred meters.

Ma Fan watched Yue Zhong moving uninhibited and quickly called out as his eyes flashed, "Little brother, wait for us!!"

Yue Zhong heard the call but ignored him. In this 2nd World, his only objective was to understand this place better and survive an entire year. Once he completed the mission, the reward of the Heart of Hope would be a treasure. He was not willing to stay behind to protect those wastrels.

"Let's go!"

Ma Fan saw that Yue Zhong had no intentions of minding him, and quickly waved his hands, signaling the 20 subordinates around him, chasing after Yue Zhong.

The rest of the segregated groups also followed after him.

Yue Zhong traversed extremely cautiously, his danger perception being forced to its limit. Each time he felt a sense of danger from an area, his entire body would go taut, and his hairs would stand on end. He would then route around the region.

Yue Zhong walked for about 4 hours in this godforsaken place, yet, there was nothing. It was plain desolation for miles and miles.

"Watch out!!" Suddenly, he was assaulted by an intense sense of danger, and he immediately barked out loud.

At that moment, a number of human-like savages that were at least 2m-tall, naked, with black-yellowish skin, carrying large wooden bats in their humongous hands rushed towards Yue Zhong and the people behind him. Their faces were contorted and their eyes flashed with madness.

"Fast!!" He stared at them, his eyes narrowing as his heart turned cold. Every single one of them possessed a speed at least 4 times as fast as a person, the fastest was about 8 times a person.

While their speed wasn't much compared to Yue Zhong, when compared to ordinary people, they were existences even Special Forces of the previous world could not match.

"Ah!!!"

Seeing these human-like creatures suddenly appear, the hundreds of humans who had been transported to this world lost their composure and began to flee in different directions.

Kong Cui Yun watched the approaching herd of giants and her eyes were filled with fear as she screamed out, "Quick run!! Yue Zhong!!"

The rest of the students were also pale, hiding behind his back, unsure of what to do.

"You guys stay here. I'll go kill them!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange glint, and with a thought, White Bones appeared out of the void, standing in front of the girls. He pulled out his Flame Blade and charged towards the giants.

In a few breaths of time, Yue Zhong had already appeared in front of one of them. He took a closer look at the giant, noting that he was about 70% similar to humans, but his teeth were black and rotting. His bodies were covered with calluses, and there were some large boils. His eyes were filled with a savage glint.

The human-like creature saw Yue Zhong and his eyes flashed, raising the huge wooden bat in his arms high to smash down on Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had the mind to test the strength of this creature and did not dodge or evade, instead, raising his hands to slap at the wooden bat.

Peng!

With that single slap, Yue Zhong's Strength of 13 times a person exploded out, causing the human-like creature to fly back about 5 or 6 meters.

Although he sent the creature flying, Yue Zhong's eyes darkened, "10 times the Strength of a person. This strange creature is actually 10 times stronger than a person. Too fearsome."

After all, it seems that this creature that possessed 4 times the

speed of a person was one of the lower rank entities in this group. With 10 times the Strength and 4 times the speed, it was the equivalent of a Level 20 Mutant Beast.

After being sent flying with a single slap, the creature became even more furious and charged at Yue Zhong furiously.

6 similar creatures came surrounding Yue Zhong and tried to attack him.

Yue Zhong watched them with a look of ridicule, laughing coldly as he slashed out 7 times quickly.

In a flash, the 7 human-like creatures were immediately sliced in two, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

After dealing with those 7 creatures easily, he charged towards the entire mob all alone. Any creature unfortunate to come across him was directly slashed in two, not a single one of them was Yue Zhong's match.

Yue Zhong was extremely valiant, but he was just one person, and could not stop the entire group.

The hundred-odd human-like creatures had speed way faster than ordinary humans, and quickly chased up to the fleeing survivors.

One of the creatures leaped and appeared behind a black man. He laughed sadistically as he hammered down on the black man's head, instantly causing the brains to splatter out.

When the creature killed the black man with a single hit, his eyes glowed with a ferocious light, and grabbed the head and shoved the contents into his mouth.

"Help me!! Help me!!" One golden-haired man ran like mad, screaming as he ran. Behind him were 2 human-like creatures.

One of them grinned evilly, leaping forward and appearing in front of the man. He reached out and wrenched the head of the

man, causing his entire spine to be ripped out as well. The creature then punched the head once, before biting down on it and began devouring the contents.

One by one, the savage creatures unleashed pandemonium on the survivors.

Most of the survivors were ordinary people, but there were also a few Evolvers and Enhancers among them.

One blond woman, who was decked in tight clothing and had an explosive figure and beautiful features, pulled out 2 sharp blades and began to dart in and out of the group of savages like a ghost. The blades in her hands danced around as she pierced their heads one by one in lightning-quick fashion.

Another black man pulled out 2 curved blades and charged right for the savage creature in front of him, tearing him apart.

The group of naked men and women were also not simple, joining forces to deal with those creatures, killing them one by one. They were capable, it was just that they had no proper weapons, hence the battle was slightly tougher.

Other than that, 20 other people had skills and abilities and began to slaughter the creatures as well.

Beyond that, the rest of the survivors could only watch helplessly as their doom approached.

As Yue Zhong was slaughtering the creatures, dozens of them managed to rush towards where Kong Cui Yun and the rest was, carrying a murderous aura.

"No!!!"

Seeing them approach, it was a frightening scene. Having seen how they consumed human brains, the girls felt their faces drain of color. Kong Cui Yun slumped to the ground as her knees went weak, while a puddle of yellow liquid flowed down her legs. She had evidently lost control of herself.

In the face of death, other than Kong Cui Yun, the rest screamed out and dispersed in different directions. They did not have the courage to face those creatures.

Kong Cui Yun looked at them and screamed out in despair, "Help me!! Xiao Lan, Liu Hong!! Help me!!!"

Liu Hong did not look back, choosing to run without a care. At this critical juncture, she could not afford to care about her friend.

As for Xiao Lan, she stopped in place, turning as her body trembled.

Only to discover White Bones, who had been standing still in front of Kong Cui Yun suddenly raising its hands, and 10 sharp bone spikes shot out, slicing up the human-like creature in front of it.

In barely a second, the dozens of creatures were turned into meat paste by White Bones.

Kong Cui Yun stared in shock as White Bones dealt with the situation easily, and she was filled with shock, "Strong!"

Xiao Lan saw that and quickly shouted to her classmates, "Come back!! All of you!!"

But it was too late, a number of creatures had already caught up and quickly reached the fleeing students, flattening their brains. Xiao Lan watched as Liu Hong's brains exploded in front of her own eyes, about 10 meters away.

Chapter 708: Soul Enhancement!

Xiao Lan watched as her good friend was killed in a single heartbeat, and her eyes flashed with terror, retreating madly towards White Bones. Now she knew why Yue Zhong wanted them to stay where they were.

It was tougher to protect than to kill, even for White Bones, it could not possibly protect those who chose to flee. It was only by itself.

One other human-like creature panted with ragged breath, its eyes bloodshot. It licked its lips and made its way towards Xiao Lan.

In just a breath, the creature appeared near Xiao Lan, its bat that was covered with brains and blood swinging towards Xiao Lan violently.

"Help!" Despair flashed past her eyes, as her heartbeat quickened. The vessels in her eyes also turned redder, when suddenly, a psychic barrier appeared above her and protected her.

The huge bat slammed down on the barrier, causing it to shatter, but its trajectory was delayed for a short while.

At the next instant, a sharp bone blade slashed out, directly decapitating the creature, as a shower of blood sprayed out, splattering all over Xiao Lan.

Xiao Lan's eyes were red as she gasped for breath, almost vomiting. However, her desire to live was stronger than the urge to puke, as she mustered all her strength to run towards White Bones.

Along the way, the bone blade continued to soar around, slicing the heads of the many creatures all around.

"Strong!!" Xiao Lan watched it all, her heart filled with shock.

She managed to reach White Bones' side and stood there quietly as it continued to slaughter the human-like creatures.

The remaining survivors saw how easily White Bones was slaughtering the savages and they tried to make their way closer to it. Of the 20-odd Enhancers that were fighting the savages, 7 of them had already perished, and the rest quickly made their way towards White Bones. Not a single one of them was on par with White Bones.

Yue Zhong slashed out thrice, cleaving 3 savages into halves.

At the same time, as the creatures were slaughtered, a few strands of life energy that ordinary people could not detect were absorbed by the God and Devil imprint on Yue Zhong's arm.

The moment that life energy was absorbed, they were directed towards his body, strengthening his own life force and soul.

As Yue Zhong continued to slaughter those savages, he suddenly felt enlightened, "As expected, I can only further improve by entering this 2nd World. It doesn't seem like much, but killing these human-like creatures should be able to provide some benefits."

On Earth, if Yue Zhong wanted to continue to enhance himself, he would have to kill those Type 4 Mutant Beasts or even Type 5 ones that could annihilate entire countries. Furthermore, killing the Mutant Beasts on Earth strengthened his body, while killing the life forms in this 2nd World enhanced his soul.

Although there was no direct or immediate boost to his strength, he knew that it would definitely benefit him in the long run.

"Strong!!"

The rest of the survivors watched in shock as Yue Zhong continued to slaughter the savages easily.

Even the blond lady whose figure and looks were astounding, had a strange glint in her eyes while she continued to kill the savages in

her own way.

Under the joint efforts of Yue Zhong and White Bones, over half of the 100-odd savages were killed.

When the rest saw that things weren't going well, they quickly turned and fled.

"Trying to escape? Let me see where you guys are hiding!"

Yue Zhong watched them flee and did not continue to unleash his fury, instead choosing to chase after them. Since these creatures were fleeing, they would not head to those strange regions that caused the survivors to die without any warning.

These savages weren't a threat to Yue Zhong, only the regions that could cause the strange deaths were truly terrifying.

After passing a hill, Yue Zhong saw a village that had no defenses whatsoever.

The remaining 60 or so savages quickly escaped into the village.

Within seconds, many other naked female savages with breasts hanging out came charging out of the villages. They were really ugly, and their bodies were full of calluses.

Other than them, there were also younger versions of the savages, likely the younger generation, grabbing weapons as they came charging at Yue Zhong as well.

Yue Zhong shot them a cold look, "Seeking death!"

In a flash, he charged right through the village.

The hundreds of savages came pouncing towards Yue Zhong.

The Flame Blade in his hands flashed out, slicing towards those human-like creatures, and they were quickly turned into dismembered body parts.

Not long after Yue Zhong left, White Bones suddenly stirred from its stance, chasing after Yue Zhong with big strides.

"Wait for me!!"

Xiao Lan and Kong Cui Yun called out in anxiety as they followed. Without its protection, they were just ordinary girls without any combat strength. They could be easily killed.

Ma Fun chased after as well, calling out urgently, "Brother!! Your strength is powerful, please stay and protect us!! We have over 100 people here, if you leave, we will all be in danger!"

Initially, there were a few hundred survivors but after the slaughter, a hundred odd were left. If it hadn't been for Yue Zhong and White Bones, the survivors might have all been wiped out.

"Brother, please stay!!"

"Please, stay and protect us!!"

"...."

The sounds of begging began to ring out, as many of them hoped White Bones would protect them. They weren't willing to join Yue Zhong in fighting those savages.

The weakest of those human-like savages were at least equivalent to Mutant Beasts of Level 20, and these humans were simply not a match for them. The moment White Bones left, they would lose the protection of a powerful expert, and naturally were filled with fear.

With regards to their begging, White Bones ignored them and continued ahead towards Yue Zhong.

Xiao Lan, Kong Cui Yun exchanged looks and chased after. As long as they were beside White Bones, they felt safe.

The rest of the Enhancers also exchanged looks before following. Having undergone battles as well, they were clear that only by following White Bones would they have the greatest chance of survival. Holing up here was waiting for death.

The rest of the survivors saw all these and immediately followed

suit.

When they caught up to the hill, they immediately saw Yue Zhong engaged in an all-out slaughter of the savages.

"Strong!!"

There were at least 200 of the savages, but whenever they were within 5m of Yue Zhong, they would directly be sliced apart by his powerful blade. Everyone was rocked as they watched him. Many of the younger women and teenagers had strange looks in their eyes. In such a precarious place, only a strong person could protect them.

Those creatures were not zombies after all after dozens of them had fallen at Yue Zhong's hands, the rest saw that they could not do anything to Yue Zhong. They quickly dispersed and tried to flee.

Yue Zhong did not give chase, instead, staying where he was to recuperate. Having killed hundreds of them, his Stamina was also low. In such a dangerous place, he needed to ensure that he was always prepared to deal with unforeseen circumstances.

Xiao Lan came up to Yue Zhong, looking at him reverently, "Yue Zhong, you're so strong!! From today, you're my idol!!"

Kong Cui Yun followed White Bones to Yue Zhong's side. Shame was written all over her pale face because of the words she used earlier, however, she would not give up the chance of survival.

The sexy and beautiful blond lady came up to Yue Zhong with an enticing smile, reaching out with her hand, "Hi! I'm Fuhrana. Strange Chinese boy, I'm pleased to meet you!"

"Hey. I'm Yue Zhong, I've stuff to do, so I'll be going." He shook her hand lightly and walked into the village.

A few more surviving Enhancers were walking over, but Yue Zhong didn't want to entertain them. He hoped to discover more clues about this world from this village. It was the most important thing on his mind right now.

There was a strange glint in Fuhrana's eyes.

As they stepped into the village, Xiao Lan and Kong Cui Yun immediately turned pale and began to throw up. Of the majority of the survivors that followed behind, many reacted the same way.

There was a putrid stench of rotting in the village, outside the various huts, hung human heads, legs, hearts and all sorts of organs. The victims were men and women of all ages, and every single one of their expressions had been fear at the time of death. It was practically a scene out of hell.

Chapter 709: Radiation Detector!

"These damn beasts!!" Kong Cui Yun cursed out loud, before walking over to Yue Zhong and gripping his shirt tightly. She had seen the head of a girl not more than 12 hanging outside a hut. That horrific and tragic sight had almost driven her insane. In this hellhole, if she didn't grab Yue Zhong's shirt, she didn't have the courage to linger.

Su Lan observed Yue Zhong carefully, noting that he was walking through this godforsaken place without any expression, as she thought to herself, "Just what had he gone through for his heart to be numb to this extent?"

Yue Zhong had seen his fair share of depravity and cruelty, especially in Country A, he had seen the natives not even sparing kids. It was not easy to shake the resolute will and heart of his.

Even so, no matter how strong his mental fortitude, seeing the state of the savages' victims, his fury boiled, his killing intent billowing.

He pushed open the door of one residence, and was assaulted by a strong rotting stench, he looked around carefully, noticing a bed, a table, some chairs and other furniture similar to a human's residence, just bigger, and smellier.

Yue Zhong looked around for awhile, his eyes brightening, as he noticed an electronic device the size of a palm on a table. He quickly grabbed it.

"Radiation Detector. Able to discern radiation levels of 1 to 9."

Yue Zhong read the notification that appeared as he held the device.

He felt his heart sink, "Radiation? Could it be that this world has places of radiation? Or is it that there are multiple regions of radiation located everywhere?"

Radiation was a terrifying thing. If there was long-term exposure, humans could develop cancer.

After using the nuclear missile to blast the evolved intelligent zombies, a hundred miles around it had immediately been cordoned off and labeled as prohibited. It was unlikely to be inhabited in the next 100 years.

It was because of the hazardous effect of radiation that Yue Zhong still kept 14 nuclear missiles, not utilizing them against the zombies.

Yue Zhong pressed a button, causing the radiation device to light up, as a line of characters appeared, "The region has a radiation level of 3. It is considered mildly polluted, and administering the Level 3 Anti-Radiation drug will allow one to traverse smoothly in this region.

Yue Zhong looked at the reading and his expression turned ugly, "Mildly polluted, that means that the region is already contaminated? Shit, aren't we exposed right now? If we don't administer the drug, it'll be dangerous. Oh right, those mysterious deaths, could it be those regions were highly polluted? The radiation could cause someone to die so instantaneously?"

Yue Zhong felt confident in his abilities in dealing with even a Type 4 Mutant Beast. However, there was radiation everywhere, he could not possibly fight against that. The Level 5 Defense Vest on him had the ability to defend against radiation, but his head had no protection. That was to say, while his body could be immune to it, his head was still vulnerable.

He continued searching around the room, discovering a bag of black wheat and some dozens of bones, a sight that could cause anyone to throw up.

After leaving the room, Yue Zhong discovered the majority of the survivors hiding outside the village. Many of them had caught sight of the gruesome sight of the corpses and began vomiting. Few

dared to venture in.

The Enhancers were different, half of them following Yue Zhong in checking out the houses of the savages, scavenging for usable resources.

After a while, the braver ones seemed to have understood and began to swarm into the village.

Other than Xiao Lan and a few others who had been protected throughout the apocalypse, the rest had experienced their own hardships. Rations and resources were important and they knew that. In such a place where the conditions were harsh, the importance of food could not be greater.

Yue Zhong grabbed the bag of black wheat and threw it to Kong Cui Yun, "Take this!!"

Immediately, she squealed in disgust, "What is this? It stinks!! It's dirty!! I'm not holding this!"

Yue Zhong immediately shot her a cold look.

When she saw that, Kong Cui Yun felt her body go cold. While she was proud and had her temper, she was not stupid. She was clear that the moment Yue Zhong abandoned her and Xiao Lan, the both of them would die in this forsaken place. Especially those naked men, they would not let them go either.

The corners of her mouth tightened, as she fought back some tears and grabbed the bag tightly, Yue Zhong turned around, not minding her as he looked to his left and right, directly entering the largest room.

Xiao Lan's eyes flashed with a glint as she offered, "Cui Yun, let me help you!"

Kong Cui Yun shook her head resolutely, "No need! I'll do it myself."

Xiao Lan looked at her and didn't say anything more, instead, she

entered the room right after Yue Zhong.

As Yue Zhong stepped in, he immediately saw dozens of assault rifles and sniper rifles hanging everywhere in the room, while the bullets were all thrown in a stone basin.

Yue Zhong took those rifles and assessed them carefully, "These guns are ordinary, doesn't seem like they're more advanced than the technology on Earth. Seems a little old."

Xiao Lan entered the room and was immediately attracted to the guns. She hesitated a while before grabbing a bag of black wheat that she saw.

After the close shave with death, she felt more clear about the importance of staying alive. She didn't want to be useless and abandoned by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong casually placed a rifle down, before looking around carefully. Soon after, his eyes brightened, as he picked up another device.

"Water source detector. It can detect if the body of water is polluted by radiation on a scale of 1 to 9."

Yue Zhong held up the device and thought sullenly, "Water source detector. Since such an item has been created, it's likely that this world is already radiated everywhere."

He searched carefully, but did not discover anything else of use, and thus threw everything to White Bones to carry.

These firearms and ammunition could be of help to Yue Zhong. Although he wasn't reliant on weapons, he would have to expend a lot more with these weapons. Thus, having them could help reduce his own burdens.

As he left the room, he discovered many survivors already in the midst of scavenging. He sighed and walked out. He didn't want to stay a moment longer than necessary in this hellhole.

When he left the village, the rest of the survivors also began to follow suit.

Yue Zhong looked to his left and right, observing a little while before proceeding west. He knew they were already currently in an environment of radiation. Every second spent out here could cause them to undergo mutation, or develop some illness.

Ma Fun saw Yue Zhong leaving and his face fell, quickly calling out, "Wait!! Wait a moment!! Brother Yue Zhong, wait!!"

Without Yue Zhong's protection, these people would find it hard to survive in this world. Ma Fun was extremely clear about this. He hoped Yue Zhong would stay behind to protect them all.

Yue Zhong glanced back but continued after ignoring him.

Xiao Lan and Kong Cui Yun followed Yue Zhong tightly.

Fuhrana and the rest of the Enhancers exchanged looks and quickly followed him as well.

"Let's go!"

Ma Fun gritted his teeth and brought the survivors out, following Yue Zhong. His initial wish of gathering the survivors to lord over them had long since been dashed.

With the radiation detector, Yue Zhong was slightly more relaxed, using it to determine the level of radiation in the region. Any place with a radiation level of 4 was considered mid-polluted, Yue Zhong would avoid these places immediately.

They continued walking for an entire day before Yue Zhong decided to stop and set up camp.

Seeing that he stopped, everyone heaved a sigh of relief.

With a flip of his hands, a bottle of mineral water appeared in his hands. He drank it down in one shot.

After walking an entire day, everyone felt parched. Seeing how cleanly Yue Zhong drank, everyone gulped, their eyes flashing

with envy.

Xiao Lan hesitated a while before coming up to Yue Zhong and pleaded, "I'm thirsty, can I get some water please?"

Yue Zhong looked at her, frowning a little before he pulled out a bottle and poured out a cup for her.

Xiao Lan's eyes flashed with disappointment, but she still thanked him, "Thank you!"

Kong Cui Yun could not help but mutter when she saw that, "Miser!"

Ma Fun came up to Yue Zhong, saying, "Brother! I'm Ma Fun! I know you have water on you. Now, everybody's thirsty, please spare some for everyone. In these difficult times, we should work together and overcome this together!"

Chapter 710: Precious Water!

Yue Zhong eyed Ma Fun coldly, and scoffed, "The water I have, was what I brought with me, what does it have to do with you! If you want a drink, go find it yourself. Don't bother me! Scram!"

When Yue Zhong saw the Water Source Detector, he knew that clean water free from any contamination was extremely precious. He did indeed have a large amount of water in his storage ring, it was enough to last him half a year. However, if he were to give it out to these hundreds of survivors, it would be gone in a few days.

He did not fancy himself as a saint, nor did he intend to sacrifice himself for the sake of the rest.

"You're too selfish..." Ma Fun instantly blew his top, intending to curse out, when a sharp bone spike extended right to his forehead in a flash. Seeing the flash in White Bones' demonic eyes, Ma Fun swallowed his words with difficulty and stumbled back.

The strong preyed on the weak, this was the law of the jungle now. Ma Fun had seen other Evolvers killing people casually. He did not want to become a ghost under Yue Zhong's blade.

After being barked at, Ma Fun slunk back to his corner with a dark expression.

Kong Cui Yun saw Ma Fun going away and came up to him, looking at him with her beautiful eyes, "Please give me a mouthful of water!"

Yue Zhong looked at her and poured her half a bottle cap.

Kong Cui Yun received it and thanked him profusely, "Thank you!!"

She could tell that food and water was extremely important. Yue Zhong was willing to give them, thus they could live.

She took the half-cup of water and noticed many gazes on her,

which were filled with envy, jealousy, hope and other sorts of emotions. She felt a certain rush of being above the rest.

Yue Zhong took out a bread, tearing open the packaging and flung it away casually.

Before it landed, Xiao Lan immediately reached out to grab the packaging, extending her tongue to lick the inside of the packaging.

Kong Cui Yun was shocked when she saw this before she suddenly understood. They were in a much harsher environment than Earth, every bit of food was precious.

Yue Zhong's eyes suddenly brightened, as he finished the bread in two or three bites, and ran towards the North.

Not long after, Yue Zhong came across a flowing water body. His heart was filled with joy. With water, there was a chance of life. With life, there was potential food as well.

Yue Zhong looked at the stream, his eyes narrowing. He did not see any signs of life in the stream.

Suspicious, he took out the Water Detector and stuck it in the water. Immediately, a sound of warning came from the device, "Warning! Warning! Water radiation is Level 7, considered highly polluted! Do not consume, as it will cause your body to either mutate or breakdown!"

Yue Zhong's face turned as he recoiled in horror, as though dodging a snake. It was the first water source that he came across, but even then, it was undrinkable. This proved that there was nothing in the vicinity fit for human consumption.

If there was anything humans could eat, it would be the blackened wheat or human flesh itself.

One Enhancer who had been following closely behind immediately rushed up to the stream when he saw it. There was a look of frenzy and excitement in his eyes as he shouted, "Water!! There's water!!

This is great!!! Hahaha!! There's water!"

Yue Zhong looked at him and warned him, "Careful, the radiation level of the water is at Level 7."

"Level 7 Radiation?" The Enhancer looked at Yue Zhong suspiciously, before laughing coldly, and cupped the water as he began to drink huge gulps of it. He broke into a wide grin, "Such sweet water!! So clear, and so sweet!!"

He was drunk with happiness and shot Yue Zhong a challenging smile.

Yue Zhong could not be bothered and left.

Since he was recognized as the strongest among them, his every action attracted everyone's attention. They discovered the stream, and everyone charged over immediately. Having walked the entire day, they were truly thirsty. In order to start a fire and cook, they would need some water as well.

Yue Zhong looked at the frenzied people and spoke indifferently, "This stream is already polluted with a radiation level of 7. There might be harm in consuming it."

Hearing his words, everyone began to hesitate.

The Enhancer who had drunk a few mouthfuls retorted, "Don't believe him! I've drunk so much and am still fine! He just wants to control everyone through his water supply."

Hearing his words, some of them threw suspicious gazes on Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong could not be bothered about them and walked towards an area he had selected for his campsite. With a wave of his hands, he pulled out a tent and erect it. He had already reminded them out of basic courtesy and it was his bottom line already. What they chose to do was not up to him.

Fuhrana came up to Yue Zhong when she saw him set up the

tent, thinking to herself, "Spatial treasure, or spatial skill? This Yue Zhong is truly special."

Xiao Lan and Kong Cui Yun watched as the beautiful and alluring Fuhrana came closer, and they felt a sense of threat as they shot gazes of enmity at her.

She walked up to Yue Zhong and shot him a dazzling smile, "Hey! Yue Zhong, can I get a cup of water please?"

Yue Zhong immediately rejected her, "Sorry, no can do! Water is too precious here. I can't just give it for free. If you want it, you need to offer the right price."

Yue Zhong had walked an entire day and discovered this stream, only to find that it was already contaminated. This proved the scarcity and preciousness of water here. If it was on earth, he could easily hand over some tonnes of water. However, he could not afford to do so here.

Fuhrana's maintained her smile, although she could not believe there was someone who actually turned her down.

She adjusted her emotions and asked, "Is the water in the stream really contaminated?"

Yue Zhong replied mildly, "If you don't believe me, go ahead. I'm not stopping you."

Fuhrana retracted her gaze and asked, "In that case, Yue Zhong, what's the price you want me to pay for me to have some water?"

Yue Zhong stared at her straight and gave her a harsh condition, "Slave! As long as you swear to become my slave, and serve me with all your heart, not disobeying my order, I will give you ample food and water. Otherwise, we have nothing to do with each other, why should I help you? Of course, if you become my slave, as long as you disobey any command, I'll kill you at the first moment I can."

When Fuhrana heard this, she struggled to maintain her smile as

she backed away, "Slave? In that case, forget it."

Yue Zhong saw her leave and chuckled coldly, continuing to erect his tent. He had thrown out such a condition in order to deter people from asking him to share.

Yue Zhong was still unsure about this world, and food and water was already so precious. He could not possibly waste resources on these people. He still had to last an entire year out here.

It was precisely because of this that Yue Zhong had not offered to round the rest of the survivors up and take up the mantle of being a leader. Once he did that, he was responsible for their lives and deaths and had to share his precious resources with them. Before finding a potable water source, he would not try to establish his faction yet.

On the other side, when Xiao Lan heard Yue Zhong's words, her heart skipped a beat, and her face showed that she was in a dilemma. However, she quickly came to a decision.

Yue Zhong's warning did not really prevent the survivors from drinking the water, as many went to quench their thirst with it and use it to prepare the blackened wheat from the village.

Once the wheat was cooked, an ugly scene soon appeared. Those who had gone into the village to obtain the wheat began to eat and drink, not sharing with the rest of the survivors. They were clear on the shortage of resources and they would naturally not share what they had with others. It was basic human nature.

At this time, in front of Ma Fun, there was a huge cauldron of black wheat and the streamwater cooking. A few of the burly men used smelly bowls to enjoy the soup.

A few women and children looked pitifully at the soup, gulping their saliva, looking at Ma Fun pitifully.

One small and skinny boy went up to Ma Fun and begged, "Leader!! I'm hungry! Let me have some!"

Ma Fun looked at the boy and his eyes flashed with irritation, "No! This wheat was found through our efforts. You didn't work and want to enjoy the fruits of our labor? Then what about our brothers who had worked hard? If you want to eat, you need to put in the effort! Go to sleep first, if you sleep, you won't feel your hunger."

Since the kid wasn't of much use, Ma Fun did not place importance on him as well, in front of the weak, he revealed his own selfish nature.

The rest of the smaller groups were the same. The weak ones were left out, and only the strong could enjoy the food. Some women used their own bodies in exchange for food. Sounds of moaning came from the different camps.

Chapter 711: Mutation!

Yue Zhong's warning was effective for some of the survivors. Although these people and Enhancers were hungry and thirsty, they gritted their teeth and bear with it, not eating the black wheat nor water.

Yue Zhong had discovered a few scientific equipment from the village, likewise, some of them had found the same. As long as one was not stupid, they could guess that this world was already irradiated.

Kong Cui Yun and Xiao Lan both looked to the camps and saw the various women selling their bodies in exchange for a little food, and their expressions turned to one of fear. Before the apocalypse, it would be an act of shame, but now, it was normal.

One of the naked men who had some strength was already dressed in some clothes. He came up to the both of them and laughed lewdly, "Hey! Girls! Come, let's fuck! This bowl of black wheat porridge will be yours."

Xiao Lan looked at it, swallowing her saliva before coldly saying, "Pei! Scram the fuck away for your grandaunt!"

The naked man's eyes flashed with fury as he took a huge step towards Xiao Lan, "Little bitch, you should be honored your granddaddy I set my sights on you. Those bitches over there fought to accompany me. You better fucking give me face!"

Xiao Lan looked at the naked man with a look of fear, and she retreated a few steps involuntarily.

Just after he took a few steps forward, a sharp bone spike shot out explosively, stopping right at his throat.

The man was so frightened that he broke out in cold sweat as he backed up immediately, "Sorry! Sorry!! I'll leave now! I'll leave now!!"

The moment he backed away, the bone spike returned to White Bones.

As long as he did not overstep his boundaries to threaten Yue Zhong's safety, White Bones would not act out.

The man looked at Xiao Lan and snorted coldly, "Little bitch, seems like Yue Zhong doesn't seem to care much about you girls. Let's see when you beg me. At that time, I'll make sure you'll regret today!"

Seeing that he had left, Xiao Lan's eyes looked down in sadness. She was truly tired and thirsty. Yue Zhong had just given them a little water and protected their lives, but beyond that, it didn't seem that he valued them much. They had no ability to find food or water for themselves, if they continued like that, they would likely beg that man out of desperation.

"Damn it!!" Kong Cui Yun watched the man leave, as her eyes flashed with a resolute look, and she went straight into Yue Zhong's tent.

Yue Zhong was laying there drinking milk and consuming some Type 2 Mutant Beast meat as he read a book quietly. The moment Kong Cui Yun barged in, his brows furrowed as he asked, "It's you?"

Kong Cui Yun looked at the food and milk beside him and her eyes flashed with greed. She turned to stare at Yue Zhong, "Earlier, you said that as long as one agrees to be your slave, and not disobey your orders, you will give food and water, right?"

Yue Zhong stared back at her and replied, "That's right! However, let me make it clear first. If you become my slave, whatever I ask you to do in the future, some might even endanger your life. Are you willing?"

She chuckled in self-deprecation, "What choice do I have? Without your protection, I would already be in a state worse than

an animal. Within a week, I'll be dead for sure. I promise to be your slave."

After that, her face flushed red as she began to undress, revealing her youthful and lithe body.

When she was fully naked, she dove into his covers, begging, "I want something to eat and drink."

Within a day, Kong Cui Yun had already lost some of her arrogance and princess-attitude.

Yue Zhong felt her smooth skin under his fingertips, and he felt his heartbeat quicken. After a moment of hesitation, he passed her the milk and Type 2 Beast meat to her.

In this strange world, Yue Zhong did not know if he would be able to see other humans. If this world was left with only those savages or other humans who would not accept him, then his companions would these survivors that arrived together with him. He had no way of saving hundreds of them, but one or two were still within his capability.

Kong Cui Yun accepted the food in happiness and gobbled them up.

She finished the food, cleaning her lips before looking towards Yue Zhong coyly, "Do you want to do it with me?"

"No need! Go to sleep, we have to be on our way tomorrow." Yue Zhong turned off the light and immediately went to sleep.

In response, Kong Cui Yun felt a sense of relief, yet disappointment at the same time, before hugging Yue Zhong's arm to sleep.

The 2nd day, Yue Zhong and Kong Cui Yun ate breakfast, before leaving the tent.

Xiao Lan was curled up, her face pale and cold. She looked at Kong Cui Yun who walked out with Yue Zhong with a look of

jealousy and contempt.

Kong Cui Yun looked at Xiao Lan and spoke with a lofty tone, handing her some bread and water, "Lan Lan, you must be hungry. Take this."

Xiao Lan looked at the bread and water, her eyes filled with a complicated gaze as she thanked her, "Thank you, Cui Yun!"

Xiao Lan was extremely clear on the value of the bread and water, it required an entire night with a woman to exchange.

"Ah!!"

"Save me!!"

"It hurts!!"

"....."

At this time, there were screams of agony and moaning from the group of survivors.

Yue Zhong immediately charged towards their location.

He discovered a number of survivors kneeling on the ground spewing out blood, thrashing about on the ground. They were struggling painfully, and there seemed to be about 90 of them.

The remaining 30 or so looked at them helplessly, their hearts cold.

Yue Zhong came up to Fuhrana and asked solemnly, "What's going on?"

Her lips were slightly chapped and her expression ugly, "These people were those who drank from the stream. Seems like the water is truly radiated."

Yesterday, Yue Zhong had already given his warning, however, due to the immense thirst, those people had thrown all caution to the wind and drank from the stream. The effects were showing right now.

Yue Zhong frowned and looked at the survivors carefully. He noticed one particular survivor who was on the ground and his eyes narrowed.

He saw that as the survivor spat out blood, his forehead began to split open, revealing rows of sharp teeth, looking like a freakish monster.

Yue Zhong continued to look at the rest of the survivors, noting another one growing a scorpion tail, while another had multiple boils on his face. One had sharp claws growing out of his right hand.

Yue Zhong looked at the mutating survivors and frowned, "Is this mutation? Under the radiation, humans could actually become like this. Truly astounding. Or maybe there's something else in the world that causes an effect?"

"Save me!!! Save me!!" At this time, Ma Fun saw Yue Zhong and came crawling towards him while still throwing up blood. However, after a few meters, he spat out a large mouthful and died with blood running down his orifices.

Due to the differences in body constitution, some survivors quickly died, while others were still struggling violently.

Yue Zhong stayed a while before turning and walking away silently. The most important thing was to find a way to communicate with the inhabitants of this world. Otherwise, if they stayed on too long, there was no telling what would happen. He had enough water and food on himself, but these 30 other survivors didn't.

Fuhrana and the rest of the survivors picked up the items of the deceased and followed Yue Zhong.

Kong Cui Yun swept her gaze over the survivors and felt shocked. In just another day, another hundred had died. This world was terrifying, beyond her imagination. She turned to look at Yue

Zhong and felt her emotions calm down. As long as there was him to protect her, she believed she could live on.

Everyone followed Yue Zhong quietly.

In front, there was only a wide, vast area of nothing. Not a single shred of green to be seen, while bullet shrapnel was scattered everywhere.

The survivors following behind Yue Zhong began to get more irritable, their eyes flashing with red. They had gone an entire day without water, and walking for so long was causing them to dehydrate, making the thirst even more unbearable.

They finally could not take it anymore and as Yue Zhong was resting, the 33 survivors began to surround Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at the survivors who obviously had bad intentions and asked coldly, "What do you think you're doing?"

After a moment of hesitation, the naked man from last night stepped out, looking at Yue Zhong darkly, "Yue Zhong, I know you still have water with you. We want a bottle of clean water. As long as you can give us a bottle and let us live, that's fine."

Yue Zhong's face turned ugly, "No. I have water, but that's mine. I need to traverse this place for god knows how long. I won't give water to you. If you want a drink, go find it yourself!"

The face of the man became even darker, his voice becoming louder, "Don't force us!! We want to live on!! If we're pushed to a corner, we can ignore everything and go crazy!!"

The other 33 survivors also stepped forwards with ugly expressions.

At this time, White Bones stepped forward quietly, 10 sharp bone spikes shooting out from its body, pointing at the survivors.

Seeing that, the survivors had a change of expression. A single Yue Zhong could kill them all, adding on White Bones, they were

sure to be killed without a burial ground.

Chapter 712: The Price of Water!

At this time, Fuhrana's eyes flashed as she pointed at a distance, "Don't be rash!! Look!! What's that?"

Everyone turned to face the direction, only to see a group of humans looking like ants in the distance.

"Humans!!!"

The survivors looked at those humans and their eyes brightened as they rushed towards them.

As long as there were humans, there was bound to be a water source. They could live if they could find the water source. They weren't fearful towards ordinary humans as well.

Yue Zhong looked at them and turned to speak to Xiao Lan and Kong Cui Yun, "You guys stay here."

After that, he followed the rest of the survivors from Earth and ran after the group of humans.

Peng! Peng!

Just when they managed to chase up to about 100m from the group, the sounds of gunfire rang out.

Due to the gunshots, a number of survivors had their heads penetrated by the bullets, and their corpses slumped to the ground.

The sounds of gunfire wasn't that dense, but every single shot spelled the death of a survivor.

Under the suppressing fire, the survivors immediately got down on the ground and rolled for cover.

As Yue Zhong made his way there, he could feel a terrifying gaze fixed on him, "What powerful sniping skills, there must be a sniper!"

Yue Zhong had fought plenty of expert snipers and could feel the

threat of that gaze fixed on him.

He called out to the group of humans in a resounding voice, "I have no ill intentions! I hope to speak to your leader!"

Peng!

A bullet whizzed through the air in response to Yue Zhong's statement.

"Damn it!" With a flash of his body, he dodged the bullet easily, but his eyes turned cold. He was trying hard to be nice, but these people were being unreasonable. His killing intent immediately billowed out.

Without any hesitation, Yue Zhong pulled out an assault rifle and fired a single shot into the distance. The sniper who fired at Yue Zhong had his head immediately blasted apart.

Since Yue Zhong had started killing, he did not hold back anymore. He quickly dashed forwards, firing a number of shots, causing their own warriors to fall.

Those people could feel the threat of Yue Zhong and began to fire back madly.

Yue Zhong himself turned into a beam of light that charged right through the midst of humans, and with a sweeping fire, he killed those soldiers wielding guns.

Once those gun-totting soldiers were killed, dozens of males came charging at Yue Zhong with melee weapons, their expressions murderous.

Yue Zhong looked at the men, his eyes flashing with cold killing intent and he swept out mercilessly, firing his gun.

In the dense barrage of bullets, the men who were charging over had their heads riddled with bullets and died.

Yue Zhong wiped out the attackers easily and shot a look towards the rest of the humans.

He discovered the group consisted both males and females, although their hair color was interesting. Some were blue, some gold, some silver, some black. Their skins were white, yellow and black. It was all mixed and there were about a hundred of them. They were looking back at him with fear.

One blond old man had a frightened look as he came up to Yue Zhong, kneeling down before speaking in some strange form of Chinese, "Glorious Divine Warrior, I'm Eiphen, the Patriarch of this group of vagabonds! We had attacked you and your subordinates without knowing better, please pardon our offence!"

With a swoosh, the hundred-off humans kneeled down and pleaded, "Glorious Divine Warrior, please pardon our offence!!"

Yue Zhong quickly came to an understanding when he heard them, "Divine Warrior? What's that? The term for the experts in this world?"

The rest of the survivors came over, and saw the group of soldiers and strange humans kneeling in front of Yue Zhong. Their hearts were filled with shock.

The naked man saw the corpses around Yue Zhong and his heart instantly turned cold, "Strong! Luckily we didn't do anything earlier, otherwise, I would be dead!"

Fuhrana looked at Yue Zhong, her gaze complicated, "He's truly strong!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Eiphen, saying, "Water, food!!"

The blond old man looked towards a beautiful girl of about 11 or 12 beside him with a fully developed body and said, "Dina, go get some water and food for the Divine Warrior!"

The blond girl quickly burrowed into a tent, carefully taking out a bowl of clear water and a biscuit mixed with some strange substance in front of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at the water and brought out the Water

Detector to stick it in.

"Warning! The water radiation level is 4, and is classified as moderately polluted. If consumed in large quantities, there is the risk of mutation."

Yue Zhong shot Eiphen a look with killing intent, coldly barking, "This is moderately polluted, and you dare offer this to me?! Are you sick of living?"

Eiphen immediately got down on his knees and kowtowed while trembling profusely, "Esteemed Divine Warrior! The best water that we can find is already at Level 4 radiation. Anything that is Level 3 and below can only be obtained from Red Rock City. This is our best quality that we can provide!"

"Level 4 radiation is already the best?!" Yue Zhong stared at the water, his expression falling. He had thought to obtain some ration and water from these vagabonds. Seemed like his plan had to be changed.

Yue Zhong continued asking Eiphen, "Do you know how to get to Red Rock City?"

Eiphen replied fearfully, "I know! Follow this road all the way west, and you will reach it. However, it will take about 6 days."

Yue Zhong looked at him and ordered, "Bring me there!"

Eiphen returned his look with respect, "Yes! Esteemed Divine Warrior!!"

Just then, Fuhrana asked Eiphen, "Can the water with Level 4 radiation be drunk?"

The 33 survivors also came closer, looking on silently.

Eiphen replied respectfully, "Can! However, there's a risk of danger to the body. In truth, other than pure, clean water, all other water sources have some form of radiation, which is harmful to the human's body. It's just that the degree of danger varies.

Grade 3 and below and usually least harmful to the body, while Grade 4 and above can cause some problems and chances of mutation is higher. Grade 7 radiation is basically poison to the human body, once a person drinks it, they will likely die or mutate."

Eiphen continued explaining, "The lower the grade of radiation, the higher the price. In Red Rock City, a cup of Grade 3 radiation will cause 1 Eagle Yuan. A cup of Grade 2 radiation costs 10 Eagle Yuan, a cup of Grade 1 radiation costs 100 Eagle Yuan and pure, clean water costs 1,000 Eagle Yuan.

Yue Zhong piped in, "How much can a rifle exchange for in Red Rock City?"

"An ordinary assault rifle goes for 200 Eagle Yuan in the city, while a 7.62mm rifle bullet goes for 10 Eagle Yuan each."

Yue Zhong took mental note of his own assets, together with the dozens of rifles and hundreds rounds that he obtained from the village of the savages. Exchanging all would just give him a few thousand Eagle Yuan. A few cups of clean water would wipe his pocket clean. Now he knew the price of clean water here.

When Fuhrana and the other survivors heard Eiphen's words, their faces turned incredibly ugly. They had no currency of this world, so even if they managed to get into Red Rock City, they would not be able to afford a single cup of water.

One of the survivors had a grave look on his face as he grabbed a bowl of the water and drank it, "I can't give a shit anymore!! If I get contaminated by the radiation, so be it! If these people can drink, don't tell me we can't?!"

The rest also revealed savage expressions, and barked out, "Water!! Bring us more water!!"

Bowls after bowls were brought in front of the survivors, other than a few, the rest all began to drink up. They had gone nearly 2

days without water, and their throats were almost beyond parched. They really couldn't care about the radiation anymore.

Eiphen spoke up respectfully, "The sky is getting dark, please join us to rest for the night."

Yue Zhong nodded, "Ok!"

These vagabonds quickly set up camp, erecting simple tents. They also begun to take out their cauldrons as a group of women filled them up with water, and threw some wheat and biscuits in.

Suddenly, the faces of the survivors changed.

They saw a few men dragging out a human corpse from one of the vehicles, chopping it up, before throwing it into the woks and cooked them.

Seeing such a scene, Kong Cui Yun could not help but turn pale, Xiao Lan covered her mouth, suppressing her urge to puke.

Yue Zhong's countenance wasn't any better. Although he had killed countless of lives, the one thing he hated the most was cannibalism. As long as he saw it, he would kill the offenders without mercy.

Eiphen was a smart person, and when he saw Yue Zhong's expression, he immediately got on his knees in fright, saying, "Esteemed Divine Warrior. We didn't kill this person. It was a corpse that we exchanged for with another vagabond tribe. We didn't commit murder."

Yue Zhong's face was dark as he asked, "Do you all consume this?"

Eiphen's eyes flashed with pain, "Esteemed Divine Warrior, we have no choice. There is little food out here in the wilderness, if we don't consume this, we can't live on. Us vagabonds are just slightly better off than those Savages, but even so, we're still lowly existences on this plane. In order to live, we have to eat anything."

Chapter 713: Mutants!

"Savages?" Yue Zhong could not help but remember those strange human-like creatures that launched an assault on him and his fellow survivors.

Eiphen wore a hateful look, "Savages are the lowest of humankind. They eat anything, humans, Mutant Beasts, Mutants, as long as they're hungry, they can eat even their own children. Everywhere they go, they will devour anything."

Yue Zhong looked at the rest of Eiphen's tribe coldly, his eyes flashing with disgust. However, this wasn't Earth, even if he hated their actions, he had no intention to kill them. He became clearer on the cruelty of this world.

The vagabonds surrounded the huge wok, and everyone scooped up their helping of broth and wheat, carefully consuming the food, not leaving even bones behind.

The rest of the survivors from Earth felt their faces drain of color. As Enhancers, they were people of lofty status and had never had to resort to cannibalism at all. Seeing the scene in front of them, they were rocked by waves of nausea.

Under the threat of Yue Zhong's presence, the vagabonds began to scoop up the strange mixture and handed it out to the Earth's survivors.

Many of them immediately rejected, instead choosing to find the black wheat to consume.

It was late in the evening, under the cover of darkness, a number of strange creatures appeared in the night, their red eyes flashing as they crawled towards the campsite. A strong killing intent permeated through the air.

2 soldiers of the vagabond tribe were patrolling, when all of a sudden, a creature with 2 huge mouths on its head, one of them

human-like, the other filled with rows of sharp teeth, its hands filled with sharp claws and its figure human-like but black and skinny appeared. It had boils all over its body, and it pounced on one soldier, biting viciously down on his throat, crushing it.

Before the other soldier had the chance to react, a sharp claw tore through his heart, tearing it out.

With the deaths of the 2 soldiers, many other creatures hidden in the dark quickly crawled towards the camp.

The defense of the campsite looked simple, however, there were many warning traps laid out. One of the creatures accidentally triggered one, causing warning sounds to go off.

Eiphen's face fell as he hollered, "Attack! Enemy attack! Prepare for battle!!"

Hearing his voice, the expression of the vagabonds changed, as they hurried to grab their weapons and looked out in alarm.

Even the old, the weak and the ill all took up their weapons, battling was ingrained in their bones. This world was much crueler and harsher than on Earth. Almost all life forms were enemies of humans. If they wanted to live on, they had to fight, or else they would die.

When these vagabonds took up their weapons, the strange creatures had already charged through the campsite, beginning their slaughter of the vagabonds.

Eiphen saw the creatures and his face turned incredibly pale, "Mutants, damn it, it is the mutants!! We're finished!! Finished!!"

Yue Zhong observed carefully, noticing that those who had launched the night raid were all human-like creatures. However, their eyes had ferocious lights, while they had mutations all over their bodies. Some grew 2 heads, some had powerful tails, some had sharp claws. However, they still kept their main human attribute, just that their bodies were covered in boils, and there

was a strong stench emitting from them. They had no clothes.

One particular mutant had claws for its right hand, its body burly. There were 2 sarcomas on its chest. It leaped onto a vagabond, its right hand slashing towards the unfortunate person's head, slicing the brain apart.

Another mutant had eight arms, its eyes flashing with madness. Its tentacle-like arms rolled out, grabbing a female vagabond, before using one of its tentacles to penetrate the woman from below with such violence that she bled profusely while screaming in agony.

"Beasts!!"

A dozen of the males immediately charged forth and swung their weapons at another 2 mutants with blades for shoulders.

The 2 mutants reacted swiftly, their blades flashing out with a speed faster than the sound barrier, and the dozens of vagabonds were immediately sliced apart. The 2 mutants then began to devour the brains of their dead victims.

Peng! Peng!

Within the tribe, a few had rifles and they had already begun firing at the mutants.

As the gunshots rang out loud and clear, 2 mutants had their heads exploded.

The rest began to pounce towards the soldiers with the weapons.

One of them waved its hands, firing out 2 sharp bone spikes from its right hand, piercing the body of the sniper and knocking him back.

Another one released a sack of pus from its body, and the green, poisonous slime landed on the body of the sniper.

The moment the pus landed on the sniper, he began to scream out loud as his body erupted in boils.

One mutant waved its hand and shot out a transparent silk, spinning it, and an unsuspecting Enhancer that charged towards it to fight was immediately killed.

The fight caught them unprepared and unaware, with everything happening fast and brutal. The vagabonds were almost all wiped out at the start. A few Enhancers who tried to take them on were also killed easily.

It was like Hell on Earth, where the mutants were easily slaughtering the humans. Even the Enhancers brought here from Earth could barely hold on. These Enhancers who had held their own against Mutant Beasts and take on the Savages from before was helpless before these mutants.

Among the Enhancers, the strongest was the naked man, Fuhrana, a black guy and another sword-wielding Asian. Of these 4, the naked man had lost his head immediately to one of the mutants with blades for shoulders. Fuhrana had her ribs smashed by a single kick from one of the mutants. As for the other 2, they had not yet come across any of them.

Su Lan and Kong Cui Yun saw the sudden surge of mutants and their faces flashed with fear, as they stood behind Yue Zhong.

"They're powerful!" Yue Zhong looked at how the mutants carried out their slaughter and his heart turned cold. Each of them had their own unique abilities, and their combat prowess was on par with Evolvers of Level 30 or so. Based on his estimate, there were about 200 of them in this attack. That meant that they were facing an assault of over 200 Evolvers of about Level 30.

Had it been another Evolver, even Hu-er Ran would be forced to retreat.

However, through the constant enhancements, Yue Zhong's strength had surpassed Hu-er Ran. Even more so, after conquering the capital, his strength had gained a huge boost. He was confident facing even an Apostle now.

With a flip of his hand, 2 fully loaded assault rifles appeared in his hands, and he activated his Shadow Steps, his eyes flashing. Both hands turned into blurs as he fired a frenzy.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Following the dense gunshots, many of the mutants fell under Yue Zhong's marksmanship.

Many of those still alive instantly turned around and stared at Yue Zhong warily.

As Yue Zhong demonstrated his strength yet again, the gazes of the vagabonds and Enhancers fell upon him, flashing with surprise and hope.

Almost immediately, they all began to make their way towards Yue Zhong.

Fuhrana's eyes were also filled with a complicated gaze. She struggled for a moment before making her way over. It was safe with him.

At that moment, one of the mutants with the blade shoulders appeared in front of Fuhrana, its blades already slicing midway at her head.

Warning signs went off in her heart, and her eyes flashed with despair.

Peng!

At this time, just as it was about to land on her head, a bullet shot through its brain.

She looked at the corpse, quickly making her way towards Yue Zhong while bearing the pain of her broken ribs.

As the vagabonds and Enhancers rushed towards Yue Zhong, the rest of the mutants began to react. They dove for cover, staring at Yue Zhong, eyeing him with bloodshot eyes.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong's eyes turned incredibly dark. If these

mutants were to charge for him, he could easily slaughter them. However, should they separate, he would not be able to protect all the survivors.

Chapter 714: Type 3 Mutants!

Not long after the mutants disappeared into the dark, one mutant stepped out, with sparse hair on its head, and a single green horn on its forehead. It had sharp claws for hands, and there were blades growing out every crevice. Its eyes glowed with a red gleam.

When that mutant came out, Yue Zhong's heart thumped in alarm as a strong sense of danger rang off in his head.

After undergoing so many enhancements, his combat strength was getting more terrifying, to the point he could kill the ordinary mutants in a single strike. However, the moment that new mutant appeared, he immediately knew he had no confidence to kill it.

Eiphen's countenance was extremely pale, "Type 3 Mutant! It actually is a Type 3 Mutant!! We're truly finished!! We're dead!"

The rest of the survivors turned pale, their eyes filled with despair. They knew clearly the threat of Type 3 Mutants.

Yue Zhong looked at the Type 3 Mutant and raised his gun to fire at it madly.

The eyes of the Type 3 Mutant flashed violently, and its body disappeared in a flicker, its speed reaching the sound barrier. It dodged the bullets effortlessly and appeared in front of Yue Zhong to slash at it.

Yue Zhong abandoned the gun and pulled out his Flame Blade to meet the blow of the Type 3 Mutant, deflecting it away.

The moment the Type 3 Mutant launched its attack, it continued without stopping, landing blow after blow at the speed of sound, forcing Yue Zhong backward.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps and the Flame Blade in his hands slashed out to meet the blows, matching the Type 3 Mutant evenly, and it was unclear who had the advantage.

Just as the Type 3 Mutant was focused on Yue Zhong, the rest of the Mutants had already routed around the battlefield craftily, launching sneak attacks on the rest of the vagabonds.

Since Yue Zhong was kept occupied, the rest of the Enhancers and vagabonds were slaughtered cruelly and miserably.

White Bones' demonic eyes flashed with flames and it charged out with its bone blades, turning into a meat grinder. Everywhere it touched, the Mutants would be sliced and diced apart.

The Enhancers from Earth had been forced to a corner and gave it their all to fight back.

Yue Zhong glanced with his peripheral vision and saw the current situation. White Bones had to stay to protect Kong Cui Yun and Xiao Lan, and his heart sunk, "Shit! If this goes on, those vagabonds will be wiped out!"

The vagabonds were the only ones who knew how to get to Red Rock City. Before Yue Zhong got there, he needed to at least protect some of them, otherwise, he would be lost out here in this desolate place.

"I need to end this beast quickly!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly and he activated his Gravity Manipulation, causing the Type 3 Mutant to stumble slightly, its movements affected.

With a thought, a huge Devil Flame fireball conjured out of the air and blasted towards the Type 3 Mutant.

The Type 3 Mutant was too close to Yue Zhong, and it was instantly enveloped by the flames.

The next instant, the single green horn on the Mutant's forehead lit up, and a green light burst out from its body, dispersing the Devil Flames.

"WHAT!!" Yue Zhong was shocked, his Devil Flame had been

enhanced twice, a single ball of it could easily incinerate any of the ordinary Mutants. A huge Devil Flame fireball could heavily injure, if not kill, a Type 3 Mutant Beast as well. And yet, this Type 3 Mutant had dispelled his flames so easily.

The Type 3 Mutant had an exhausted look right after, it was evident that move had sapped it. Its eyes flashed ferociously as it opened its smelly mouth, the inner boils exploding as pus shot out right at Yue Zhong in the form of arrows.

Yue Zhong's face fell and he conjured up a Devil Flame Ball to meet the incoming poisonous spit.

As the 2 projectiles met, the fiery flames instantly caused the poisonous spit to sizzle into smog.

The Type 3 Mutant became even more enraged, the horn on its forehead lighting up again, and its speed suddenly increased by 30% as it rushed at Yue Zhong to slash at it.

Yue Zhong waved his Flame Blade, slicing at the claw with a sharp whistle in the air as blade met claw in a shower of sparks.

All of a sudden, the Type 3 Mutant jerked its lower body, revealing a sharp tail that shot for Yue Zhong from a blind angle.

Yue Zhong's face fell in horror, quickly channeling his Dark Dou Qi, enveloping his body, pushing his capabilities to the limit. He twisted his body, dodging that blow meant for his heart, instead, allowing the sharp tail to pierce his abdomen.

The sharptail was able to penetrate even the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake hide before being stopped by the Level 5 Defense Vest.

There was a powerful force behind that blow, and even after Yue Zhong's equipment helped to block the blow, the remaining strength still caused 2 of his ribs to fracture.

Yue Zhong's body was covered in a dark glow, as he retreated a few steps to diffuse the remaining force. However, blood could be seen trickling down his mouth. His injury was serious.

The eyes of the Type 3 Mutant flashed dangerously, as it appeared right in front of Yue Zhong, slashing at his head. Its tail swung back and suddenly appeared from Yue Zhong's right, intending to pierce his side.

"Go to hell!!" Yue Zhong also roared out with fury in his eyes. At that instant, his Second Order Devil Flame exploded out in a pillar towards the skies, enveloping the Type 3 Mutant.

The Type 3 Mutant screamed out in agony when it was in contact with the flames. The horn on its horn glowed, allowing it to struggle and leap free from the pillar of flames. However, even with the protection of the green light, its hair had already been singed, and there were many wounds all over its body. It looked extremely miserable.

With a flash of a blade, the head of the Type 3 Mutant was lobbed off and rolled on the ground.

When the Type 3 Mutant Beast was slain by Yue Zhong, a huge amount of Life Energy was absorbed into Yue Zhong's God and Devil imprint, nourishing and strengthening his soul.

"Congratulations, you have gained 10 Strength!"

Under the nourishment of the Life Energy, there was a sudden notification in Yue Zhong's mind.

Yue Zhong felt excited when his Strength rose, "Indeed! There are benefits to entering this dangerous world!"

On Earth, it was incredibly hard for Yue Zhong to evolve. Within a week of being in this 2nd World, he had received another enhancement. Furthermore, his soul was becoming more powerful, which proved that while the 2nd World was dangerous, there were benefits present.

After the Type 3 Mutant had been killed, the rest of the Mutants took a look, their expressions filled with fear. They began to flee, as they dragged corpses along.

Yue Zhong watched them, frowning. He decided not to give chase.

It was going to be difficult to establish some foothold here. He did not want to waste energy to go chase the Mutants down. Furthermore, he had 2 broken ribs, while it would recover by the next morning, he did not want to endanger himself in the night.

Eiphen watched the Mutants flee, his heart welling up with emotions as he kneeled in front of Yue Zhong. "Many thanks, Divine Warrior!!! Thank you for saving us all!!"

The rest of the vagabonds also kneeled down and began to thank him profusely, "Thank you, Divine Warrior!!"

"Get up!" Yue Zhong declared indifferently, before walking up to the corpse of the Type 3 Mutant. He looked at the horn protruding out of its forehead, his eyes flashing with a strange glint.

With a flash of his blade, the 10 cm-long green horn was chopped off by Yue Zhong. He picked it up and looked it over carefully, discovering that the material was similar to the nuclei dropped by Mutant Beasts.

Eiphen looked at Yue Zhong holding the horn with envy, saying, "Congratulations on Divine Warrior for obtaining a Type 3 Mutant Crystal Horn. It could fetch about 100,000 Eagle Yuan in Red Rock City. Divine Warrior, you are indeed strong, to think that even a Type 3 Mutant would be defeated by you.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, "Divine Warrior? Eiphen, what exactly is a Divine Warrior? Are there any tiers to it?"

Eiphen had a look of shock, staring at Yue Zhong who was overflowing with killing intent and decided to tell him everything.

In this world, there were vagabonds, Savages, Mutants, Mutant Beasts, Radiated Devils, Humans and other strange existences.

Chapter 715: Half-Mutants!

The Divine Warrior was a term used to distinguish powerful experts of different levels. There were a total of 6 types, with the Type 1 Divine Warriors able to take on ordinary Mutants. Type 2 Divine Warriors could fight Type 2 Mutants, Type 3 Divine Warriors fighting Type 3 Mutants, so on and forth.

Eiphen's knowledge was limited as he was part of a vagabond tribe, and only knew of the existences of Divine Warriors. He had only seen at most 5 Divine Warriors. He had never even seen a Type 3 Divine Warrior that had could take on a Type 3 Mutant. It was because of that, he was all the more respectful and fearful of Yue Zhong.

Eiphen knew some other things with regards to the other tribes but he wasn't able to make himself clear. Yue Zhong tried probing and gave up after a while.

After erecting a tent, Yue Zhong and Kong Cui Yun entered it.

Xiao Lan hesitated a while, and burrowed in as well, before hiding in one corner.

Yue Zhong glanced at Xiao Lan and did not mind it.

At this time, the little beautiful blond Dina also entered the tent, looking towards Yue Zhong with a pitiful look.

Yue Zhong looked at Dina and said, "What's the matter?"

Dina seemed to falter, before she pulled away at the cloth around her body, revealing a youthful and lithe body. She looked at Yue Zhong, walking up to him carefully before speaking in her bright and clear voice, "Esteemed Divine Warrior, my father Eiphen has told me to come and serve you. Please use my body to your heart's content. Be assured, my body has never been touched before, I hope that this pleases you."

Seeing this, Xiao Lan and Kong Cui Yun were filled with shock.

They had not expected that frail looking Eiphen would actually resort to such a means to win Yue Zhong over.

Yue Zhong looked at the little girl and frowned, in this apocalypse, he had seen many people playing with little girls, but sending one's own daughter to be played, it was the first time. Yue Zhong could not help but feel angry at Eiphen.

He threw a blanket over to her and spoke gruffly, "Put on your clothes! Head back!"

Dina became frightened, her face turning pale. She crawled and pleaded, "Sir, sir, please, please use me. If my father knew that I did not accomplish what he asked me to do, he will allow the rest of the tribe to use me before selling me away as a slave."

She kneeled in front of Yue Zhong as she continued to plead and beg, "Please, I'll do anything!! Please just use me!"

Yue Zhong's face turned dark when he saw Dina crying like this. He had never expected Eiphen to have this side to him. On the surface, he appeared weak and unassuming, and yet he was secretly so manipulative and cruel. He was willing to sacrifice his daughter, and if he didn't get his way, he would even threaten to sell her away.

He frowned deeper and barked coldly, "Stop crying!"

Dina's body shuddered, wiping her tears away as she looked at Yue Zhong expectantly.

Kong Cui Yun was standing at one side, looking at Yue Zhong as though to say something. However, upon remembering the terror of the Mutants and the corpses in the soup, she turned pale and could not say anything. Although she wasn't happy if Yue Zhong decided to have his way with Dina, if Yue Zhong really chose to do so, she could only accept it.

"Ah! What is this?" Yue Zhong was thinking about how to deal with Dina, when his eyes suddenly brightened and he told Dina,

"Turn around, get on your knees and raise your butt!"

"Yes!" Dina's eyes flashed with happiness and proceeded to raise her little perky ass.

Yue Zhong saw that there was a huge black scale right above her tender butt cheeks, and on top of it, there was a short tail of about 10cm.

Yue Zhong grabbed the tail and pulled it, saying, "What's this?"

Dina's face turned incredibly pale as her body trembled even more violently, "I'm sorry!! I'm sorry! Esteemed Divine Warrior, Dina is a lowly bitch! Dina is a lowly half-Mutant!"

She continued to tremble as she turned around to cry and plead with Yue Zhong, "Dina might be the most shameless half-Mutant, but only my butt area has a mutation. The rest of Dina's body is fine, Dina is not a Mutant. Dina is free for your pleasure, please do with Dina as you please."

Yue Zhong continued to hold that little tail and finally understood why Eiphen would treat Dina this way.

Since Dina had some part of her that underwent mutation, she was considered half-mutant already. She was no longer human, nor fully Mutant, and thus, was ostracized by both sides.

For half-Mutants who accumulated some radiation, there were 2 possible outcomes. One was death, the other would be to transform fully into Mutants. These Mutants would suffer from the torment of the radiation, the pain so intense that they might spew out blood. Once they transform fully, they would then go crazy and kill their fellow tribesmen. Therefore, half-Mutants were always despised and ostracized regardless of the tribe they belonged to.

Once a half-Mutant was discovered in a tribe, many of them would either be abandoned or sold to slavers.

In order to prevent future mutation, it was actually simple.

Prevent these half-Mutants from being exposed to further radiation. However, there was nothing in this world that was not already irradiated. Even water was precious. Ordinary half-Mutants already had no rights to such water and food, therefore, once they were discovered, their fates were basically sealed.

Yue Zhong looked at Dina carefully. Her blond hair and exquisite looks, coupled with her voluptuous figure at such a tender age, gave her a powerful and attractive charm. The only problem was that she was lacking in nutrition and thus, she was slightly sallow. Her skin was also slightly dried, and her hands were full of calluses. She could still be considered a pretty little thing.

Yue Zhong pondered a while, before saying, "I got it. Dina, you can agree to follow me as my slave, and subject yourself to me. If you're willing, I will talk to your father, and buy you over. If you're not willing, you can stay here for a night and leave.

Dina was elated as she nodded profusely, "I'm willing!! Dina is willing to be Master's slave!! Dina would do all she can to learn and help Master."

After that, she dove into Yue Zhong's covers, revealing a sweet smile, "Does Master want to play with Dina?"

Yue Zhong shot her a glare, "Mind yourself, go and get some rest! We're moving tomorrow!"

Dina did not know Yue Zhong's temper, and immediately nodded obediently, "Yes!"

After accepting her, Yue Zhong continued to read for a while before turning the light off and sleep.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong brought the 3 ladies out of the tent, and a number of strange gazes fell upon him.

Yue Zhong directly went to Eiphen and said, "I want to buy Dina, how much do you want?"

Eiphen was incredibly frightened, "Esteemed Divine Warrior!

You can just take this lowly daughter of mine! Treat it as a gift for saving our lives!! We're incredibly honored that you like her!!"

Yue Zhong chuckled indifferently, giving 4 rifles and 10 magazines, "We'll do it like this, these are yours!"

Eiphen immediately thanked Yue Zhong profusely, "Thank you, Divine Warrior!! Thank you!!"

To these vagabonds, firearms and bullets were precious, even more so than Eagle Yuan. A lowly half-Mutant exchanged for 4 rifles and 10 magazines were incredibly good news to Eiphen. Even if Dina wasn't a half-Mutant, to be exchanged for this amount, Eiphen would be more than happy to do so.

"You Zhong, I've something to say to you!"

He turned to the direction of the sound and noticed Fuhrana and the rest of the Enhancers coming over to him.

His eyes flashed with a complicated gaze. In front of him, there were only 8 of them left. In just a week, they had dwindled down from a few hundred to just a few of them. This world was truly cruel.

Last night, the attack had a Type 3 Mutant, if there had been 2 of them, only Yue Zhong might survive and be forced to flee. Had there been a Type 4 Mutant, Yue Zhong might have been killed instantly.

Yue Zhong replied, "Say what you want to say!"

Fuhrana's gaze turned complicated as she looked at Yue Zhong, "I hope that we can join forces. This world is too cruel, only by working together, we can maybe stand a chance."

Yue Zhong shook his head and rejected, "I'm not interested!"

Fuhrana and the rest of them had managed to survive, which meant that they were of decent strength, but to Yue Zhong, it was not worth it. The most important thing was that Fuhrana and the

rest were always proud, even when working together, they would most likely harbor intentions when cooperating. If he joined them, he might have to waste his energy being on guard against them.

Seeing Yue Zhong reject, Fuhrana and the rest felt the color drain from their faces. She gritted her teeth and said, "Yue Zhong, as long as you're willing to join us, you can be the leader."

Yue Zhong spoke indifferently, "If you want me to join, it's possible, you will have to obey my every order, there's no room for discussion. Otherwise, forget it!"

One of the younger males with dyed hair laughed coldly, "Obey every order? If you want us to die, we will have to?"

Chapter 716: Red Rock City!

One of the black men came up and tried to mediate, "Zhang Liu Yi, that's not what Yue Zhong meant."

Yue Zhong retorted coldly, "No! That was exactly what I meant, if I were to be the leader, and send you to your deaths, you will have to obey! Only when orders are followed to that standard, that it will be possible for me to join you guys, be your leader, and give you a chance at survival."

Being the leader of this group of people, Yue Zhong had to share his precious water and food. He would have to divert attention to care for their safety and wellbeing, it was natural he wanted the authority over them. Otherwise, it was not possible for him to help them.

The main thing was that this world was so much harsher than Earth, there was no clean water or food, no matter how strong Yue Zhong was, he could not sustain all of them.

Hearing his words, the 8 of them had huge changes in their expressions. Who would be willing to hand their lives over to another person?

Zhang Liu Yi had a look of sarcasm, "We can't afford you as a leader. Who the hell do you think you are? Even without you, we can still live on! Let's go!!"

After that, the rest of them began to leave, only Fuhrana and one black man stood there quietly.

Zhang Liu Yi saw Fuhrana and Mansila standing quietly in front of Yue Zhong and his face fell, while a look of envy flashed past, "Fuhrana, Mansila, aren't the 2 of you coming?"

Fuhrana rejected him flatly, looking at Yue Zhong, "No! Yue Zhong, I'm willing to be your subordinate, and follow your orders."

Mansila chuckled at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, you're really strong! Last night, your helper saved my life. I'm willing to submit, and follow your orders wholeheartedly!"

One middle-aged man, who was dressed in a suit, sighed, "Who would have thought that Fuhrana and Mansila would submit to him."

One well-built man snorted coldly, "Being someone else's dog will never bode well. They will soon come to regret their decision. I've already asked around, in another 5 days, we can reach Red Rock City. Once we're there, Yue Zhong will be useless, with our abilities, who wouldn't want us? Before then, we can just hide behind him, let him block the attacks for us."

Zhang Liu Yi licked his lips with a lustful gaze, "What a pity about that Fuhrana, if only I can fuck her once!"

Both sides separated and continued on the journey.

As this tribe of vagabonds continued to walk, Yue Zhong came across a few more streams, but they were all irradiated with at least Level 5 contamination. Level 4 ones were rare.

After 5 arduous days, the buildings of Red Rock City slowly came into view.

The wall around Red Rock City was about 20m high, made of some strange black rock. Every 20m along the top of the wall, there was a 12.7mm machine gun pointed down. At the same time, there were moats around the wall, if one wanted to attack the city, the moats provided a tough defense.

There were about 20 guards at the entrance of the city. Vehicles and people were entering and exiting the city in droves. There was some sort of an electronic device like a door, and everyone had to go through that.

Eiphen looked at the entrance and told Yue Zhong, "That is Red Rock City! The electronic gate can test if a person is a Mutant."

Yue Zhong looked at the gate and nodded slightly, taking Fuhrana and the rest towards the gate.

Since there were no Mutants among them, they entered the city easily.

Once Yue Zhong entered the city, he noticed huge crowds walking by on the streets, many of them carrying a hint of killing intent, at the same time, they had all sorts of firearms.

When Yue Zhong's group entered, many gazes fell upon them. Noticing the sniper rifle on Yue Zhong's back, their hearts turned cold, and when their gazes fell on Fuhrana and Xiao Lan, they flashed with envy and greed.

Right at this time, 5 men in black uniform came walking from the center of the city saw Fuhrana, and their eyes brightened as they came walking over.

One of them had a gold star on his collar. He took a single look at Fuhrana, and his eyes flashed with lust. He spoke with an arrogant tone, "This woman is not bad! I've my eyes on her! Give a price! Those who have nothing to do better scram!"

Another one who had a similar star saw Dina and pointed, "I want this one. Give a price!"

When Eiphen saw these 5 men in black uniforms, his countenance turned pale as he quickly brought his people away from the scene.

Zhang Liu Yi and the rest also sneaked off, hiding in one corner to watch the commotion. The worse off Yue Zhong was, the happier they felt.

When Yue Zhong heard those words, his face turned dark. He was used to being the single entity no one dared to offend in the Central Plains for very long. If it had been outside, he would have swung his blade to decapitate the 2 of them. However, since they were outsiders in this Red Rock City, he was still unsure of this

world, and this caused him to be more cautious.

He retorted coldly, "They're my women, not selling! Get lost, don't block the way!"

The one who had fancied Fuhrana immediately grinned savagely, waving his hands, "Your women? Good! Good! A piece of trash like you actually don't want face when given it. This young master, I, Fei Nan actually wants to pay, it's your fucking honor! Since you don't want it, then I, your young master, shall fuck them in front of you, and cut off your meat to feed the dogs!! Capture them!!"

"Fei Nan, that woman is not bad! Let's do her together!"

"Haha! Let's do all 3 of us! I'll be at the bottom!!"

"This boy is not too bad, I'll pick him!!"

"Lan Nuo, you're disgusting, you like guys!"

"Haha!"

"...."

The 5 of them laughed out brazenly, and with a flash, they charged towards Yue Zhong with a speed 6 times that of normal humans.

"Seeking death!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he reached out to grab one of them by the head.

When the unfortunate guy was confronted by the sudden hand, he was shocked, it was the first time he had seen such fast movements.

After grabbing him, Yue Zhong flung him to one side, causing the man in his hands to knock into another violently.

The 2 men spat blood out upon impact and rolled to one side.

Having taken down 2 in one second, he lashed out with his feet, kicking another causing that guy to soar a few dozen meters into his friend. Both of them doubled over spewing blood.

Fei Nan looked at Yue Zhong in horror as he retreated a few steps, "Divine Warrior!! No! You don't have an imprint, you're not one of them!!"

Fei Nan and the rest were Type 1 Divine Warriors and were already strong existences that don't need guns. However, being taken down and defeated by Yue Zhong in merely 2 attacks caused him to be filled with fear.

Fei Nan immediately hollered out loud, "I'm Fei Nan, the small captain of the Direct Guards of Red Rock City. If you dare touch a hair of mine, Red Rock City would definitely not let you off!"

Fei Nan did not know where Yue Zhong came from, hence he decided to use Red Rock City to pressure him.

Yue Zhong's gaze was cold as he pulled out a double-barrel shotgun and placed it by Fei Nan's head, barking, "Kneel!!"

Fei Nan was so frightened by Yue Zhong that he instantly broke out in cold sweat as his knees buckled. He was extremely clear on the might of this weapon. With a single shot, his entire brain would be splattered all over the ground.

Yue Zhong watched him kneel, before coldly barking, "Scram!"

Fei Nan's face fell before he gritted his teeth and fled pathetically.

Yue Zhong took one look at the city, before turning around to head off, "Let's go!"

If it wasn't for looking out for Fuhrana and the rest, Yue Zhong would have long since fired at Fei Nan.

Fuhrana, Xiao Lan and the rest followed him swiftly as they headed out of the city.

Half an hour later, a troop of 36 people dressed in black uniform came rushing out of the city center.

The leader, who was blond and handsome, with 2 stars on his

collar, looked at the 4 men on the floor and his expression turned dark, "Where's that person?"

One of them groaned in pain, "Captain Franth, they went out of the city"!

Franth's face turned darker, "Count themselves lucky. They dare hit people of our Red Rock City, they truly don't know death. The next time I see him, I'll chop off his legs and throw him in a cauldron!"

Franth continued to ask, "What's his background?"

All of them exchanged gazes.

At this time, Zhang Liu Yi and the other 5 Enhancers came out from their spots smiling, "Excuse me, are you looking for the perpetrator from earlier? I know where they came from."

Franth shot them a look of contempt, although he broke into a smile barely a moment later, "Good! I'm Franth. Come with me. As long as you can tell me what I want to know, I'll reward you."

Zhang Liu Yi and the rest rejoiced as they followed Franth, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong brought Fuhrana and the rest left Red Rock City, hiding within a small hill a distance away. After leaving behind White Bones and enough food and water, he went back towards Red Rock City.

Within the city, there was vital information and resources Yue Zhong needed. He had to go back once more.

Yue Zhong had studied the Art of Disguise, and since the security at the gate wasn't heavy, he managed to slip in easily.

Chapter 717: Sacred Clan!

In the center of Red Rock City, there was a majestic castle that looked medieval.

In one of the rooms, 8 men were seated at a long table, while on the table, there was a 16-year-old girl, who was stark naked and extremely beautiful, kept locked in a cage.

The black-haired girl looked around fearfully at the crazed gazes of the 8 men, her body trembling uncontrollably. Her tears fell as she wondered what her fate was.

One blond man whose hair fell to his waist was wearing a suit. His good looks were accentuated by a haughty expression, while he held a glass of wine in his hands. He smiled and spoke, "Everyone, help yourselves. This is the prettiest girl of the Qiang Wei All Girls School. I have nurtured her according to everybody's desire, She's learned, dignified, have never touched a male before. She has drunk only the cleanest of water, and her food has never been radiated. Her taste cannot be more perfect."

A burly man went close to the cage, taking a whiff of the girl, his eyes lighting up with delight, "Truly a magnificent specimen. There's no smell of mutation, nor radiation. Good! Good! Good! Annette, I want to eat her heart, the hearts of such top-quality products are the best."

The moment the girl heard those words, she began to shake even harder, her eyes flashing with despair, and tears flowed down constantly.

A man with yellow skin and dark hair, his face full of scars, spoke up impatiently, "Knight, why aren't you killing her already! If she shits now due to fear, then it's going to kill my appetite! Quickly kill her! I want her breasts, those are the most delicious!"

Knight chuckled and shook her head, "Luther, you're still as

anxious as ever. Such a tasty product has to be kept frightened for as long as possible before killing. Ah forget it, I'll satisfy your craving now!"

After that, Knight's face flashed with a savage and vicious look, his right hand extending to form a sharp blade-like claw. He thrust out violently, piercing the heart of the girl, before pulling it out.

Having lost her heart, the girl twitched slightly as her eyes dimmed, her life ebbing away.

Knight smiled savagely as he brought the heart to his mouth and took a huge bite, splattering his face with blood.

Annette looked at Knight and chuckled, before pointing at the dead girl. With a sharp wind, the girl was chopped up in 8 parts and separated onto the men's plates.

Knight finished the heart before asking, "Annette, you actually brought out such a quality product to summon us, there must be something you want?"

Annette had a grave look as he replied, "The Gates of Hell have appeared. Our Sacred Clan is in dire straits now. This war has been foretold a thousand years ago. Once the gates open, our Red Star will come into contact with this other planet called Earth. Our Sacred Clan has to wipe out the humans from Earth within 20 years and gain control over their God and Devil System, otherwise, our world will crumble, and all of the Sacred Clan will cease to exist."

Hearing his words, the rest who were midway through their meal turned solemn. It was depressing, to be foretold that their clan would perish. Even ants cherished life, not to mention higher beings with intelligence like them.

Luther spoke darkly, "Annette, we all know what you speak of. However, even though the Gates of Hell have opened, there is still a year to go before the 2 planets overlap. The war will only kick in

a year from now. What does that have to do with you calling us here?"

"The Ancestor has already gained a decree from the gods, that there are already humans amongst our midst. They the seeds of hope that possess powerful imprints from the God and Devil System. Once they obtain the information and technology of our world, they will become the largest obstacles to our plans to swallow Earth. One of them is 80% likely already within our Red Rock City!"

Annette chuckled while sweeping his gaze, "Humans are weak, they are only worthy of being our food. However, there're exceptional existences among them. Those with the God and Devil imprint could come to our world, they're definitely not simple. While it might be easy to defeat the other party, to truly vanquish the seed of hope, it would be difficult. That's why I have invited everyone in the hopes that you guys can lend a hand. Once we eliminate these seeds of hope, the great Ancestor would not hold back on his rewards."

Knight pondered for a moment, as he held up the bloodied head of the beauty and shook it at Annette, "Annette you crafty, stinky fox. Just a single human and you actually summoned all of us. We're 8 Type 3 Divine Warriors for goodness sake. We can even deal with the human leaders of the resistance, just a single human seed of hope, how difficult could it possibly be? I can help you, but you must provide such beautiful meat for me every day!"

Annette chuckled, "Sure!"

The rest of the 6 Divine Warriors also nodded towards Annette, before digging into their meal.

Yue Zhong was unaware of this cruel scene going on in the center of Red Rock City as he continued quietly along one of the streets.

There were huge crowds of humans that could be seen everywhere.

However, every single one of them had savage expressions, many of them were carrying guns, and almost everyone was eyeing everyone else with wariness and animosity.

Peng! Peng!

All of a sudden, there were 2 loud gun sounds, and the human crowd became agitated, diving for cover,

The small roadside vendors also quickly retreated within their establishments.

Yue Zhong looked towards the direction of the gunshots, noticing 2 strong men already lying in pools of their own blood. There was a hole in each of their heads, apparently, they had been taken out by a sniper.

After a few minutes, there were no more gunshots, and 3 or 4 humans began to creep out from some dark alley, dragging the corpses of the men back with them,

When Yue Zhong saw this, his eyes flashed with a strange glint. He had already gotten this information from Eiphen before entering the city.

This Red Rock City was a castle, a dark place full of depravity. Assassination, rape, cannibalism robbery were all too common. There were people being killed every day, before being sent to a slaughterhouse to be sold. Only the strong could survive here, while the weak became food for the strong. As long as you were strong and did not offend the master of the city, you could do what they want, as long as you possess the necessary strength to deal with any repercussions.

However, such disorder and chaos were only present in the outer parts of the city, within the inner parts, there were law and order. Offenders could be rounded up and sent to prison to await judgment.

The inner city was where the upper caste of society resided in.

Eiphen and his tribe were considered lower caste, and could never enter the inner city. Whatever went on in there was based on what other people said.

Yue Zhong wandered about the streets for a while before entering a grocery store.

When he entered it, he immediately saw many melee weapons and leather hides. There were also other miscellaneous products meant to help with survival out in the wild. The boss of the shop was quietly polishing the double barrel shotgun in his hands and shot Yue Zhong a cold glare.

Yue Zhong looked at the store owner and could feel a strong killing intent from him. He could tell that the other party was also a strong warrior.

The store owner continued to stare at Yue Zhong without the intention of attending to him. There was no sign of him intending to do business.

Yue Zhong took out the Type 3 Mutant Crystal Horn and spoke, "I want to sell, do you accept this?"

The store owner took a single look and his eyes brightened up, "50,000 Eagle Yuan!"

The corners of Yue Zhong's lips lifted in a mocking smile, "100,000 Eagle Yuan, no bargain. If you don't want it, I can take it somewhere else."

The owner had a look of fury as he stared straight at Yue Zhong. He gripped his shotgun tightly. He might be a businessman now, but he wasn't above committing robbery.

Yue Zhong chuckled indifferently and pulled out the Flame Blade to swing towards the side.

The owner immediately retracted his gaze as he gave in, "Alright, 100,000 Eagle Yuan! Wait a minute."

Not long after, the owner reappeared with a small hand-carried chest full of Eagle Yuans inside and handed it to Yue Zhong.

The owner looked at Yue Zhong and said, "Would you like a shot? I have a Type 2 Drug. Only 9,000 dollars. I can promise its effectiveness."

In this world, drugs and medicine had taken great leaps, and the evolution effect had been researched. There were 4 levels of the evolution drug. Type 1 Evolution Drug could allow a person to become stronger by a stage. A Type 2 could allow a person to become 4 times as powerful. Type 3 allows 8 times enhancement, while a Type 4 could strengthen a person by 16 times.

Many soldiers, in order to become strong, would work hard to earn the money and rely on such substances to enhance their constitution. These drugs were expensive. A Type 1 cost 5,000, a Type 2 10,000, a Type 3 100,000 while a Type 4 would cost 1,000,000.

Chapter 718: Lisa!

Yue Zhong replied solemnly, "I want 5 of them!"

The store owner rummaged through his desk, before bringing out a chest with tender care.

When Yue Zhong opened up the box, he saw 5 vials and 5 syringes laid out neatly within.

On Earth, Yue Zhong also had a fully functional research lab, together with Ou Ming, that extremely gifted scientist. As long as he had the product, he could reverse engineer it.

Yue Zhong closed it before continuing, "Do you have any Type 3s?"

The store owner shook his head, "I only have Type 2s here. You'll have to head to the Medicine Association to get Type 3s."

The Medicine Association was the supergroup of medical knowledge and products in this world. The evolving drugs were also researched and produced by them. One could only purchase the higher grade drugs there. Since a single Type 3 Drug could cost 100,000, not many could afford it.

Yue Zhong left after obtaining what he wanted.

The moment he left, he felt a number of gazes with ill intent on him.

He chuckled coldly when he felt those gazes, continuing on his way.

All of a sudden, a man came dashing out from a dark corner.

"Seeking death!" Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed as he noticed a dagger hidden within the clothes of the assailant. A killing intent arose in his heart, as he grabbed onto the wrist of the man, pushing strongly against him. The man's own blade was forced into his own heart.

Yue Zhong's speed was incredibly fast. Before the man could react, his heart was already penetrated and he slumped to the ground. There was shock and hate in his gaze as his life ebbed away.

After killing that man, Yue Zhong turned around to sweep his cold gaze towards those who had ill intentions,

Immediately, they retracted their gazes, not daring to look at Yue Zhong.

He snorted coldly and went on his way.

The moment he left, 2 shadows leaped out from the dark alleyway, dragging the corpse of the unfortunate assailant with greed in their eyes.

Yue Zhong pushed the door of a bar and was immediately assaulted by the smell of a strong mixture of smoke and liquor.

A number of warriors with powerful builds and strong killing intent were seated in one corner, hugging a prostitute with thick makeup as they drank and ate meat loudly, roaring with laughter.

The atmosphere within the bar was loud and exciting, as men and women danced on the floor, gyrating their bodies against one another. In various corners, there were even some soldiers getting it on with prostitutes with gusto.

On another stage, a few sexy and alluring women were wrapping themselves around poles as they performed a striptease, leading the men watching below to whistle and roar with excitement.

There was a strong sense of lust, drugs, chaos, and depravity in the bar.

Yue Zhong frowned the moment he went in. It was unsettling. He was unused to such places and seldom drank, because he preferred to keep his head clear. In such a dangerous world, if he was not careful, he might die. He didn't want to lose his head just because he got drunk.

When he entered, he didn't draw much attention. He made his way straight to the bar and spoke, "Give me a glass of Grade 0 clean water."

The moment those words came out, all the mercenaries and sensual prostitutes stopped what they were doing and stared at Yue Zhong.

A glass of pure and clean water was worth 1,000 yuan. Such a price was what a good-looking prostitute could earn only by selling her body for 5 days. No one ever ordered such a glass before in this bar. They would only indulge in irradiated beer and malt beer.

The bartender's gaze flashed as he replied, "Guest, a single glass of pure water costs 1,000. Because of that, we must receive payment first."

Yue Zhong whisked out a thick stack of notes and spoke indifferently, "Is this enough?"

The bar immediately grabbed 10 notes and went to retrieve the water, "Enough! Enough!"

A beautiful woman with a head of silver hair and a voluptuous body immediately came up to Yue Zhong and smiled coyly, "Hi handsome! Aren't you going to treat me to a drink?"

Yue Zhong glanced at her and chuckled, pushing a stack of Eagle Yuan in front of her, "Good! I have questions, as long as your answers satisfy me, this is yours. You may drink whatever you want to drink!"

His motive for coming here wasn't to seek pleasure in vices. He needed someone to provide him with intelligence. Eiphen wasn't clear on it since he was a vagabond and only knew general stuff. He needed a complete picture before he could plan his next move.

The woman looked at Yue Zhong with a strange gaze and quickly stuffed the cash into her little bag, before smiling at Yue Zhong, "No problem! I'll definitely make you satisfied. Oh right, my name

is Lisa."

Yue Zhong chuckled, "My name is Yue Zhong!"

Right at this time, 4 burly soldiers came up to Yue Zhong. One of them had a huge mustache, and he had a lustful look when he saw Lisa. He walked up to Yue Zhong and snarled, "Damned kid, you better scram the fuck out of here, otherwise, your father I am going to flatten your balls!"

Lisa took a look and immediately warned Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, he's Agassi, the leader of the Silver Wolves Mercenaries. He's equivalent to a Type 1 Divine Warrior. He had once single-handedly killed 20 people who had surrounded him."

Agassi grabbed a bunch of Eagle Yuan in an arrogant and domineering manner as he threw it at Lisa, "Kid, Lisa isn't a someone a trash like you should touch! Lisa, I've my eyes on you. Today, your father I am going to fuck you, this money should be enough!"

The notes spread out in the air and floated down around Lisa.

When the rest of the women saw the rain of money, they all gasped, eyes filled with hope. There were easily a few thousand and hundred bills, and it was half a month's earnings for those of them who had good looks.

Lisa looked at the cash and her expression turned pale. Her eyes dimmed as she became at a loss.

Yue Zhong stared coldly at Agassi and barked, "Scram!"

Agassi laughed savagely as he pulled out a dagger from his waist, his eyes crazed as he thrust at Yue Zhong. "Did you hear that? This little fucker actually told me to scram?! Haha!! What a stupid fool! No one has spoken to me like that for fucking long. The last time someone did that, he was dismembered and left on top of a car to be scorched under the sun for 3 days. Today, your father I shall castrate you, and turn you into a toilet bowl!!"

The moment he moved, all the mercenaries stared at Yue Zhong gloatingly, they were all people who thrived in chaos and disorder. The more violence and blood there was, the more excited they became.

Yue Zhong glanced at Agassi coldly, his hand pulling out his Stinger swiftly and pointed it at his head.

Agassi saw the gun suddenly pointed at his head without any warning and he felt a sense of fear, a premonition of death, so strong that he almost screamed out.

Peng!

Following a terrifying gunshot, Agassi's head exploded like a watermelon, as red and white matter splattered behind.

Seeing Agassi's head blown off, the entire bar turned deathly quiet. Everyone was filled with shock. No one had caught Yue Zhong's actions, all they saw was Agassi pulling out his knife towards Yue Zhong's waist, and the next instant, his head was blown off.

The moment Agassi was killed, his 3 henchmen reacted differently. One immediately fled out, one stood there, horrified, not moving. The last one reached into his own chest.

Peng! Peng!

Lightly firing twice, 2 of them were instantly killed, leaving only the one who had stayed stunned.

When Yue Zhong's gaze turned to the last remaining henchman, the guy immediately kneeled down and began begging, "Sir!! Spare me!! Spare me!! I don't want to die, I'm Rooney, I'm willing to do anything for you, please spare me!!"

Yue Zhong looked at Rooney and replied mildly, "Alright! I'll spare you!"

Rooney immediately kowtowed profusely, "Thank you, sir!!

Thank you, sir!!"

Lisa saw all these and had a strange look in her eyes.

Kuang Lang.

Following the shattering of glass, 6 men in black uniform dashed in, 1 golden star pinned on their collars.

The leader's gaze swept onto Lisa and coldly barked, "You are Lisa? Not bad, come with us!"

The moment they appeared, all the mercenaries quickly darted to one corner, not willing to get close to them.

The guards of the city were the strongest authority, and these mercenaries knew that nothing would happen to them even if they killed the mercenaries. However, the reverse was different. The mercenaries would be hunted down and killed should they attempt to attack them.

Chapter 719: Rebel Army!

The alluring Lisa looked at the 6 city guards and a strange look flashed in her eyes. She pulled out 2 handguns from her beautiful legs with practiced ease and fired shots at them.

"Stinking bitch, you dare to attack us! Seeking death!"

The leader of the guards laughed coldly, and with a flicker of his wrist, a small shield about the size of a palm appeared in his hands, which radiated a layer of light, enveloping the rest.

The bullets landed on the shield and deflected off, not causing any damage.

The leader of the guards then swept a cold look around the bar, ordering, "A bunch of lowly shits. Since she dared to attack us, other than capturing Lisa alive, kill the rest of them!"

"Yes! Captain Red!"

The 5 guards responded in unison, before pulling out powerful machine guns from their black uniforms, and pointed it at the rest of the people in the bar.

The next instant, the powerful gun erupted in a flurry of bullets, sweeping across the entire bar.

The mercenaries and prostitutes fell amidst screams and groans, their bodies ripped and shredded. The bar was soon shrouded in blood and bullets.

There was no way to dodge the bullets, even if one went behind the counters or sofas to hide, they would be torn after a few seconds under that fearsome fire.

"We're innocent!!"

"Why are you doing this?!"

"..."

Some of the mercenaries roared out, but the city guards had no intentions of responding. They just continued to operate their machine guns, tearing those unfortunate victims apart.

One mercenary had a savage look as he roared out, "Kill them! Everyone, attack together!! As long as we kill them, we have a chance to live!"

The city guard looked at that mercenary with a gaze as though he was looking at trash, before pointing the gun at him, "Just based on you trash? Go to hell!"

With a burst of fire, the mercenary had his upper torso instantly shredded, blood and flesh splattering everywhere.

As Yue Zhong watched the gruesome carnage, his eyes flashed with a look, "These guys are truly too vicious!"

It was the first time he had come across such unreasonable characters.

The 6 guards bore an attitude of viewing other lives as ants, however, their combat prowess was truly strong. Just based on their machine guns, they quickly slaughtered half the people in the bar. Corpses could be seen strewn all across the floor.

There were over 60 mercenaries in the bar, however, within half a minute, they were already slaughtered, without even the chance to resist. The entire bar was like hell, with dead bodies and blood everywhere.

The leader swept a cold glance across the bar, giving an order indifferently, "Go grab Lisa, kill that man!"

"Yes!"

2 of the guards flashed forward with a speed of 8 times a human towards Yue Zhong and Lisa.

Yue Zhong's eyes flickered as he retreated a few steps, looking at Lisa. He had come to the conclusion that this beauty was not

simple.

Lisa pulled out another 2 handguns and fired as she retreated.

Her accuracy was incredible, and although the 2 guards were fast, they were hit by some bullets. However, with a flick of the black uniforms on them, the bullets dropped to the ground.

"Such powerful Defense Vests? This world's technology is not crude at all."

Yue Zhong's gaze retracted, and he could tell that the city guards had more advanced equipment than Earth. It seemed as though their technology was far ahead of Earth.

One of the guards approached Yue Zhong in a gust of wind, before slashing out with a blade towards his heart.

Yue Zhong chuckled with self-deprecation, pulling out his Stinger and pointed at the city guard's head, "I seem to have become some side character to be targeted by some trash?"

Peng!

With a loud gunshot, the city guard's head burst open like a watermelon, the contents splattering all over the ground.

Seeing this, everyone's turned pale with shock. While these city guards were the weakest of the entire city guard population, every one of them had strong combat strength. The weakest of them could easily overpower any character from the outer parts of Red Rock City. However, one was actually slaughtered within a second by Yue Zhong. Everyone was beyond shocked.

The other guard reached into his chest pocket in shock, "Evan!! You trash, you actually killed Evan!! I want you dead and fed to the dogs!!"

Yue Zhong did not even spare him a glance, just raising his Stinger and firing once.

Peng!

The guard's head also burst open like a watermelon.

Rooney looked at Yue Zhong, his eyes filled with fear and respect, "Strong! Strong!! This man is like a demon!!"

Rooney had just followed behind Yue Zhong and Lisa, and that was how he had escaped the earlier slaughter.

The leader of the city guard saw how Yue Zhong had killed his men with ease, and he bellowed with rage. Raising his gun towards Yue Zhong, he roared, "Kill them all! Leave no one alive!!"

"Looking to die!" Yue Zhong chortled coldly, and his body flashed, his speed bursting out, and in a flash, he had appeared in the middle of the 4 city guards. He swung his Flame Blade, decapitating 3 of the guards easily. Their heads fell down easily, fresh blood spraying everywhere.

Having killed 3 of them easily, Yue Zhong stopped right at the edge of the leader's neck, coldly saying, "Put down your weapon!"

"Fast!!"

The countenance of the leader fell. He had just raised his 6-barrel machine gun when his neck was already compromised. He threw down his weapon helplessly.

"Sir, I'm the captain of the 8th City Guard of Red Rock City, my name is Red! We are just the weakest unit of Red Rock City. If you were to kill me, Red Rock City would not let you off. If you submit to us, I can try to seek for your pardon. With your strength, you could gain recognition of the upper echelons. Join us, and move to the inner city. There's clean water, great food, and beautiful women there."

Red pointed to Lisa and continued, "This woman Lisa is part of the resistance, and one of the important targets. If you were to help her, you've become our enemy. You will not gain clean water nor food and will be forced to roam outside. Under the radiation, with no clear future, and might even be forced to mutate further,

in the end, turning into a mindless Mutant. Is that a life you want?"

Yue Zhong had already spent some time outside. In the wilderness, there was only desolation everywhere, with Savages, vagabonds, Mutants and little food. Almost all water sources were contaminated, and could not be drunk. It was truly a harsh place, even someone as strong as Yue Zhong was not willing to stay out too long.

Red's words were truly enticing for the residents of this world.

Yue Zhong looked at Lisa, a meaningful look in his eyes, "Resistance force, interesting!"

Lisa looked at Yue Zhong with a moved expression, saying loudly, "Yue Zhong, don't be misled by him! Once you enter the inner city, you can truly gain clean water, delicious food, and beautiful woman. However, you'll also become the dogs of those human-eating demons! You'll become their tool for killing us, humans! In the eyes of those demons, we're just livestock to be reared and consumed. They kill whoever they want, and eat whenever they like. If you stay in the inner city, sooner or later, you or your loved one will be consumed by those demons!!"

When Yue Zhong heard this, his face turned dark, "Human-eating demons? What are those?"

Red's face contorted as he hurriedly shouted, "Shut up!! Don't you dare desecrate the glorious Saint Clan! It's because of them that we lowly humans get to survive in this cruel world. They taught us knowledge and helped us clean the water, and even gave us food! We should be thankful and glorify them. You despicable resistance should just die, it's because of you guys that our esteemed Saint Clan is misunderstood!!"

Hong! Hong! Hong!

At this time, there were sudden loud explosions in the city,

before dense gunshots rang out.

"Although I don't know who's right or wrong, however, since you dare point your gun at me, you should pay with your life!"

The Flame Blade in Yue Zhong's hands shuddered, and Red's head was sliced off cleanly, while his neck spurted with blood.

Yue Zhong kept all their equipment into his storage ring before turning towards Lisa, "Those explosions must be caused by your people?"

"Hmph, I have no idea what you're talking about?"

Lisa's face was now devoid of any sultriness or coyness, instead, she flicked her robes and tore her dress in half, revealing her beautiful legs. She then readied her guns as she stepped out.

"The resistance force?" Yue Zhong's flashed and he turned to Rooney, saying, "Go get a gun and come with me!"

Rooney shuddered and hurried to find 2 rifles and a few magazines before he followed behind Yue Zhong obediently.

Chapter 720: Type RH2 Main Battle Robot!

Hong! Hong!

The loud explosions continued to rock and resound throughout Red Rock City. Yue Zhong rushed out and quickly caught up with Lisa, "Do you need my help?"

Lisa looked at Yue Zhong, her expression changed as she was caught in a dilemma, "I'm from the resistance. Just as Red said, once you're linked to us, then your life will be entangled in pursuit and evading capture. Many times, we might have to hide out in the wilderness, drinking irradiated water, having insufficient food. We even have to fight with Mutants, Savages, and other hunters. If we're not careful, our lives will be forfeit."

Yue Zhong chuckled indifferently, "I don't really care. I just want to know what those human-eating demons are. For the sake of that information, I'm willing to help you. However, in exchange, you must provide all information that you know."

If it were to be an entire life out in the wilderness of this world, drinking irradiated water, not having enough food, and to fight constantly, it would truly be a nightmare. However, Yue Zhong just had to survive for a year before he was sent back to Earth. He was naturally not bothered by such a possibility. In fact, he was interested in the power struggle of this world.

Lisa pondered a while before smiling, "Fine! Deal!"

With Yue Zhong's strength, killing 6 city guards with ease, having his help would prove to be an asset, Lisa would definitely not turn him down.

"What is that?"

Yue Zhong looked into the distance and his eyes widened in shock.

In the distance, there was a huge robot of about 5m, its entire

body black in color, with 4 human-like limbs.

Beside the huge robot, among those streets and alleys, a few hundred city guards were wielding laser guns and rocket launchers, firing at the robot with all they had.

The robot only wielded a large laser cannon, while its body was covered entirely with 25mm laser cannons, as it fired continuously at its surroundings.

The firepower of the huge robot seemed to tear the defense of the city guards into smithereens, destroying the buildings and humans alike.

Lisa stared at the huge robot with a complicated gaze as she gritted her teeth, "That's the Type RH2 Main Battle Robot of the Saint Clan. It's also the strongest machine that can slaughter our resistance fighters. Over 200,000 of our resistance members had fallen at the hands of this robot. It's our current main target. We need to bring it back to our base. Only then, we can catch up to the Saint Clan in strength."

While the hundreds of city guards were being pulverized by the robots, their attack was not weak as well. Under their crazy assault, many parts of the robot were being destroyed, as wounds and damages started to appear.

If it went on like this, the Type RH2 Main Battle Robot would definitely be destroyed by the city guards.

At this time, hundreds of soldiers appeared, decked in tattered clothes and carrying various weapons. They began to engage the city guards in battle, taking them down one by one.

The moment those resistance fighters appeared, the city guards were forced to divert their firepower towards them, leaving a breather for the RH2 robot, which quickly made its way towards the gates of Red Rock City.

Yue Zhong stared at the distance, "How many of these does Red

Rock City possess?"

If the city had over 10 of this, Yue Zhong could only choose to retreat.

Lisa flicked her silver hair away from her face, her expression solemn, "The exact numbers are unclear, but there should only be about 8 of them. The RH2 Robot was something that the Saint Clan produced only recently. It requires a lot of steel and advanced materials. Such an advanced weapon requires a lot of capacity to manufacture. Red Rock City is considered a mid-tier city and isn't that important as a strategic place. In such a city, there would usually be at most 5 to 8 of such robots."

"Is the RH2 capable of flight?"

"Nope! The Saint Clan had invented robots with flight before, however, the consumption was too large, and could not even outperform other fighting robots, hence it was discontinued."

"8 of them yea? Now there're 2 of them heading over here. Lisa, where is the pilot seat of these robots?"

Yue Zhong looked towards the central government, noticing 2 RH2s charging over towards them. Behind those RH2s, there were hundreds of more city guards running as well, carrying laser guns and rocket launchers. Some were riding various vehicles.

Compared to the vagabonds outside, the capabilities and technology of the people within the city were vastly different, it was practically heaven and earth. One side was so much more advanced than Earth, the other was similar to the medieval ages.

Lisa saw the elite troops charging over and her face turned pale as she pleaded, "Damn it! We need to stop them! If their reinforcements arrive, the sacrifice of our comrades will be in vain!! Yue Zhong, please help!!"

Lisa was also a stubborn and strong woman, however, thinking about her comrades who had fought to secure that single RH2, and

how it might all be in vain, she could not maintain her strong front.

Yue Zhong frowned and asked once more, "Where are the pilot seats of these RH2s?"

"About 1m below their head and neck!"

"Great! Wait for my news!"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and grabbed a 6-barrel machine gun, charging towards one of the Red Rock City reinforcement troops.

In a flash, Yue Zhong had appeared in front of them. He raised the weapon and began firing at the troops.

The 6-barrel machine gun exploded out, as a terrifying rain of bullets enveloped the mechanized infantry unit. The various armored vehicles, motorcycles, gun-mounted vehicles were all blasted full of holes. The soldiers within were also ripped to shreds.

Only the alloy hull of the RH2 could withstand the defense of the machine guns, as the bullets only caused slight dents in the armor.

There was a flash of the electronic eyes of the robots, as machine guns appeared from their bodies, firing madly at Yue Zhong.

A single RH2 could fit about 10 cannons within them, 2 of them meant 20 cannons were firing at Yue Zhong, controlled by computers. There was no blind spot, nor room for error. As long as the shots landed, even Yue Zhong would be riddled with holes.

The moment those guns appeared, Yue Zhong had already activated his Shadow Steps, his speed pushed to the maximum. With a flash, he leaped into a shop.

The next instant, the rain of bullets came pouring down on the shop, the might of the rounds and explosives tearing the entire shop apart, coupled with 2 large beams of laser that pierced right through the shop front.

Lisa stared at the shop, her heart in her mouth, "Will he be alright?"

Although there was no relationship prior between them, Yue Zhong's decision to help the resistance caused her to be concerned about him.

As the reinforcements were searching for Yue Zhong, a transparent spider web shot towards the head and neck area of one of the RH2. As it retracted, Yue Zhong was swiftly pulled towards the body of the RH2.

The moment he leaped onto it, he pulled out his Flame Blade and thrust it down through the armor of the RH2.

The Type 4 Mutant Flame Bird's claw was truly sharp, with Yue Zhong's strength of 13 times a human, it easily pierced through the armor, revealing the cockpit of the RH2.

Yue Zhong saw a man with a helmet and tight clothes sitting within.

He leaped inside and used his spider silk to wrap around the pilot. Tugging strongly, he threw the pilot aside, and quickly wore the helmet.

The moment he put on the helmet that linked his consciousness to the robot, a flurry of messages bombarded his mind. They were all in Chinese and other runes. Other than the Chinese words, there were the option of using it in English, Russian, French, Japanese and other Earth languages.

From the messages, Yue Zhong quickly gained an understanding of how to control the robot. It could be said that the helmet was the crux of piloting the robot.

After donning the helmet, the messages traveled to his brain, and he found his consciousness projected into the robot, allowing him to see whatever the robot saw.

"This technology is too advanced! Fortunately, I've learned

Vehicle Manipulation before, otherwise, today would have been troublesome!"

Yue Zhong could feel the sensation of being a robot, and the corners of his mouth turned up in a smile. He controlled the RH2 to aim at the cockpit of the other RH2 and fired.

A laser beam shot directly through the cockpit of the other RH2, piercing the pilot, turning him into vapor.

When everyone saw this, the whole battlefield was stunned!

Chapter 721: Fleeing Red Rock City!

Atop that huge robot body, various flaps had been opened, with numerous firearms raised and readied. Targets appeared in the form of information that was sent through the helmet into Yue Zhong's brain.

With a single thought, the cannons automatically adjusted the target-locking system onto those he deemed enemies.

At the next instant, the firearms unleashed a carnage that rained down on the nearby city guards who were caught unaware. Under such a terrifying barrage of bullets further enhanced by the locking mechanism of the RH2, almost none of the city guards managed to evade.

In 10 seconds, the firing stopped, and there was no one left alive near the RH2 piloted by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong surveyed the surroundings through the visor of the robot, and he was thoroughly shocked, "Powerful! This RH2 is truly something else! What a terrifying combat machine!"

The RH2 robot had an artificial intelligence installed, together with the 30,000 types of sensors on it, as long as one gave the right order, there wasn't much control required. The robot could deal with the situation and make the right judgment according to the receptors.

Earlier, Yue Zhong gave the order to vanquish all enemies, and the artificial intelligence automatically took over and aimed for those Yue Zhong deemed enemies.

Lisa watched Yue Zhong control the RH2 so easily, her eyes filled with shock, "What in the world? He could actually control it this easily, who is this person?"

There was no doubt about the capabilities of the RH2, however, in order to maximise its potential, not everybody could accomplish

it. The artificial intelligence of the robot could process a large amount of information, but likewise, there could be too much information sent through the helmet. Together with the incredibly quick movements and controls of the RH2, it could pose a huge burden and stress on the pilot. To pilot one smoothly, one needed a strong constitution and an exceptional, neither could be lacking.

An ordinary pilot could only exhibit 10% or 20% of the full RH2, whereas Yue Zhong had wiped out over 100 city guards in a blink of an eye. This was about 70% or 80% of what the RH2 was capable of. Even the most outstanding of pilots from the resistance would only be able to exhibit 50% or 60% of the RH2. This was naturally shocking to Lisa.

"What a pity!" Yue Zhong looked to the corpses of the city guards and his eyes flashed with regret, before controlling the RH2 to run towards the distance.

"Get on!"

As he passed Lisa and Rooney, he reached out with his robot hand.

Lisa and Rooney quickly jumped up.

The 8 thrusters of the RH2 roared alive with the powerful winds blowing around it, its speed became faster, and rushed out of Red Rock City in a flash.

Not long after that, a troop arrived at the scene, consisting of 50 black-uniformed soldiers with 1-star, 20 with 2-stars, led by one with 3 stars.

The leader with the 3-stars had a 3m-sword strapped to his back. He had a cigarette in his mouth with his brows furrowed, "Did they escape? Who spoiled our plan? According to our plan, the resistance should have been wiped out here. I should be enjoying the innards of the resistance leader Lisa."

His eyes flashed with a savage look as he suddenly whisked out

his sword and pierced it into the heart of one 1-star soldier beside him. He dug it out and bit down on it, while growling, "That damn human trash dare to foil my plans. I must have his head cleaved open, with hot oil poured on it, and while he's suffering, I will eat him alive!"

Seeing that gruesome scene, fear flashed in the eyes of the 1-star soldiers, yet none of them dared to make a move. The moment they showed any displeasure, they were sure to end up as food for the Saint Clan.

One particular male with shifty eyes, face full of pimples, a head of golden spiky hair and a thick, golden necklace came up to the leader with an excited smile, "Don't be hasty! Santana, the more our prey struggle, the more delicious they would be! Such thrill of the hunt! If we can vanquish their hope at the moment when they start to believe there's hope, it would be such a delight to watch their dreams crumble! This time, those who died are just some lowly humans, even if they died, it wouldn't mean much. Though, it's a pity about the 3 RH2s. However, we'll let Annette deal with that."

Santana licked his lips as he laughed out grimly, "Jack, you're still as sick. Let me warn you, Lisa is my prey. You can't kill her. The rest can be up to you. Otherwise, I'll tear off your head!"

Jack revealed a sinister smile, "Fine! However, Aloya is my prey. You can't kill her. Otherwise, I'll dig your heart out to feed the dogs!"

Santana snorted coldly, however, he had no intention of arguing further.

Santana and Jack were both experts of the Saint Clan, both of them had no confidence in overcoming the other. They did not want to go all out just because of a silly dispute as well. The people of the Saint Clan might possess terrifying power, but they were likewise as prone to violence and slaughter, thus there would be

frequent clashes between members of the Saint Clan.

Yue Zhong brought Lisa and Rooney towards a small hill before placing them down. With a thought, the cockpit opened up and he grabbed the corpse of the original pilot and leaped down.

Yue Zhong threw the body aside, before asking Lisa, "According to our agreement, I've helped you eliminate a part of Red Rock City's firepower, are you able to provide any intelligence now?"

Lisa looked at him coyly while twirling her long, silvery hair, "Shoot!"

Yue Zhong asked, "What is the Saint Clan? Are they humans at all?"

"Saint Clan! They can be considered humans, yet not humans. The Saint Clan is a highly-evolved intelligent life form from a lineage of zombies."

"According to the legends, 200 years ago, our planet became subject to the will of the entity called God. In the span of one night, 90% of the humans turned into flesh-eating zombies. During the process of defending, humans fought constantly and managed to open the 2nd Stage. However, since then, our chosen leader of this planet, the selected Seed of Hope, died in combat. We failed the game and our planet became an abandoned one, and the zombies began to evolve. Those intelligent ones then began to slaughter humans on a large scale."

"In the aftermath, humans used their final trump card, nuclear weapons. Under the terrifying effects, many zombies were killed, and the intelligent ones were eliminated. However, that was when the real nightmare began."

"With the continuous usage of nuclear weapons, many zombies were wiped out. However, those evolved life forms not only possessed human intelligence, they had monstrous strength as well. A single Type 5 intelligent evolved zombies could wipe out an

entire army. Under their schemes, many nuclear bases were seized. The zombies engaged in a large-scale nuclear warfare with humans, in the end, turning this planet into an irradiated hell."

"In this hell, there was radiation everywhere. Due to that, many humans began to mutate, turning into those violent Savages, or Mutants who have lost all reason, or grotesque carriers. Wild beasts also transformed into Mutant Beasts, Irradiated Beasts, some turning into demonic beings as well. The zombies were also mutating due to the radiation. Some turned into living corpses with no minds or rationality. Some evolved into beings with appearances of humans, yet they possessed terrifying combat strength. They had powerful recovery abilities and superhuman intelligence. Some didn't feast on human meat, yet it was unbearable, so they chose to drink blood, whereas the others indulged in their cravings. These 2 clans are all evolved from zombies, the flesh-eaters are known as the Saint Clan, and the vampires are known as Longevity Species."

"Of these 2 clans, there is still one more Ancestor Clan. They are the offsprings of the union between the top experts of both the Saint Clan and Longevity Species. They have the strength and abilities of both races, and they do not need to consume blood or flesh to live. Their strength is also off the charts. The Ancestor Clan number very little, but each and every member is a terrifying existence. Truthfully speaking, any one of them could wipe our entire resistance out."

"The west wing of the resistance forces had established a city in the past before. Within 3 days, one of the Ancestors appeared and wiped out the entire place. There were over 1,500 fighters as well as 30,000 survivors within the city, and yet, it was turned into a graveyard!"

Chapter 722: Luo Chen!

Yue Zhong's heart sunk, "So the Saint Clan came from the zombies? Seems like Yin Shuang, Amaterasu, Feng Bo and those intelligent zombies are similar to the predecessors of the Saint Clan. If we had failed, seems like our fate would have been similar to these people. Life and death beyond their control, being slaughtered like livestock."

Although Earth was still crawling with zombies and Mutant Beasts, under the efforts of the humans, territory was still being reclaimed and recovered every day. If Yue Zhong and the other factions were to fail, then Earth would likely become like this hell.

Lisa looked at Yue Zhong, her eyes glinting, "Yue Zhong, I see that you possess some ability. Do you want to join us, the resistance force? Let us work together to fight back against the monsters and vampires, setting the human race free?"

Yue Zhong's personal strength was something else, furthermore, he could pilot the RH2 well. If he joined the resistance, he would definitely boost their fighting capabilities.

"Right now, do you know the proportion of the humans to the Saint Clan?"

"Not too sure!"

"Excuse me for being presumptuous, but how many people are in the resistance now?"

Lisa instantly turned wary, "This is a secret, I will tell you only after you have joined us."

Yue Zhong pondered deeply for a while, before suggesting, "I would like to meet the leader of your resistance. I don't like to listen to others' command. I intend to work as an ally to you guys, fighting side by side."

If he were to join, Yue Zhong would have to listen to their

commands. He was extremely uncomfortable with that. Furthermore, there was a strong possibility of him being treated as cannon fodder. He had no idea what the upper echelon was like, and before confirming that the other party had some benefits for him, he would not join them.

Lisa's eyes flashed with shock, "Ally? On what grounds are you proposing that?"

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly and asked, "I have 6 subordinates, 6 machine guns, 1 RH2. I can easily wipe out an armored unit of the Red Rock City. Don't tell me such strength is still not enough to negotiate an alliance?"

Yue Zhong was also probing the threshold and might of the leader of the resistance. If the other party truly had the capability and foresight, he would come in person to try and pull Yue Zhong over. If the other party was an idiot, then Yue Zhong would try to initiate a reverse takeover.

Yue Zhong was well experienced when it came to swallowing other powers. Of course, if he wasn't forced to, he wouldn't do it. After all, once initiated, regardless of the result, the hearts of the people would be affected. It would take time, victories, glory and benefits to rebuild their confidence and loyalty.

Yue Zhong had not yet established himself, if he were to try and take over the resistance, he would make an enemy out of the entire resistance force, making it difficult to do anything else.

"Alright! I'll go back and discuss with the leader."

Yue Zhong replied, "I'll wait here for you. If there's no news after 24 hours, I'll leave."

Lisa looked deeply at Yue Zhong, "Wait for me!", before turning to run towards the distance like an agile leopard.

"Is she what she said true?" After Lisa left, Yue Zhong tried to confirm with Rooney.

Rooney hesitated for a while, before replying, "Sir. Red Rock City forbids all rumors or discussions about the things from hundreds of years ago. I don't know much about that, however, the Saint Clan is indeed referred to as flesh-eating monsters by the residents secretly. Many pretty young girls would disappear for no reason all the time, some people say those girls had been whisked off to the inner city, becoming food for the monsters. The Saint Clan truly does not view us from the outer city as people, if they're angry, they would just slaughter us as they like."

Yue Zhong did not say anything, he had experienced their overbearingness for himself. Those city guards had not even treated the other residents as humans, just pulling out their guns to kill as they deemed fit. Just based on this, he was already filled with disgust for the governance of Red Rock City. That was one of the reasons why he decided to work with the resistance.

He turned to the pilot who was still wrapped in the silk, asking indifferently, "What's your name?"

The pilot replied, "It's Lin Guang!"

"Work with me, or die here, your choice."

Lin Guang quickly made the choice, "I'm willing to work with you!"

Lin Guang was human, after all, the Saint Clan had treated the humans as though they were slaves. He was also unwilling to work for them. To a human like him, his life was most important.

After Lisa had left Yue Zhong, she ran towards a desolate hill and routed it a few times, observing the surroundings carefully. After ensuring that no one had followed her, she made her way towards some rocks, moving a few of the bigger ones aside to reveal a tunnel.

She entered it with nimble ease.

"Lisa! You're back!"

"Awesome! It's Lisa! She's back!"

"...."

Inside the tunnel, there were a few elite soldiers guarding the place. The moment they saw Lisa, they erupted in cheers. Lisa was beautiful and sexy, furthermore, she had skills that were not inferior to many men. This gave her an aura and raised morale among the resistance fighters. Many of the males, being bored underground, had termed her as the leader of the 3 flowers. She was the dream lover and object of affection for many.

A woman dressed in tights, with a similar voluptuous body and short black hair, came running and hugging Lisa. Her features were exquisite and she had a valiant charm about her. "Lisa! You're back! That's great!! I was so worried that I might not get to see you again!"

Lisa chuckled and pried Qigong Hui away from her, "Hui-sauce! Where's Luo Chen? Bring me to him!"

This pretty teen Qigong Hui was the best pilot of the East Division of the resistance and could exhibit about 50 to 60% of the RH2, surpassing other men. She was also one of the 3 flowers in the East Division.

"Luo Chen is right inside, come with me!" Qigong Hui pulled on Lisa's hands and asked curiously, "Lisa, how did you get out of the bar? According to Lin Yang, an elite troop of city guards had gone after you there!"

"There was an expert called Yue Zhong who lent a hand. He had killed all 6 of the city guards, that was how I managed to get out."

"So lucky!" Qigong Hui sighed in relief, before bubbling with excitement again, "Oh yes! Lisa, did you see? That talented pilot who burst out killing those guards! He was so strong!! I dare guarantee he can at least pull out 60 to 70% of the RH2's potential! I want to spar with him!"

The RH2 had plenty of receptors since Qigong Hui had piloted one RH2 out of Red Rock City, she had managed to witness the spectacle of Yue Zhong's display while escaping Red Rock City. To an exceptional pilot, what she wanted to do most was to spar and get stronger with another pilot.

Lisa chuckled, "I saw! In fact, the pilot was Yue Zhong. He was the one who captured the RH2 from the city guards and wiped out the reinforcements."

Qigong Hui's eyes brightened up as she immediately begged, "No way?! Lisa, do you know him? Please introduce me!! I want to chat with him and have a good match with him!!"

Lisa was like an older sister to Qigong Hui and stuck to her like glue.

In a room deep within the underground city, a young, elegant woman with a head full of hair, beautiful looks and an alluring figure, sat in front of a computer. She wore a Gothic-dress, and had a princess feel to her as she smiled at Lisa, "Lisa, you're back!"

Lisa smiled back, "Aloya, I'm back!"

Aloya was also one of the 3 flowers of the Eastern Division, she was exceptionally talented in the field of computers and networks. She was the best hacker and programmer of the division, and was likewise, a genius analyst.

Lisa turned to a man full of bookish charm, sitting in a wheelchair. He had black hair and yellow skin, his looks clean and he wore spectacles. She said, "Luo Chen, I have something to report!"

Luo Chen closed the book, revealing a refreshing smile that seemed to give off a relaxing vibe, "Oh! Speak your mind!"

Lisa then told him whatever Yue Zhong had mentioned.

Luo Chen closed his eyes for a while, before reopening and smiling, "An alliance eh? Interesting! Lisa, go back and tell him,

I'm willing to work together with him. Invite him over as a guest!"

Delight could be seen in Lisa's eyes as she hurried out, "Great! I'll go let him know!"

When she left, Aloya suddenly piped in, "Would it be a trap?"

Luo Chen replied mildly, "It's highly unlikely. There's no reason for Red Rock City to risk losing 2 RH2 just for such a trap. If Yue Zhong didn't appear, our operation this time might have a 70% of failing. We would have lost a hundred people. Anyway, there's a spy among us."

Chapter 723: Contact!

Under Lisa's lead, Yue Zhong came to the underground tunnel of the resistance.

When they came to the base, Yue Zhong could feel multiple gazes on him.

Under the various envious looks, he laughed lightly, "Seems like you're pretty sought after here, Lisa!"

Lisa's looks could be considered a peak beauty back on Earth. On this planet, where conditions were harsh and radiation was everywhere, it was tough for normal people to have a decent meal. Under such circumstances, the number of beauties that could exist was even lower than on Earth. Someone like Lisa was truly rare among the resistance.

She frowned, "Rooney and the rest did not come with you, do you not trust me?"

He chuckled and brushed it off, "Of course I trust you. You're thinking too much. But before we get started, I need to meet your leader first."

Lisa eyed him and snorted.

6 men and women came over from a distance, the leader a burly warrior decked in a black jacket. He had a blind eye, and his expression was slightly savage, as he laughed coldly at Yue Zhong, "You must be Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong replied, "That's me!"

The burly man continued, "I'm Han Feng, I heard that you managed to wipe out an elite troop of city guards without any weapons. I wonder if it's true, shall we spar?"

Yue Zhong dismissed him indifferently, "Not interested!"

Han Feng and his team of 5 immediately froze, not knowing what

to do. In this world where the strongest reigned supreme, only an expert would gain the respect and recognition of others. Many people would choose to fight regardless of the result. They knew that a man that could gain Lisa's recognition was definitely strong, but they didn't expect that he would not battle them.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong did not spare Han Feng and the rest another glance as he continued on his way.

Han Feng immediately threw a vicious punch in a fit of anger, "Damned brat, are you looking down on me?!"

In the next moment, his entire body froze, not daring to make another move. A dagger had appeared out of nowhere and was pressed right against his forehead. It was the first time he felt so close to death.

Yue Zhong kept the dagger back and continued walking, "You're already dead!"

"Strong!! That man is truly strong!"

The 5 men and women saw how Han Feng was subdued and their eyes flashed with shock. Han Feng was the strongest expert among them, with a body constitution of 8 times a normal person. He was well-versed in all sorts of combat styles, and few could defend against him in close combat. Yet, such a fighter was overcome so easily by Yue Zhong, thus they were filled with respect.

Lisa glanced at Han Feng with pity and continued down the tunnel. Yue Zhong could easily eliminate an elite troop of city guards. Han Feng was at most comparable to an elite city guard, how was it possible to contend against Yue Zhong?

After defeating Han Feng, the gazes of the rest of the warriors towards Yue Zhong was different. In this world, the humans revered the strong more so than on Earth.

Qigong Hui bounced over, full of youth and vitality, as she

assessed Yue Zhong curiously, her gaze fervent as she asked, "You must be Yue Zhong! Are you the one who controlled that RH2 in Red Rock City?"

Yue Zhong did not deny, "That's me!"

Qigong Hui's gaze turned heated, "Have a match with me! Let's use the RH2 to determine the victor! I want to exchange pointers with you!!"

From young, Qigong Hui had loved robots. After joining the resistance, she had been searching for a pilot stronger than her to challenge. In the course of her experiments and battles, she had grown to become one of the best pilots of the resistance.

Yue Zhong turned her down, continuing towards the center of the base, "Not interested!". The controlling of the RH2 require energy. In the course of a battle, both machines would be damaged. Yue Zhong had no one who could help him do repairs or maintenance, hence if the RH2 in his hands were to be put through a grueling battle, it might be damaged. He wasn't willing to expend such a precious machine in order to pacify some little girl.

Qigong Hui saw that Yue Zhong was ignoring her, and her face scrunched up in annoyance, as she caught up to him, "How can you be like this?"

After passing through many protective defenses, Yue Zhong came to the deepest part of the tunnel and saw the bookish yet handsome man.

"This fellow doesn't possess combat ability, he must be the brains behind the scenes."

Yue Zhong observed Luo Chen carefully, coming to a conclusion from the muscles and movements of his. This caused him to be even warier.

The fact that such a man could gain respect and prestige in a world where the strong was revered, his intelligence had to be

something else.

Luo Chen also assessed Yue Zhong in front of him. After a long while, he smiled lightly and raised his hands towards Yue Zhong, "How do you do, Yue Zhong! I'm Luo Chen, the Director of the Eastern Division 3rd Unit. Pleased to meet you."

Yue Zhong shook his hands and could tell Luo Chen was really without strength. He was just a normal person, "How do you do, I'm Yue Zhong."

Aloya gave a curious glance at Yue Zhong as well, before introducing herself, "Programming and Safety Engineer for the Eastern Division 3rd Unit, Aloya!"

"Hello!"

Luo Chen smiled faintly and beckoned to Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, are you interested in joining our Eastern Division 3rd Unit and work together against the flesh-eating monsters and vampires, freeing the humans?"

Yue Zhong naturally rejected his proposal, "Sorry, I'm not used to being commanded. I think it's still better to be allies!"

Luo Chen laughed lightly, and handed him a document, "That's fine! Let's work as allies then. Take a look and see if the conditions are fine?"

Yue Zhong received the document over and saw that there weren't too many conditions, it just required the allies not to attack each other, and to trade and share information. Once an ally was attacked by the monsters and vampires, the other party had to immediately send help.

Yue Zhong saw that the conditions were reasonable and signed below, sealing the alliance.

He handed the document back to Luo Chen and asked, "I want to know of the combat strength in Red Rock City!"

Luo Chen laughed lightly, "Aloya!"

Aloya revealed a self-confident smile and immediately pulled up a file on her computer, "Red Rock City has 3 battalions of ordinary soldiers, consisting of 1,500 people. These ordinary soldiers are made up of humans, their strength comparable to us. Above them, there are 500 city guards, they're the main force of Red Rock City, each and everyone having been injected with a Type 3 Enhancement Drug. Above them, there are 100 elite troops directly controlled by the city lord Annette, who are human experts, enhanced by Type 4 and above drugs. These are all the human troops."

"Besides them, Red Rock City also has 200 Flesh-Eaters that form the Red Rock Guard. Every one of them has a strength that is beyond those enhanced by a Type 4 Drug. They're on par with Type 2 Divine Warriors. At the same time, there are about 1,000 Flesh-Eaters inside the city. They might not be part of the army, but they all possess incredible might. Not too long ago, Annette had summoned 7 experts of Type 3 Divine Warriors' strength. They are all Flesh-Eaters, and their names are Knight, Luther, Santana, Jack, Zhang Lan, Casey and Abu Bakar."

"Type 3 Divine Warriors eh?"

Yue Zhong felt a chill in his heart and was somewhat wary against the might of Red Rock City. Based on his own conjecture, his strength was roughly about the same as the Type 3 Divine Warriors.

One Red Rock City already had 8 Type 3 Divine Warriors. If he were to be surrounded by them, he would not survive.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

All of a sudden, there were multiple explosions that rocked the entire underground base.

Underground, multiple alarms rang out.

Yue Zhong was shocked, as he looked towards the calm Luo Chen, "What's going on?"

Luo Chen replied without skipping a beat, his expression unfazed, "Our base is compromised! Aloya, pull out the image for me!"

"Yes!"

Her fingers flew across a strange keyboard, hitting the strokes at an insane speed, keying commands constantly into the machine. One by one, images flew up and were displayed on the monitor, revealing the situation outside.

About 20 kilometers away, an armored unit consisting of 5 RH2s, 15 tanks, 100 gun-mounted vehicles, 20 rocket launchers and several armored cars, was currently cruising towards their location.

In the skies, there were 8 assault helicopters, each of them filled with targeting missiles. When they flew over the base, they would release the missiles, bombing the place and causing multiple areas to be destroyed.

"Qigong Hui!" Luo Chen's voice sounded out solemnly.

"Yes!" The girl, who had been staring blankly, immediately recovered her senses and leaped out the room. Her target was the RH2 kept within their own hangar.

Chapter 724: Strike!

The resistance forces were well trained, the moment the alarms rang, they began to grab their weapons with practiced ease and charged out from the ground.

Through the images on Aloya's computer, Yue Zhong could see clearly the resistance forces appear quickly outside of the base.

The position of the base was in an area full of low hills and boulders, in such a location, the scattering of a thousand people can seem pretty daunting.

Luo Chen kept his gaze on the images and spoke out mildly, "Bring Liu Hai over!"

A young man with blond hair and good looks, dressed in jeans and a yellow leather jacket came into the room, looking a little uneasy as he spoke, "Leader! You needed me for something?"

Luo Chen turned around and looked at Liu Hai with a complicated look, sighing, "Liu Hai, what benefits did the Flesh-Eaters promise you, that you chose to betray us? Have you forgotten how your mother was eaten by them?"

When Liu Hai heard this, his face fell, and he reached into his shirt with his right hand.

Lisa, who had been standing at one side, immediately shot forward with a chill in her eyes. She grabbed onto his left hand and swung his forcefully onto the ground like a toy.

Luo Chen's eyes flashed with hurt, as he pulled out a handgun, pointing it at Liu Hai's head, "Why betray us? Have you already forgotten the hatred of your mother?"

Liu Hai, who was being stepped on by Lisa, had a savage look as he laughed out maniacally, "Hahaha!! Of course, I have not forgotten! I have never forgotten!! However, I hate this life even more! Living like rats beneath the surface, not having a full meal,

no water and no food, no women, and our fates are basically uncertain!"

After Liu Hai laughed out in his madness, he closed his eyes, "I did betray you guys!! I betrayed you, purely for the sake of eating my fill, drinking clean water, fucking beautiful women, and allowing my future generations a better life!! I've had enough of this rat life! Just kill me! Luo Chen, I've followed you for so long, I know your character, you'll not let me go! Kill me if you want! Let me have a quick death!"

"Go in peace!" Luo Chen sighed, before pulling the trigger.

Peng!

A gunshot hole appeared in Liu Hai's forehead, his body shuddered once and ceased moving.

Luo Chen looked at Liu Hai's corpse, his eyes filled with pain and bitterness, before he spoke solemnly, "He's called Liu Hai. Before he betrayed us, he was our good brother and a hero. He had risked death to save 13 of our comrades. He had also undergone near-impossible missions and difficult combat. I was even saved by him once. He was one of the most trusted friends, and I never thought he would betray us."

Yue Zhong was not interested in Luo Chen reminiscing the past, "I don't think you have the luxury to recall memories. Dealing with the situation outside should be your priority now!"

Luo Chen laughed mildly, before giving an order to Aloya, "You're right! Aloya, release the 1st air-defense, let's deal with those 8 Falcon warplanes!"

As the 8 assault aircrafts were about to launch another round of missiles, a patch of ground opened up a few kilometers away, and huge beams fired out towards the 8 aircrafts, hitting them accurately.

Hong! Hong!

Without enough time to defend, 7 of them were destroyed in an instant, exploding in huge balls of fire.

Only one of the pilots managed to dodge with incredible skill. He had released a jammer at the first instant, and quickly maneuvered the aircraft in a strange flight pattern, dodging and destroying the rockets aimed at it.

After dealing with the crisis, the remaining Falcon warplane immediately rose in the air and disappeared into the clouds.

At the next instant, the rocket launchers behind fired multiple rockets at the anti-air defenses.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Loud explosions rang out continuously, burying the base's air defenses.

Underground, Aloya reported with an impassive face, "The 1st air-defense is out!"

The moment she was immersed in her work, all sorts of thoughts would be forced out of Aloya's mind, and she would remain focused and listened to all of Luo Chen's orders without question.

As the anti-air defenses were destroyed, the forces of Red Rock City were already starting to blanket the area of boulders and rocks with countless firepower. Many resistance fighters were quickly vanquished.

In the rain of fire, the 5 RH2 burst forth with power, charging right into the stone forest.

Within the RH2s, there were heat sensors, thermal imaging scanning systems, biological induction radar system and many other scanners. The moment they began to operate those sensors to locate life forms and heat signatures, the RH2s became extremely efficient hunters.

As the 5 RH2s charged through the rocks and boulders, the

cannons and laser cannons fired wildly. They were already trained on the heat signatures, causing the resistance fighters to be killed quickly.

As long as the sensors managed to capture any movement or heat signatures, even if the resistance fighters hid behind boulders, they would be blasted with a laser beam.

Lisa looked at the mounting death toll of the resistance fighters, and her eyes were filled with rage. Her fists clenched as she spat through her teeth, "Damn it!!"

If it were against any other weapon of war, the resistance fighters could at least make use of the terrain to fight back. However, against the powerful sensors of the RH2s, they were basically defenseless.

The RH2s were developed to wipe out the resistance fighters. Although they expended a lot of energy, their fire structure relatively simple, could not fly, and bore a huge burden on the pilots, they were extremely efficient killing machines.

Just as the 5 RH2s were engaged in slaughter, from far, 2 laser beams shot out, one of them accurately penetrating the pilot seat of one RH2, vaporizing the pilot in a cloud of smoke, the other brushed past the frame of another RH2.

The remaining 4 RH2s immediately turned to face the new threat, adjusting their condition, and started to surround the 2 new RH2s from the resistance.

The main forces of Red Rock City had already reached the resistance forces amidst the rock formations and were engaged in slaughter.

Luo Chen turned to Yue Zhong and pleaded, "Yue Zhong! You've seen the state of affairs, I need your help!"

Yue Zhong replied, "I will need an RH2!"

Although Yue Zhong had the ability to destroy an RH2, in terms

of firepower and combat stamina, the RH2 surpassed him.

Luo Chen chuckled, "Way ahead of you! Lisa, bring our ally to the hangar!"

Lisa was already anxious in her heart as she rushed out, "Follow me!"

Yue Zhong gave a deep look at Luo Chen, revealing a knowing smile but he didn't say much, as he followed Lisa without hurry.

Aloya had an impassive face, "He has seen through your act."

Luo Chen laughed indifferently, "In fact, I never thought to hide it from him, he knows it too."

Aloya was speechless as she continued to look at her computer, her fingers quickly tapping on the keyboard.

Within the area of boulders and rocks, there was an intense fight going on. The Red Rock City troops were advancing without stop, taking out resistance fighters left, right and center.

However, there were plenty of traps set by the resistance beforehand, including landmines, and since they were familiar with the terrain, they would appear from time to time to launch devastating attacks on the Red Rock City forces. These soldiers were all experienced and the only disadvantage they had was the lack of equipment.

As the resistance fighters put up a fight, the advance of the Red Rock City forces slowed down considerably.

"Too slow!! Too slow!! I can't wait any longer!! I want to kill!!"

Santana revealed a savage grin as he disappeared in a flash.

One resistance fighter was hiding behind cover, carefully sticking out a mirror to observe the situation through the reflection.

"Looking for me?"

The next moment, Santana appeared in front of the soldier and

smiled savagely.

The soldier's face fell in horror as he raised his gun towards Santana.

With a powerful gust, the head of the soldier disappeared, his headless corpse crumpling to the ground. Behind him, Santana was grabbing his head and bit down viciously, breaking the skull like it was nothing, enjoying the white and red brain matter.

"Delicious!! These resisting prey are truly tasty!! Only when those who try to fight, can get my blood boiling with excitement! Kekeke!!"

After devouring the head of the resistance fighter, Santana laughed out loud before weaving through the rocks in a gust of wind, killing every soldier he came across, tearing their heads and sucking their brains dry!

Chapter 725: Relentless Assault!

As part of the Flesh-Eaters that descended from zombies, Santana possessed a powerful sense of smell. He could easily discover the location of humans based on their scent in a 300m.

Within that area, Santana's ability to suss out humans was even stronger than the RH2 with all its receptors.

The moment Santana rushed into the boulder formation, any soldier he came across would be slaughtered and their brains sucked dry by him. A Type 3 Divine Warrior's strength was invincible to an ordinary person. Without an expert with a similar strength to defend, Santana could easily slaughter all 1,000-over soldiers of the resistance.

In this world, the human resistance was at a disadvantage purely because of existences like Santana.

Following a loud explosion, one of the RH2 that belonged to the resistance was pierced through by blades made out of alloy held by the 3 RH2s from Red Rock City. In the close distance, they fired a laser beam directly at the resistance pilot, directly killing him.

"Jing Yang! Beast!! Go to hell!!" At the same time, Qigong Hui controlled the other RH2 and sent a blade slashing down towards one of the RH2 belonging to Red Rock City.

The sharp alloy blade sliced through the thick armor, cutting off the right arm of the RH2.

That RH2 released a jet of fire behind and pushed its speed to the maximum, jumping to one side.

Qigong Hui was about to use the blade to slice that enemy into half, but she suddenly felt a sense of danger. With a thought, she turned and could see the 3 RH2 already training their laser cannons on her. As an ace pilot, she immediately knew that if she were to forcefully slice the RH2 in two, she would be shot down by

those laser beams.

"Beast!!!" Qigong Hui gritted her teeth and spat, controlling the RH2 to twist its large body, before using her own jets to propel her out of the range of the enemy.

A laser beam shot past, brushing the side of her RH2.

At the same time, the 3 RH2s began to operate their 30 cannons to fire wildly, turning into a barrage of metal that rained down towards Qigong Hui's RH2.

Under the sensors of the RH2s, all the cannons were trained and locked onto Qigong Hui and her route of escape. Even if she pushed her thrusters to the limit, a large number of bullets and firepower still slammed into her.

The outer hull of the RH2s was made using the most advanced alloy of this world, and its defense was even stronger than most heavily armored tanks. Under the barrage of bullets and cannons, dents could be seen in the armor, but it did not affect the combat ability of the RH2.

However, due to the rain of bullets, some receptors and sensors were affected and ceased working.

Even the thickest of armors would be damaged if fired on constantly.

Qigong Hui dodged and controlled her own RH2 to fire with its cannons.

However, under the suppression of the 4 RH2s, Qigong Hui was pushed to a dangerous situation, and she could only retreat constantly. Her own ability surpassed any one of the individual pilots of Red Rock City, but against 4, it was incredibly tough.

Hong!!

Following a loud explosion, the RH2 controlled by Qigong Hui had its right arm blasted off, at the same time, she managed to take

off the left arm of one of the enemy's RH2.

The powerful force caused Qigong Hui's RH2 to be knocked back, the intense shockwave shaking her. Nausea overcame her, as she felt like puking, and a number of notifications were sent almost instantly to her brain, threatening to overload her senses.

The RH2s possessed a powerful central computer that could transmit messages and alerts directly to the pilot through the helmet. As long as it was not turned off, the pilot could receive information about the RH2's surroundings in real-time.

However, such information bore a huge load on the human brain. Many soldiers would usually turn them off to focus on fights. In a life-and-death situation, on the other hand, most pilots would then operate the sensors at full capacity, while overburdening their brains, it would also limit their ability.

Currently, Qigong Hui was combating 4 RH2s, as she struggled under their joint attacks, she even managed to take off one arm of the enemy. This was already incredible. However, such intense combat was also placing her under immense stress.

"Is this the end?" Inside the pilot cockpit, Qigong Hui was panting for breath, her body slick with perspiration, her eyes flashing with despair.

The RH2 had a strong biometric scanning system, and Qigong Hui could see her comrades on the battlefield being slaughtered.

The 4 RH2s continued to fire coolly at her, without the intention to engage in close combat.

Close combat was the highest form of control a pilot could exhibit, but at the same time, the requirements were the harshest. If the skills were lacking, the victor could be determined quickly. As for long-range firing, the pilots could make use of the sensors and target systems to do the work. Even an expert like Qigong Hui would be helpless against the combined fire of 4 RH2s.

As the cannons and guns continued to fire, her RH2 was starting to break apart, at the same time, many parts were failing, before small fires broke out everywhere.

Right as Qigong Hui's RH2 was about to be destroyed, a powerful laser beam shot from a distance, directly piercing the pilot cockpit of one of the enemy RH2s, vaporizing the pilot.

The sudden attack immediately alarmed the remaining 3 RH2s. They quickly swiveled and noticed the sudden appearance of another RH2 behind them.

"You're Yue Zhong?" Having escaped the clutches of death, Qigong Hui controlled her broken RH2 to soar into the air, asking in a shocked manner.

The Flesh-Eaters and Vampires had the resources of the most advanced technology and nurturing in this world. Many humans of the resistance were not well learned, and those who could pilot a robot were automatically deemed precious fighters. Anyone who could pilot an RH2 would be treated as a genius and within the underground East Division, there were not many pilots, in fact, there were only 2 of them.

Because of that, the moment Qigong Hui saw a friendly RH2, she was overjoyed.

Through the communications, Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "Go help the people at the rock formations, leave these 3 fellows to me."

Qigong Hui could not help but blurt out, "Yue Zhong, these are all expert pilots of Red Rock City, it's impossible to deal with them alone! We should work together!"

Yue Zhong frowned, it had been a long while since anyone disobeyed his order. However, he reminded himself that he was no longer on Earth, and it was not a faction that he controlled, thus he replied, "Whatever!"

After which, he took a deep breath, releasing all limiters on the sensors of the RH2 and instantly, a large amount of information flowed into his brain, connecting him and the RH2 as one.

At the next instant, the thrusters opened up and roared to life. With a strong gust of wind, the RH2 reached the speed of Mach-1, shooting for one of the Red Rock City's RH2 like a shooting star.

The 3 RH2s immediately fired wildly when Yue Zhong appeared, and a dense rain of bullets enveloped Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong controlled the RH2 to rush right through the rain of metal, charging for the 3 RH2s like a sharp, unsheathed blade. In just a breath of time, he had slammed right into one of the RH2s, the alloy blade in his RH2's arms slicing into the cockpit of the enemy, causing blood to splatter out.

On the other side, Qigong Hui stared in horror, she had never imagined Yue Zhong's retaliation to be so vicious, overbearing and decisive. In merely a second, an enemy had died. She had never seen the RH2 being piloted this way.

After Yue Zhong controlled his RH2 to take down the enemy in a second, his robot had plenty of injuries. During that charge, the impact from the bullets could cause an ordinary pilot to be heavily injured. However, Yue Zhong had actually charged through the line of death in a second.

At the next moment, without stopping, Yue Zhong controlled the thrusters to propel himself forward, reaching the next RH2 as he sent out a fist towards the cockpit.

The powerful alloy armor of the RH2 from Red Rock City was strong enough to block the fist, only causing the armor around the cockpit to dent a little. However, the terrifying impact and resulting shockwave vibrated through, causing the pilot to spit out a blood, dying immediately.

Chapter 726: Jack!

Yue Zhong controlled his RH2 to send the enemy flying with a punch. Without pausing, he darted towards the last RH2 in a blur.

The last RH2 had completely handed the firing systems over to the computer, allowing it to unleash a massacre without the limitations of humans. The downside was that the moment the pilot handed the firing systems over, the response of the RH2 would be affected by 30%.

Yue Zhong braced himself through the flurry of bullets, appearing in front of the last RH2 in a breath's time. His right arm swung the alloy blade directly into the cockpit, turning the pilot into a meat paste.

Qigong Hui watched as Yue Zhong's RH2 became increasingly injured, shock filling her heart, "Strong!!"

In barely 30 seconds, Yue Zhong had controlled his single RH2 to take out 3 equivalent RH2s. That tyrannical and vicious way of combat had left a deep impression on Qigong Hui. She asked herself if she could replicate what Yue Zhong did, and realized that she was filled with respect. The most was sniping that 1st RH2.

"Go! Go provide support!"

After destroying the 4 RH2, Yue Zhong did not even glance at Qigong Hui, quickly charging towards the stony area with Mach-1 speed.

Qigong Hui followed closely behind him.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong arrived at the place.

He discovered the 2 battalions from Red Rock City, which had also noticed this single RH2 suddenly storming over, and their eyes were filled with shock.

"Kill them all!!" Yue Zhong eyed the 2 battalions coldly and

handed the firing systems over to the central computer.

The moment the thought flashed across his mind, 10 cannons appeared from the RH2's frame, and unleashed a rain of death on the soldiers of Red Rock City.

The cannons and guns continued to whir noisily, under the targeting system of the central computer, each soldier exploded like an ant that was stepped on. The bullets even tore apart the armored vehicles, together with their drivers and riders within.

The elite soldiers of Red Rock City had been the hunters, now the situation flipped around. Without any preparation for it, they were forced to scramble for life.

Originally, the weapons of the elite soldiers of Red Rock City could engage the RH2s. As long as they had sufficient cover, they could even injure RH2s. However, in the wilderness, where there were no structures, these soldiers were just like sheep awaiting slaughter.

At this time, Qigong Hui also charged over, handing over the control of the firing systems as well. The remaining 5 cannons on her also fired out wildly.

"Aiyaya! This bunch of trash seems like they still need me to act!"

At this time, among the scattered and devastated troops of Red Rock City, a wild and frenzied laugh sounded out. Jack lifted his head to eye the 2 RH2s, his eyes flashing with a mad desire. With a flash, he charged towards Qigong Hui's RH2, appearing in front of the cockpit.

Qigong Hui was taken aback when she saw Jack suddenly appear in front of her, "How is this possible? How could he evade the firepower?"

"You can go take a rest with your toy!!"

Jack laughed out savagely as he pulled out a 2m sword. Thrusting out viciously, the material of the sword was unknown, but it

managed to pierce the cockpit and directly into her chest.

Jack then swiftly pulled out the sword and disappeared from his location.

As the sharp blade left her body, Qigong Hui's eyes dimmed, and she slumped in her seat, her eyes shut.

Yue Zhong saw what happened through the sensors of the RH2 and his heart was rocked, "What a terrifying fellow! This guy must be one of the experts of the Flesh-Eaters!"

After killing Qigong Hui, Jack's face wore a slight smile, as he introduced himself, "Hi! I'm Jack, one of the Saint Clan members in Red Rock City. I'm interested in you, what's your name?"

Yue Zhong stared at Jack, before sending a vicious punch towards him.

With each punch packing over 10 tonnes, one punch was enough to flatten even Jack.

"I'm appreciative of your control over this metal lump. As long as you submit to me, I can accept you as my subordinate and bring you into the inner city. There's clean water, delicious food, enticing human women that aren't tainted by radiation. I can give you all these. Follow me, and you'll no longer have to live like rats, not seeing the light of day, nor a hopeless future." Jack was still smiling as he appeared at a distance of 10m away in a flash.

Yue Zhong's pupils constricted, the speed of this Jack was truly quick, surpassing even the strongest loli Yin Shuang. In fact, it seemed to be even faster by at least 20%.

Jack continued to smile arrogantly, "This metal lump might seem a precious treasure to us, but to me, it actually is nothing. As long as I wish it, I can easily kill all you pilots easily. There's no way for these stupid metal lumps to catch my movements. This is the difference between us Saint Clan and you humans. Or the distance between gods and humans. We are the gods, you are just pathetic

humans!"

With a flesh body that could surpass the sound barrier, easily killing an RH2 pilot, it was truly a monstrous strength. The Flesh-Eaters were able to hold Red Rock City tightly in their grasp, to the point that they could care less that one RH2 had been stolen.

A single RH2 could flip the tides of a battle in a human war, but a single Flesh-Eater with a Type 3 Divine Warrior strength could easily eliminate an RH2 pilot.

"God? What a joke! Just based on you freaks and you want to be gods? Let me take you out, a so-called 'god'! Jack, bear this in mind, today, this human that's about to kill you! I'm Yue Zhong!" The cockpit opened up, and Yue Zhong stepped out slowly, staring at Jack with contempt while laughing coldly.

Chapter 727: Victory at a Cost!

The RH2 had a powerful defensive ability, top-notch firing system, an incredible A.I, against ordinary soldiers, these were all powerful weapons. On the battlefield, a single RH2 was basically a machine of slaughter. However, to deal with Jack, it was still lacking.

In terms of Agility, the RH2's main frame could not compare to Jack, and while Yue Zhong could pull out 80-90% of the RH2's combat ability, it was not enough to deal with Jack.

"I have seen many human experts and those who dare talk to me the way you did have died. You won't be an exception. Such a lowly piece of trash, you dare rebuke me. When I consume your delicious innards, I'll keep you alive. That'll be pretty interesting!"

Jack licked his lips with an excited look. His body turned tense, and with a flash, he immediately leaped forward with a speed surpassing the sound barrier. In less than a breath of time, his sharp blade had pierced towards Yue Zhong.

Fast!! Pure speed, that was Jack's style, surpassing even the strongest loli Yin Shuang under Yue Zhong. His speed was way faster than even the RH2.

Yue Zhong's gaze turned solemn, as wisps of dark energy poured out of his body, pushing his constitution to a terrifying extent. Under the enhancement of Dark Dou Qi, he managed to follow Jack's movement. Without any intention to dodge, he sent a blade towards Jack as well.

Jack flicked the blade in his hand slightly, penetrating through the Type 4 Giant Sea Snake hide on Yue Zhong, as well as the Type 5 Defense Vest, even through his Body of Steel.

When the blade pierced through all the defenses, a surge of vibration traveled through, causing a huge hole to burst open in

Yue Zhong's chest, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

At the same instant, the Flame Blade in Yue Zhong's hands slashed down with a speed far surpassing sound, slicing through Jack's shoulder, slicing his heart in two.

Shock was written all over Jack's face, while he hung sliced in two. He had not expected this human in front of him to be so vicious to himself.

The Flesh-Eaters had Vitality surpassing ordinary humans, even though Jack had his body and heart sliced in half, he did not die. He laughed out in an unbridled fashion, "What a ruthless fellow!! However, even if I die, I want you to accompany me in death! Hahaha!!"

Even though Jack had been sliced in two by Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong had also suffered a sword through his chest, his intestines injured by the vibrations Jack sent out. Such a wound was enough to claim a human's life.

Jack was truly powerful, if Yue Zhong had not decided to take on that blow to deal an equally lethal blow to him, it would be hard to determine the victor between them. After all, they were of similar levels.

"The one who will die is you!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with cold, as he waved his hands, and Devil Flame burst into life, engulfing Jack, incinerating him in a second. He died howling.

At that same instant, strands of Life Energy was absorbed by the God and Devil imprint, nourishing his soul and body, enhancing them further.

"Congratulations on gaining +10 in Agility!"

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief when he heard that. Killing such a high-level expert had actually enhanced him.

The moment Jack died, Yue Zhong's tense nerves relaxed. He began to feel the pain in his chest, and his brows furrowed. He

turned around to enter the RH2 again.

Taking a can of Type 3 Beast meat, he gobbled it up, pushing the Regeneration ability, as his wounds began to heal at an insane speed.

The Level 4 Regeneration ability began to work its wonders, healing Yue Zhong's heavily body. If it wasn't for this skill, Yue Zhong might have perished a dozen times over.

He took a deep breath and wore the helmet, instantly receiving a flurry of notifications. With a thought, he restarted the RH2 and turned into a flash as he headed for the rocky area once again.

After 5 minutes, there were the sounds of the RH2's cannons firing wildly, as the elite soldiers of Red Rock City were slaughtered one after another.

There were 10 cannons, a laser gun and an alloy blade on each RH2. The rest were sensors and heat scanners. They were mainly for scouting and searching. Within that rocky area, it was practically the best terrain for the RH2 to unleash a carnage no one could defend against!

"I surrender!!"

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!"

"I surrender!!"

"...."

When the elite troops of Red Rock City saw how Yue Zhong was slaughtering them like a demon, many of them had fear in their eyes, while their morale dipped. Some abandoned their weapons as they kneeled and surrendered.

Many of them had no faith in the first place, nor any ethics or morals to bind them. They had agreed to serve Red Rock City purely because of a better life. They were not loyal to the Saint Clan in the first place. The moment they saw their comrades being

slaughtered and their support vanquished by Yue Zhong, they lost all will to fight.

The resistance soldiers that had been forced back began to counterattack, capturing those who surrendered.

"Seems like lowly humans are unreliable after all! Forget it, treat it as our loss this time. However, you guys need to pay a price too! Let me deal with your trump card!"

Santana looked at the incoming RH2 and laughed savagely, grabbing a random soldier's head and crushing it. He sucked up the juices, revealing a drunk expression, before leaping up on top of the RH2.

The moment Santana moved, Yue Zhong felt a sense of danger. He controlled the RH2 to retreat explosively, as all 10 cannons opened up and began firing at Santana's direction.

Santana faced the weapons that had locked onto him and displayed the terror of a Type 3 Divine Warrior. His speed instantly broke past the sound barrier, as the cannons moved slightly, he had already gone out of its range. The bullets brushed past his body, not causing any harm.

Even the powerful A.I. of the RH2 could not harm Santana, thus showcasing the true might of a Type 3 Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong was extremely calm as he controlled the RH2 to retreat while pulling up the laser cannon to fire at Santana.

As the laser beams shot out, some directly pierced through boulders, but did not manage to hit Santana. The distance between the 2 was also closing rapidly.

"Are you the trump card of the resistance? You can die for me!" Santana wore a savage grin as he appeared on top of Yue Zhong's RH2, sending a powerful fist towards the cockpit.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold look as he continued to push the RH2 backward. As the massive frame landed, rocks were

destroyed, at the same time, he controlled the RH2 to swing out with its foot to kick at Santana viciously.

Santana did not expect Yue Zhong to execute such a difficult maneuver, and he could not dodge in mid-air.

The kick carried a dangerous force behind it, if the kick were to connect with Santana, even the Saint Clan member would be heavily injured.

Santana's gaze turned cold, and he immediately spat out a breath with strength. The strong push actually pushed him backward a few meters. The RH2's leg brushed past his body.

He then landed, and charged right back at the RH2 like a meteor, sending a powerful punch on the weak part of the armor.

Hong!

With a single punch, a new hole appeared in the RH2, the strong alloy was pretty much paper against his fist.

He then sent out a few punches as fast as the wind, and in a few breaths, the entire leg had been devastated by him.

Yue Zhong controlled the RH2 to send a fist down towards Santana.

A cold look of ridicule flashed in Santana's eyes, and with a flash, he easily evaded that slap.

Santana then appeared right in front of the cockpit and laughed cruelly. He punched out once at the cockpit, his powerful fist instantly destroying the armor, landing on Yue Zhong's body. The blow instantly went through his chest, causing bits of metal to enter the body as well.

At the next instant, a bright flash blasted Santana's head apart, turning it into bloody matter.

Within the cockpit, Yue Zhong's chest was still pierced by the deformed alloy metal pieces from the cockpit. He had blood

flowing down his lips, and in his hands was the Electromagnetic Gun. He looked positively terrible.

"Congratulations on gaining +10 in Strength!"

Strands of Life Energy snaked up into the imprint on Yue Zhong's hand and he gained yet another enhancement.

"These Type 3 Divine Warriors are truly freakish existences."

He gasped for breath, as his chest was racked with pain, causing him to perspire all over, his features contorted.

This time, he had forced himself while killing 2 Type 3 Divine Warriors, suffering grievous injuries. If one more were to appear, he might be killed.

Chapter 728: Prophecy!

With a thought, Yue Zhong controlled the RH2 to rip out the cockpit door with force. With a little light, he began to pull out the alloy parts pierced in his chest. The sharp pains caused his face to contort.

After pulling out all the alloy pieces, his entire body was drenched in perspiration. He gasped for air, suppressing the pain as he quickly consume his Type 3 Beast meat.

As a few cans were consumed, the contents quickly transformed into energy that accelerated the healing process.

Yue Zhong's face turned dark as he thought, "This world truly contains some strong experts! Just the forces of this Red Rock City is enough to devastate my Central Plains army!"

Furthermore, this world actually contained such terrifying battle robots. They had the support of powerful A.I, and the biometric scanning systems were so advanced. Such a robot was practically an unstoppable killing machine back on Earth.

Other than these RH2s, there were the Type 3 Divine Warriors, and the even stronger Type 4 ones that had not yet appear.

Yue Zhong could not imagine what it would take to even threaten such existences.

As he sat there enduring the pain and letting his body heal, the forces of the resistance were already launching their counterattack against the elite forces of Red Rock City.

During the counterattack, many Red Rock City soldiers quickly handed over their weapons and allowed themselves to be captured.

Underground, Luo Chen's eyes were fixed on Yue Zhong's RH2, his gaze filled with awe, "Truly amazing!! He could control a single RH2 to fight 4, and he even took out 2 Type 3 Divine Warriors himself. Incredible!! If only such a person was part of our

resistance!"

Aloya looked at the serious wound on Yue Zhong's chest, her eyes filled with pity, "What a pity! He's going to die!"

Luo Chen laughed lightly in response, pointing to Yue Zhong's right hand on the monitor, "No! He won't die. Look at his right hand!"

Aloya looked at the God and Devil Imprint and her face changed immediately, "Is that the imprint of God? How is that possible?! What if... the legend was for real? Impossible! This doesn't make sense scientifically!"

Luo Chen's eyes were fixed on the imprint, his gaze complicated as well, "The imprint of God! Hundreds of years ago, the leader of the resistance had left behind a prophecy, that after a hundred years, or even a thousand years, a human with God's imprint on his right hand would appear, and he would be the hope of humankind! He would be the last hope that could possibly contend with the other races! The one who has that God imprint on his right hand will be our savior! I've always treated it as a joke, or it could have been something that the upper echelons in the past used to convince people to join our resistance. Who would have thought!"

Aloya looked at the man in the seat and asked mildly, "What do we do now? According to the prophecy, we need to become his subordinates! Luo Chen, what are your plans?"

The prophecy from so long ago had a huge influence on the resistance, however, there were also many who did not believe or care about it. Even if the leader then was capable and had foresight, their influence could not compare to those currently alive and wielding the authority.

Aloya, the genius programmer, was one of those that did not really care about the prophecy, she just listened to Luo Chen's orders. It was because he had saved her life before. Her talent was

discovered and nurtured by him. Without him, she might have become of those pitiful women struggling to survive in hell.

"In the past, I didn't believe in it either, however, the Gates of Hell from the legends have appeared. According to legend, the God Imprint has also shown itself. I cannot ignore these. Furthermore, our strength is truly too minuscule compared to those Flesh-Eaters and Vampires. A single Type 5 Divine Warrior could wipe our forces, while a single Ancestor could force us all to our demise."

"If it weren't for those monsters wanting food and toys for entertainment, our human race might have already been wiped out long ago. Our resistance is merely a little nuisance to them." Luo Chen sighed gently.

In this world, the humans were too vastly inferior to the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires. What was worse, there were humans who were willing to work for the monsters, becoming their teeth and claws.

Although Luo Chen had outstanding intelligence, his strength was truly lacking. He could not see a sliver of hope for the human race. He had continued to resist purely because he had a deep-set hatred for the Other races.

A strange light flashed in his eyes, as he began to get excited, "Since this is the case, why don't we just bet on it. If we succeed, our future generations will be able to live with their heads high. Even if we lose, it's just giving up this wretched life anyway. I choose to believe the prophecy and support him!"

Aloya replied indifferently, "Fine! I'll follow your lead! However, those at the main headquarters won't relinquish their authority so easily!"

Luo Chen chuckled lightly, "I know! If he really is the one from the prophecy, with our support, he should be able to reorganize our entire resistance. If he doesn't, then it just means the first leader with foresight in the past was just a huge liar."

He continued, "And if it truly is him, our Eastern Division is likelier to accept him."

Aloya nodded silently in agreement. In today's battle, Yue Zhong had turned the tides with his overwhelming strength. It would be easier for those who had seen him in the battle to accept him as a leader.

The medics of the underground base streamed out to find the injured soldiers and began to treat them.

Yue Zhong was also quickly evacuated towards the underground base.

Inside one of the medical treatment rooms, Aloya pushed Luo Chen in.

He waved his hands, dismissing the doctors inside.

Smiling, he asked Yue Zhong, "Can we speak?"

Yue Zhong was slightly wary as he looked at Luo Chen, however, he did not reject him, "Sure!"

Luo Chen fixed his gaze on Yue Zhong's tightly bandaged right arm, asking, "Your right arm! Can I take a look?"

When Yue Zhong heard that, his pupils constricted, and a powerful killing intent radiated from him. The God and Devil imprint on his right arm allowed him to absorb the life energy from those he killed and was an important item for him to communicate with those back on Earth. It was a secret that he wouldn't mind killing over.

Luo Chen could sense the killing intent, and he hurried to explain with a smile, "Yue Zhong, I've seen the imprint on your right arm. Other than me, many others have also seen it. It's called the God's Imprint. There's a legend among us resistance fighters from long ago, that after hundreds or even thousands of years, a person with the God's Imprint will appear, and he will be our leader, leading our human race in a victory against the Other races. Since you

have the imprint, you will become our leader in the future."

Hearing those words, Yue Zhong guessed a few things. First, there must have been someone like him in the past, possessing the God and Devil imprint. However, the person must have lost in combat, thus, the human race had fallen to this state. After the loss of the leader, the experts must have known a few things through the system, that was why it had passed down as a legend or prophecy.

Those who possessed the imprint were recognized as the strongest talents of the planet, just like Yue Zhong, and any of these characters had the right and strength to become a leader of a faction.

Furthermore, since Yue Zhong possesses this imprint as well as his Evolving Temple, he at least could resist the oppression of the Other races much better than the resistance fighters.

He mulled over for a while, before asking, "Just because of a legend, you're willing to declare me as your leader?"

Luo Chen chuckled bitterly, but kept his gaze fixed on Yue Zhong, "Yes! I'll come clean with you. Things aren't looking so well for the resistance. These few years, it has always been a pointless struggle. Just surviving is already hard. The number of humans is decreasing as well. As for the slavery and harm that the Other races have brought against us, we might be able to get something in return, but in order to overthrow all of that, I can only make a gamble on you. As long as you're willing to lead us against the Other races, the entire Eastern Division is willing to listen to your orders, and become a force for you to command."

Yue Zhong pondered for a longer time, before replying, "Ok! I promise you! I too, need your strength."

Since arriving at this planet, he had not yet gained a deep enough understanding. He needed the eyes and ears on the ground, and since the Eastern Division was the underground head here, and

that they were willing to submit to him, then he naturally would take them up on that offer.

With a wave of his hands, he took out 8 Evolving Liquids from his storage ring, handing them to Luo Chen, "These are Evolving Liquids, that could help humans become Evolvers. There are 8 of them here, treat it as a gift!"

Luo Chen received them with respect and thanked him, "Many thanks!"

"After consuming this, the user will run a fever for a day, and the next day, gain a powerful strength. If you don't believe me, you can get someone to try it first."

Luo Chen chuckled, directly consuming one of them, "No need! I trust you!"

Chapter 729: Exchange of Authority!

The moment the Evolving Liquid entered Luo Chen's body, a warm surge of energy spread throughout his body, causing his temperature to rise and he gasped in ragged breaths.

Aloya's face turned immediately, pulling out a small handgun and pointing it at Yue Zhong while screaming, "What did you do to him?!"

In Aloya's eyes, Luo Chen's importance far exceeded Yue Zhong. Even if Yue Zhong was the prophesied leader from the legends, she did not care one bit.

"Put down your gun! Aloya! I'll be fine! It's just a day of fever, right Leader?"

Luo Chen pressed Aloya's gun down as he gave Yue Zhong a trusting smile. He believed that the man in front of him would not be so stupid as to try and kill him at such a place.

The God's Imprint was something that Luo Chen, a true book fanatic, would research. To the ordinary soldiers, the Imprint might have been an ordinary tattoo for all they knew.

In truth, although it was a legend from long ago, it had been passed down for so long that many people had already begun to treat it as a beautiful dream. If Yue Zhong really wanted the support of the Eastern Division, he would not kill Luo Chen.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "Go back and rest well! You will gain strength!"

Luo Chen did not reject him, and replied, before turning away, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong watched Luo Chen leave, a few thoughts flashing by before he closed his eyes and focused on recovering. The consumption from the battle with Red Rock City was truly astounding.

Early the next morning, Luo Chen opened his eyes and discovered a powerful, latent strength coursing through his body.

With a thought, his originally crippled legs, for God knew how long, shuddered and began to move.

"Is this the strength of those experts with the God's Imprint in the past?! With such a miraculous Evolving Liquid, seems like my decision was right!!" Luo Chen looked at his legs with joy and excitement. His legs had been heavily injured in an accident many years ago, and with the low medical level of the resistance, they had not been able to heal him. And yet, a single Evolving Liquid from Yue Zhong had given him a new lease on life, causing him to rejoice.

Aloya rubbed her eyes and saw Luo Chen waking up. Her pale face was immediately covered with joy, "Luo Chen! You're awake! You can move!! This is great!! This is really great!!"

"Yes! I'm awake! I've also gained an incredible strength!!" Luo Chen laughed and raised his right hand, immediately causing the handgun by his bedside to soar towards his hands, revolving in the air.

When Aloya saw Luo Chen's demonstration, her eyes were filled with shock, "This is the power that only Divine Warriors can awaken! Have you become a Divine Warrior too? Incredible!"

"This is the power he promised me! It's strong! I should be a Type 1 Divine Warrior now." Luo Chen looked at the revolving gun in his hand, a smile on his face. He wasn't as happy about his own strength as compared to what Yue Zhong could bring to their race. With such an Evolving Liquid, their human race would gain an additional advantage.

Luo Chen then instructed, "Aloya, go gather everyone in the parade square!"

Aloya turned to leave, "Ok!"

Soon, the resistance fighters all came out from the various tunnels towards the central square, looking up at Luo Chen and Yue Zhong on stage.

Everyone's eyes were filled with expectation and trust when they looked at Luo Chen. Many of the soldiers from the Eastern Division trusted this exceptional leader with their lives.

"Ah! How is it that Luo Chen is standing?!"

"The leader can stand?! That's great!"

"..."

When they saw Luo Chen standing, everyone was surprised and began engaging in discussion. They knew clearly how near impossible it was to recover from his heavy injuries. Yet now, he was standing in front of them, it was truly a miracle.

Luo Chen swept his gaze across everyone, calling out, "Everyone, quieten down!"

When his words landed, everyone's discussion came to a halt, their gazes falling upon him again.

Luo Chen then spoke out with fervor, "Let me first introduce, this person beside me is called Yue Zhong. Yesterday, he had piloted an RH2 to take down 4 RH2s and even 2 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters. He alone managed to turn the tides around, saving many of our comrades. He is our hero, let us first give him a round of applause!!"

The countless gazes full upon Yue Zhong, and immediately, a roar of applause rang out. Many had seen for themselves how Yue Zhong had charged through the battlefield with such valor and they were all filled with gratitude.

Luo Chen then raised his hands, bringing the applause to a stop.

His voice rang out, "In fact, Yue Zhong is not an ordinary human being. He's the prophesied savior of our resistance... No! The

savior of our human race! He has the God's Imprint on him!! The mark of the leader of our humankind! From now on, I announce that our Eastern Division will submit to Yue Zhong, obeying his commands and orders, becoming his subordinates, fighting for the freedom of humanity!"

The moment his words landed, the entire Eastern Division was thrown into chaos.

"What? Is he the one from the prophecy of long ago? How is that possible?"

"I thought that legend was a joke, something ancient? How could it be real?"

"Submit to Yue Zhong? Then what about the headquarters of the resistance?"

"...."

When the soldiers of the Eastern Division heard that announcement, chatter immediately broke out. The prophecy from hundreds of years ago was thought to be a fantasy. Many had not thought that there would be someone who would save them, therefore, asking them to believe the words of a few dead men was too much.

However, there were some who immediately stared at Yue Zhong with an excited gaze, immediately becoming his followers.

After all, the resistance had been whittled away slowly but surely, and many had begun to lose hope for the future. They needed some form of hope. The savior was the beacon of that, becoming a pillar of support, trust, and hope.

When Lisa heard Luo Chen's words, something seemed to explode in her mind, as her gaze turned strange, "Is he the savior from the legends? If it's him, it's very likely!"

Luo Chen gazed down and barked in a low voice, "Quiet!!"

The members of the resistance immediately became quiet.

Luo Chen waved his hand and the handgun at his waist immediately flew to his hands, revolving in mid-air, "Everyone should know, I used to be crippled, and have been confined to a wheelchair all this time. Today, I can stand here, is all due to Leader Yue Zhong granting me my health and a new strength. I've become a Type 1 Divine Warrior!"

Seeing this, all the soldiers of the resistance sucked in a cold breath, their eyes filled with excitement. Divine Warriors were basically the terms for strong experts. There were over 2,000 warriors at the parade square, but only 8 of them were Divine Warriors. They were only Type 1 Divine Warriors as well. Everyone else hoped to become a Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong then waved his hands at Luo Chen.

With that, Luo Chen retreated respectfully behind Yue Zhong, exhibiting his respect and submission.

Yue Zhong's voice then rang out, "I'm Yue Zhong! If my conjecture is right, I'm the savior mentioned in your legends. My enemies are those Flesh-Eaters and Vampires. They are your enemies as well. As long as you're willing to listen to my commands, I'm willing to lead you all to defeat them, and gain victory. Those who are willing to fight by my side, stay, and as long as you put in an effort to obtain merits, I can grant you strength, becoming powerful Divine Warriors! Those who aren't willing, you may leave. I won't stop you! Make your choice now!"

"Leader Yue Zhong!! Grant me strength!!"

"I'm willing to obey you, and fight by your side!!"

"Leader Yue Zhong, let us fight the monsters together!!"

"..."

The moment his words came out, the entire parade square erupted in wild cheers. Almost everyone was screaming his name,

expressing their loyalty with fervor.

Some of them did so because of Luo Chen's orders, some did so because they believed in the prophecy. Some did so in order to gain the strength to become a Divine Warrior, and some had been swept up in the commotion. Some others had nowhere else to go, thus they chose to stay.

However, amidst the cheers and excitement, 30 resistance soldiers turned around quietly to leave. They did not believe that Yue Zhong was the savior, and only trusted in the upper echelons of the resistance army.

Luo Chen watched them leave and his eyes flashed with a dark look. He looked towards another corner, and 2 men nodded to express their understanding before they disappeared.

The 30-odd men had not left long when they were dragged into the dark to be silenced forever. Although Yue Zhong did not wish to kill, Luo Chen was not willing to let these people go.

After this meeting, the entire Eastern Division was handed over to Yue Zhong, with Kong Cui Yun and the rest summoned by Yue Zhong into the base. The entire force then quickly left to relocate to another base.

In this world where there were no satellites, the response of Red Rock City was much slower. After Yue Zhong and his people had left, another larger force deployed by Red Rock City came across where the base used to be, sweeping around but not finding anything.

Chapter 730: Vast Difference in Strength!

Out at a desolate area without any signs of life, a few humans were lugging loads of more than 20kg, running around while gasping for breath.

Yue Zhong was decked in military wear, watching them quietly. Among them, there was Xiao Lan, Fuhrana, even the little loli Dina.

Yue Zhong had granted them the Evolving Liquid, allowing them to become Evolvers, before making them undergo high-intensity special forces training.

Even if they had the strength, without proper training, they would not be able to exhibit their true prowess.

Having seen the cruelty of this world, even Kong Cui Yun who used to have an air of a spoiled miss began to push herself through the rigorous regime.

Even the half-Mutant loli Dina was no exception. She even pushed herself harder after every day's training. As a vagabond, she knew how precious the chance to obtain strength was. Since she had gained it, she would treasure it even more.

Yue Zhong eyed them while asking Luo Chen beside him, "I want to know all that the resistance currently knows."

"The resistance troops are scattered all over this planet. On this planet, we humans are the food, toys, and slaves of the monsters. The areas where the monsters are more vicious and cruel, the more resistance troops stationed there. Places where the violence is lesser, the lesser the number of resistance soldiers as well."

"However, from the big perspective, we separate ourselves according to directions. North, south, east and west. Our Eastern Division handles 40 cities, with about 40,000 people or so. The Southern Division is in charge of 30 cities, with about 50,000

people. The Western Division, 20 cities, and 20,000 people, while the Northern Division handles the most cities, 60, with about 100,000 people. That is to say the entire resistance numbers at around 200,000 or so. Other than our fighters, we have sympathizers within cities, and we're not too sure about the number of people from those groups. In fact, my faction is considered only part of the Eastern Division."

"The highest authority of the resistance is termed as the Human Liberation Business Resistance Council, or the Council for short. Each division would choose 12 representatives from their own sides. The person at the top is the president, and he is the current leader of the resistance army. The current president is called Gong Chang Tian. He's an amazing leader and was the previous leader of the Northern Division at the frontlines.

Yue Zhong thought deeply before continuing, "What about the Saint Clan?"

Luo Chen laughed bitterly, "The Saint Clan is control over perpetually all the cities on this planet. Other than the areas with high radiation and the barren wilderness, everywhere else is under their control. Based on estimation, there should be a total of 563 cities in their hands. The total human population within these cities is at 300 million, and these are just the human numbers. As for the Saint Clan, their numbers aren't that many, about 10 million.

Yue Zhong was speechless, comparing the resistance and the Saint Clan, the difference was not just 50 times. The enemy was also in control over cities and other resources. There was practically no chance in an outright face-off.

Just the 300 million people under the Saint Clan could easily crush the resistance already. There was no contest between both sides in terms of numbers.

After knowing the true might of his enemy, Yue Zhong could not

help but feel a dark shadow over his head.

Previously, during his struggle against the zombies, Yue Zhong's people only numbered slightly above 2 million.

If the Gates of Hell were to truly allow the Saint Clan to invade, the 300 million people under them would already cause Yue Zhong a huge headache, not to mention 10 million Saint Clan members.

With their strength, based on his estimation, 1 million Saint Clan members were enough to slaughter 300 million ordinary humans. Furthermore, China still had seas of zombies and Mutant Beasts and other strange races to contend with. If there was a war, the little bit of capital he had struggled to build up was not even worth shit.

He sighed lightly, "Thankfully, I chose to enter this world."

Had he chose to remain on earth to expand, while he might really expand within a year, no matter what extent he could grow, it was not enough to deal with this 2nd Stage. Now he knew how precious the chance to enter this world was.

If they didn't do anything, by the time the Saint Clan invaded, then all the powers and factions on Earth would succumb and crumble under the absolute might.

Yue Zhong mulled over for a while before asking, "How many Type 3 Divine Warriors are there within the resistance?"

Type 3 Divine Warriors were existences like Jack and Santana that could destroy an RH2 with their bare hands.

Luo Chen replied, "There are a total of 7 outstanding Type 3 Divine Warriors in the resistance. They're Snowstorm Sima Bing, Blazing Flames Wang Yan, Human-Tank Ken, Great Earth Bear TuoTuo Mu, Steel King Lance, Light Beast Jess, and finally, Overlord Gong Chang Tian. Our resistance only has Type 3 Divine Warriors, no one of Type 4 and above."

Yue Zhong asked, "Then how many Type 3 Divine Warriors are

there in the Saint Clan?"

"There are around 100,000 Saint Clan members who are at least at Type 3 Divine Warrior level. About 1,000 are rumored to be at Type 4, while Type 5 Divine Warriors are rarer, maybe about 30 at most. Those at the Type 5 level are usually from the Ancestor Clan. As for the legendary Type 6 Divine Warriors, according to legends, there might only be 3 or 2 from the initial Ancestor Clan members that were left behind during Era of Blight. As to the truth of these rumors, no one has tested or verified before."

"Normally, those who head out to suppress any rebellion or chaos would be the Type 3 Divine Warriors of the Saint Clan. The moment any Type 4 Divine Warriors were to make an appearance, the source of the chaos or commotion would be eliminated. Type 5 Divine Warriors are considered important characters and to them, our resistance fighters are just like ants, hence they would not bother unless they are in a bad mood. However, it's rare to see any Type 5 Divine Warriors making a move," Luo Chen spoke with a dark expression.

Yue Zhong was speechless for some time, as he finally understood why Luo Chen was so willing to hand over his authority.

Yue Zhong was considered a peak expert back on Earth, but among the Saint Clan, he was just an ordinary fighter. Any Type 4 Divine Warrior could easily crush him. If a Type 5 Divine Warrior were to act, he would be wiped out in barely an instant. The level of might on this planet was truly unfathomable.

Yue Zhong sunk into deep thought, "What's the situation on the food and water supplies for our forces?"

Out in the wilderness, the most terrifying killer was not the Saint Clan, but the lack of food and water.

The places fit for living had plenty of pools and water catchment places, whereas the regions outside of the cities were hard for survival, since most of those places were heavily irradiated, and

had no water or food sources.

Food and clean water was an important resource, and they were the main reason why the resistance could not expand.

There were sources of clean water within the cities that the Saint Clan resided in, they could even plant vegetation and that was how they controlled humans.

Luo Chen looked at the warriors undergoing training and spoke, "Our current supplies can last us for a month, while our water can last for about 20 days. The current conditions are under the assumption that these soldiers you're training up cannot use our rations or water."

Luo Chen was clear that through Yue Zhong's methods, he could raise a powerful force, but the warriors would require water and food to replenish their energy. Such squandering of resources was a nightmare to the resistance.

Many cities had resorted to the method of sealing the cities, preventing water and food from going to the resistance, easily cutting their lifeline off.

Yue Zhong asked curiously, "How did you guys get water and food from the cities previously?"

Luo Chen laughed in a self-deprecating manner, "Out in the wilderness, you can discover ores, hunt the Savages, trade slaves, gain the blood, flesh, and nuclei of Mutant Beasts, or high-level Mutants. There are also rare and precious Mutant Plants. All these are resources that cities need, as long as the cities do not undergo a lockdown, we can trade these items for Eagle Yuan, exchanging for food and water. Other than that, we can disguise ourselves as mercenaries to accept missions to earn Eagle Yuan. As resistance fighters, we still have to rely upon and work for those monsters, even I find it ironic and ridiculous."

Yue Zhong thought deep. Due to the lack of resources, these

resistances forces actually had to resort to working for the Saint Clan. This was hard to believe. However, he also understood that their circumstances really were dire.

Yue Zhong asked, "Are there any Mutant Beasts hordes nearby?"

Luo Chen replied, "The Ancient Ruins!"

He continued, "It is an extremely famous place nearby, and it marks the line between the light radiation and heavy radiation zones. There, there are plenty of Mutant vegetation, Mutant Beasts, Irradiated Demons, Savages and even Mutants. The entire region is extremely dangerous, and there are a few terrifying Mutant Beasts that could even kill a Type 4 Divine Warrior. In the past, there was a story going around that a Type 4 Divine Warrior went in and didn't come out. Around the region, there are a few handful of human settlements, forming small mercenary companies. They would head in to hunt and complete Saint Clan missions for money. It is an extremely chaotic place, where robbery and murder happen all the time. All the people there are underground characters and only money talks. We would usually head there to hunt Mutant Beasts."

As Yue Zhong listened, he made his decision, "Alright! We shall head there first!"

Chapter 731: The Ancient Ruins!

Black Blood Town was a small town that was situated right in front of the Ancient Ruins.

The Ancient Ruins actually covered a wide, vast area, with plenty of Mutant Plants, Mutant Beasts and other life forms that lived within. Terrifying biological creatures could be encountered when inside, and even a Type 4 Divine Warrior could fall if not careful.

However, there were plenty of resources that could be found within, even clean water, other legacies left behind prior to the apocalypse, hence, many were willing to risk their lives to explore the ruins.

Black Blood Town was a sort of a stop that humans had established right outside of the ruins. The town came about because there were 5 wells in the town, each of them containing water of radiation level 2. Because of the water sources, this Black Blood Town quickly flourished.

Yue Zhong looked at the town that was covered with lush greenery and his eyes flashed with a strange glint, "This is Black Blood Town?"

The town was entirely different from what he expected, full of vibrant life and wild vegetation. Yue Zhong could see many women and kids digging for wild vegetables. Along the way, all he had seen besides desolate barren, was desolate barren.

Yue Zhong looked at the town and asked Luo Chen, "Since there is water here, why didn't the Saint Clan lay claim to this location?"

Luo Chen explained, "Although Black Blood Town has water, it is too close to the Ancient Ruins. In the past, there were many Mutant armies that raided here, causing over 100 members of the Saint Clan to perish here. Furthermore, the water in this small town cannot sustain tens of thousands of lives, that's why a city

can't be built here. Hence, the Saint Clan had just ignored this location. However, 40% of the profits here must be handed over to Red Rock City."

Yue Zhong asked, "How many people can the water sources support?"

Luo Chen had obviously done his research before, and replied, "At most 2,000!"

Had the Eastern Division been forced into a dire situation, Luo Chen had considered forcefully claiming Black Blood Town and its water source. However, he knew that if he did that, sooner or later, Red Rock City's forces would come, and he would be helpless again.

Furthermore, the terrain was too open around Black Blood Town, should the armored forces of Red Rock City arrive, then their resistance would be out in the open for slaughter.

Yue Zhong nodded lightly and continued towards Black Blood Town.

The moment their group entered the town, a number of gazes fell upon them, including those from murderers, rapists, perverts, mercenaries, thieves. None of them were filled with good intentions.

However, the moment they saw the rifles and firearms on the members of Yue Zhong's group, and the strong killing intent emitting from every single one of them, every single gaze quickly retracted, not daring to linger on.

In this town where laws and codes of conduct were absent, fights and killings could happen in the blink of an eye. Those outlaws were not willing to antagonize a troop that was well-equipped and had such an obvious scent of blood and killing on them.

Yue Zhong kicked the door of a bar wide open, as a strong smell of perspiration and stench wafted out, together with the sounds of

loud rock music.

Inside the bar, there were dozens of mercenaries and prostitutes, whose gazes immediately swiveled over.

A big, burly white man roared out and stood up, "Damn it! Which bastard wants to cause trouble!!"

In an instant, 10 assault rifles were pointed at the man, as 10 resistance soldiers fixed their cold glares on him. As long as Yue Zhong gave the order, they would open fire, turning the guy into a sieve.

The white man looked at the guns and his back broke out in cold sweat, raising his hands, not daring to move.

Black Blood Town was a chaotic place, even if this white mercenary was killed, no one would step out for him, not even his comrades in arms could fight against a faction that has these many firearms.

Yue Zhong and Luo Chen walked in like lords under the protection of the resistance soldiers, coming to the counter.

Luo Chen came to the bartender and smiled as he asked, "Mike! I want information on the Mutant Beasts that are at B-Grade on the danger level."

The bartender replied with an impassive face, "10,000 Eagle Yuan!"

Luo Chen took out a chest and handed it over.

The bartender opened to take a look, before closing and bending below the counter to pull out a stack of documents to give Luo Chen.

Luo Chen then handed another envelope over to Mike, "Thanks! Other than that, I need a large amount of food and water."

Mike coldly replied, "Payment!"

Luo Chen chuckled, "That was the deposit when the goods arrive,

I will pay the rest."

Mike nodded coldly, "En!"

After achieving their objectives, Yue Zhong and Luo Chen turned around and left.

Mike watched them leave, his eyes flashing with a cold look. He waved his hands, and another bartender appeared to take over, while he left the back end of the bar.

Inside the deeper recesses of the bar, there was a lavish room. 2 men decked in exquisite and lavish clothes, their collars with 3 golden suns, sat on a sofa, enjoying wine.

Mike kneeled in front of the two, speaking respectfully, "Knight-sir, as you expected, those despicable resistance soldiers had come here! Your subject has handed them the information."

Knight looked at him with a condescending gaze, "Got it. You may go back. Do your job well, since you've contributed some merit, I'll bring you to the inner city soon!"

Mike immediately kowtowed in glee, before retreating out the room, "Thank you, sir!!"

Knight laughed coldly, "These humans are really stupid. Black Blood Town is so important, how could our Saint Clan not be in control of it? They actually ran here to buy information from us, what a joke."

Luther chomped down on an arm of a young girl while sipping red wine, his eyes flashing with a violent light, "Shall we wipe them out now?"

Knight responded coldly, "It's not time yet. They're not that many, even if we wipe them out now, the rest will continue to hide like rats. Furthermore, they're not so easy to deal with, otherwise, Jack and Santana wouldn't have died at their hands. Wait till they organize a troop to go hunt Mutant Beasts, then we will make our move."

Luther nodded silently, continuing to enjoy his bloody meal.

Not long after leaving Black Blood Town, Luo Chen suddenly spoke up, "Leader, I think that the bar is dodgy, that Mike should be someone from Red Rock City."

Yue Zhong asked without any major reaction, "Then how much of this intelligence do you think is true?"

Luo Chen replied, "Should be all of it! They need the bar, thus, they wouldn't lie."

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Since that's the case, let's just take a look!"

Luo Chen's mind jolted as he replied, "Yes!"

After that, Yue Zhong and his group continued towards the Ancient Ruins.

Beyond Black Blood Town, there were many rocks that were black and red in color, and there did not seem to be any signs of life.

However, the Ancient Ruins were different, the moment they stepped into the area, they could see all sorts of grass and vegetation growing everywhere, with some strange Mutant plants within.

The Ancient Ruins might be called that, but in fact, it was the largest modern city on this planet, and one could see countless modern structures and architectures.

However, the state of disrepair and dilapidation allowed strange Mutant plants and life to flourish, giving it a strange yet mystical feel.

Amidst the ruins and structures, there were many items that surpassed the current level of technology on this desolate planet. According to rumors, the powerful computers and systems of the RH2s were dug out from the ruins.

Not long after Yue Zhong brought his troops into the ruins, a few

green lights flashed past in some of the buildings, and a number of gazes filled with ill-intent fell upon them.

Everyone felt a chill in their hearts, as they gripped their weapons tightly.

"Watch out!" Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed.

The moment his voice rang out, the grass started to shake, as numerous decayed bodies that looked dried up like mummies with only skins dangling off their bones charged out towards the resistance group.

Luo Chen's face fell as he shouted out, "Living corpses! These are living corpses! Everyone be careful, don't let them scratch you, otherwise you'll be infected!!"

Living corpses were the remnants of the apocalypse that evolved from zombies. They used to be ordinary zombies, and after the radiation, they underwent mutation, not rotting away even after countless years. There was not much difference between them and zombies, the only thing was that, after radiation, their eyes mutated, and they could finally see, becoming stronger than ordinary zombies.

Seeing the zombies appear, the expressions of the soldiers changed as they raised their guns and fired at the living corpses.

The bullets riddled the bodies of the living corpses, some of their heads blasted apart, and their bodies slumped to the ground.

Yue Zhong had only brought along 11 elite soldiers, the firepower of the 11 could not withstand the onslaught of over hundreds of living corpses.

Just as the living corpses had surrounded the 11 warriors, Yue Zhong waved his hands, and his 2m-long Black Tooth Blade appeared. He charged forth, swinging his massive blade, and sliced the zombies up, preventing them from approaching the soldiers.

Within a single minute, the 200-over living dead had been

slaughtered cleanly, leaving only a bunch of broken bones and mangled flesh.

"Strong!!" The 11 soldiers watched the scene with awe and shock in their hearts.

Chapter 732: Type 4 Divine Warrior!

"Let's go!"

After dealing with over 200 living corpses, Yue Zhong led the 11 of them further into the Ancient Ruins.

He had just taken a few steps when suddenly, he felt a dangerous premonition and his face turned. With a thought and a wave of his hands, a Shield of Light appeared in mid-air, radiating brightly and blocking in front of him.

At almost the same time, from the grass, a number of shape blades of grass shot out, firing at Yue Zhong and his men.

Luo Chen and the rest turned pale, quickly dodging behind Yue Zhong.

The flurry of grass shot out towards the Shield of Light, and it was unable to hold out under the assault.

"Get down!" Yue Zhong hollered and quickly got on the ground.

Luo Chen and the rest also quickly followed suit.

Barely a second later, the shield broke apart in a burst of sparks, and the grass arrows continued to soar through the skies, disappearing into the distance.

Luo Chen looked at the grass and couldn't help but mutter, "Arrow Grass, I can't believe that it exists here, such a huge number at that! They're truly insidious!"

The Arrow Grass was also a Mutant Plant, the moment their roots were disturbed, they would fire out arrow-like seeds. These arrow-like seeds could pierce the body of humans or Mutant Beasts and absorb their blood and essence before germinating. It was a terrifying existence, as the seeds could even pierce through heavy armored vehicles.

When everyone saw that, their faces were incredibly ugly. Had

Yue Zhong not acted to save them, they would have all died.

Even Yue Zhong's expression was dark, he finally understood how difficult it was to navigate these ruins. They had to face danger after danger barely a distance in, if it were even deeper, he truly did not know how dangerous it was going to be.

Yue Zhong was silent for a moment, before he told Luo Chen, "Luo Chen, bring the men back and wait for further orders."

Luo Chen's eyes flashed before he replied solemnly, "Yes! Leader!"

Luo Chen was clear that he and the other 10 warriors were not only unable to assist Yue Zhong, but they would likely be burdens when they head further into the dangerous Ruins. Retreating was the best option for them.

Yue Zhong watched them leave and sighed in his heart. Luo Chen was knowledgeable, with him around, he would feel a whole lot more relaxed while navigating these ruins. However, Luo Chen was still not strong enough and might die anytime. He could not afford to be distracted in order to protect him.

After readjusting his composure, Yue Zhong continued deeper towards the ruins.

The moment Luo Chen and the rest left, Yue Zhong felt a lot more eased. With a flash of his body, he quickly darted through the ruins, easily killing 4 groups of low-level Mutant Beasts, dodging the assault of the living corpses.

"What is that?" Yue Zhong was traveling within the ruins when he suddenly heard a roar of motors and the loud whirring of propellers. He looked up, only to discover 48 assault helicopters and 100 large air carriers flying for the deeper parts of the ruins.

Yue Zhong watched the incredible fleet and he felt shocked, quickly following one particular fleet of 12 helicopters, "These are the Saint Clan people! Why are they here? They actually activated

such a huge fleet! Seems like I need to follow them!"

Only the Saint Clan could possibly deploy 48 assault helicopters and 100 large aircraft carriers. The resistance could barely even pull out 30 carriers.

He quickly activated his Second Order Stealth, his entire being blending in with the surroundings, not emitting any biosignatures. Even an RH2 would not be able to detect him now.

Among the fleet, there was a heavy-duty helicopter that was even larger than the Thunder Fighters back on Earth, just that it didn't have any weapons.

Inside, the decoration was extremely beautiful, looking like a 5-star hotel. On 2 sofas, there were 4 men seated, and they each had 4 suns on their collars. These were the insignia representing their status as Type 4 Divine Warriors.

Even among the Saint Clan, Type 4 Divine Warriors were rare existences. Other than the main base, it was rare for them to appear in other places. After all, throughout the entire planet, only 2,000 of them existed.

One of them was incredibly good-looking, with blue eyes and jade eyes, his aura elegant and charismatic. He sighed lightly and used his hands to caress the faces of 2 extremely beautiful girls by his side, "Who would have thought, that thing actually landed in the Type 4 Mutant chief's hands. Every time I think about those ugly freaks, my appetite suffers."

The 2 beautiful young girls were looking at the handsome man with a look of adoration and fascination, as though they would die for him without hesitation if he were to ask them to.

Another man, whose skin was black, was holding a knife as he sliced up the human eyeball on his plate, while he laughed lightly, "Antonio, are you afraid? The Type 4 Mutant chief, isn't someone easy to deal with. Dyni had died in that freak's hands. Otherwise,

the higher-ups wouldn't have sent the 4 of us to deal with him."

"Just somewhat slightly! But I'm unwilling to die at this god-forsaken place. I still want to live on and taste the fresh blood of beautiful virgins everywhere. Manshid, before I've tasted the blood of at least 10 million different girls, I will not die!"

He then grabbed the neck of one of the beautiful teens in an incredibly elegant fashion, before revealing his sharp canines that punctured into the neck of the girl, as he started to suck with huge gulps.

The girl struggled with pain at first, before her eyes glazed over, and her face flushed red. Her body started to twitch as she moaned out in an alluring manner, twisting and panting as though she was having an orgasm.

After a while, Antonio then released his grip on the girl's neck, causing her to drop to the floor like a corpse. Her originally flushed face was now devoid of any color, and her breathing quickly stopped. At the time of death, her face was still wearing an expression of ecstasy.

Antonio pulled out a napkin to wipe his mouth as he looked at the corpse and laughed, "Delicious! This is the blood of a high-quality virgin! Truly delicious. I'm delighted to have tasted such fresh blood!! Thank you!!"

Another man who had black hair and yellow skin had a vicious look as he tore into the head of a resistance fighter on his plate, causing the skull to burst open, as red and white matter splattered all over his hands. The man just licked his fingers with an insatiable expression, while grunting out in excitement and joy.

The last person was a 12-year-old loli with a head of blond hair, a petite frame, but an impressive C-cup bust. She was about 1.4m, her features exquisite, her skin fair, and her eyes a strange silver color. She looked at the 3 other Type 4 Divine Warriors with an expression of disgust as she spat, "A bunch of sick perverts!"

Antonio looked at the black-hair, yellow-skin man and said, "George, Asya is scolding you, watch your manners!"

George retorted, "Bullshit! Manshid, those eyeballs are disgusting, quickly consume them, stop cutting them up, so gross!"

Manshid looked at the eyes of the beautiful but dead girl, "Nonsense! Antonio, since you like the blood of beautiful girls, can't you just draw their blood? You can taste them for a longer period of time like that, why must you suck them dry of their blood? What a pity, her eyes have no spirit anymore."

Antonio had a drunk expression, "Only fresh blood carry the taste of life, that my soul can feel liberated, and the joy that consumes me! That is the true delicacy of life! Drawing blood and sucking the blood of ordinary virgins, is not enough to satiate my soul!"

Asya frowned and barked coldly, "Perverts! Shut the hell up!"

The moment she barked, the rest quickly kept quiet.

Each of the 3 Type 4 Divine Warriors were powerful existences that could do as they like everywhere they went. They would not even view other Type 4 Divine Warriors as equals, and often, they would come to blows with their fellow Type 4 Divine Warriors. However, being scolded by the loli with huge breasts, they could not help but shiver and retracted their unbridled behavior a little. It was apparent that they were somewhat apprehensive and fearful of her.

Asya looked down and ordered with a cold look, "We have reached our destination, prepare to invade!"

The huge fleet was now over an area where huge buildings over dozens of meters tall were scattered around.

With her order, under the protection of the assault helicopters, the large transport carriers began to descend.

At the same time, eyes filled with hatred and enmity shone in the dark, as the figures walked out from the shadows, revealing the

inhabitants of the area. Mutants began to pour out from every nook and cranny of the buildings, charging towards the carriers.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The 48 assault helicopters responsible for escort began to open fire, their powerful firearms tearing the Mutants to shreds.

A number of fireballs, bone spikes, corroding poison, huge stones and all sorts of other abilities were cast and flung towards the sky. Some of the attacks managed to land on the powerful assault helicopters but were deflected by the tough armor, not causing any damage.

At this time, an entire half-building shot out like a shooting star from below, slamming towards one of the heavy assault helicopters.

Chapter 733: Battle between the Saint Clan and Mutants!

Hong!

As the half-building slammed into the assault helicopter, it immediately got destroyed, exploding in a huge ball of fire that descended towards the ground.

A Mutant appeared below, his gaze fixed on the aircraft above, emitting a powerful and oppressive feeling. He was 3m-tall, a 0.5m horn growing on his head. His entire body seemed to be wrapped in gold armor, his expression savage. He had a tail, that was long and sharp, also covered with a layer of golden metal. His limbs were powerful and thick, with sharp claws for hands and sharp nails on his toes that gripped the earth tightly.

Many other Type 3 Mutants began to crawl out and surround the Type 4 Mutant, roaring towards the skies with a bestial and killing instinct.

The difference between Mutants and humans were that they were extremely ugly, violent, and had a clear hierarchy, submitting only to the strongest. Without the control of a powerful Mutant, they would go on an unstoppable rampage everywhere, only ceasing once they were wiped out by other existences.

Yue Zhong eyed the numerous Type 3 Mutants around the single Type 4 Mutant, his heart filled shock, "Powerful! Is that the Type 4 Mutant? Truly on another level!"

It was the first time Yue Zhong saw somebody actually grabbing an entire building with such ease and launching it like a cannonball.

The strongest person in his team was Yin Shuang that loli with a perverse strength, but comparing the two, there was simply too

vast a difference.

The moment that helicopter crashed, the rest quickly adjusted their target, as countless missiles and cannons shot towards the Type 4 Mutant and the area it was at.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The powerful explosions rocked the entire region, as many Mutants were instantly pulverized or crushed by the sheer firepower.

Before the dust even settled, various figures shot towards where the heavy carrier was.

A number of large rocks and boulders flew towards the heavy carriers, most missing their targets. However, 2 managed to slam into the body of one carrier, causing it to tilt before it lost control and began to descend from the sky, exploding in a ball of flames.

However, under the cover of the assault helicopters, many others managed to land properly.

The region was crawling with Mutants, so they quickly swarmed over like ants towards those carriers that landed.

Many had just landed, when the Mutants arrived and quickly began to employ all sorts of means to damage the carriers.

The moment the heavy carriers opened their doors, many RH2s charged out with loud whirs, their electronic eyes flashing, as cannons appeared out of their frames, and with the help of the targeting system of the A.I, they unleashed carnage all around them.

In a blink of an eye, there was a burst of blood and flesh all around the heavy carriers, as over hundreds and thousands of the Mutants were blasted into bits and pieces of flesh and blood. The mass slaughter ability of the RH2s was even higher than that of Type 3 Divine Warriors.

However, among the Mutants, there were numerous Type 3 Mutants as well, and they charged towards the RH2 with savage expressions.

However, as the Type 3 Mutants fought against the RH2s, it was incredibly tough. They did not know where the weak points were, and could only rely on brute strength to try and damage the RH2s.

One particular Type 3 which had blades sticking out of its limbs managed to charge through the area of the fire, appearing in front of an RH2. It was like a ghost that darted beneath its frame and used its sharp blades to tear through the armor, cutting through countless of alloy fibers.

In half a minute, that particular Type 3 Mutant had managed to wreck the right leg of the RH2 completely, causing it to fall on its side.

However, even as it landed, the cannons continued to fire out rapidly, killing many other Mutants.

The Type 3 Mutant had no choice but to continue darting about, destroying every single one of the cannons.

Following that, a huge swarm of Mutants began to crawl all over the RH2, covering it entirely.

The next instant, with a loud roar, the RH2 self-destructed, causing the area around it to be enveloped in the resulting explosion, directly reaping the lives of the Mutants around it, including the Type 3 Mutant.

These RH2s might not be particularly effective against the Saint Clan's Type 3 Divine Warriors, but against these brutish Mutants, they were able to exhibit their powerful combat might, cleaving lives every second.

However, within the ruins, the Mutants were seemingly endless in numbers, no matter how many were killed, it seemed that more would crawl out from other corners to replenish the numbers lost

in battle.

Even so, with the constant fire from the RH2s as well as more RH2s descending from the carriers, the powerful weapons of war suppressed the Mutants totally.

Under that fearsome fire, many Type 3 Mutants that could deal with the RH2s were forced back or killed.

A single Rh2 might not be able to contend against a Type 3 Mutant, but 10 of them with a net of fire could cause the Type 3 Mutants a problem. Furthermore, the Saint Clan had deployed more than 300 RH2s over here, and there were already 50 on the ground.

Once all these weapons of war were fully deployed, then the Mutants would lose their advantage of numbers, regardless of how many could crawl out, they would be wiped out under the terrifying growing net of fire.

"What a powerful might!!" Yue Zhong observed the numerous RH2s and he was shocked.

If such a formation was to appear on earth, nobody could defend against such an attack from the Saint Clan. This was 300 RH2s, no mechanized infantry battalion on Earth could possibly withstand the assault from 300 RH2s unless they used nuclear weapons! Furthermore, this was just one small part of the Saint Clan's strength.

At this time, another building flew from afar once again, slamming into one of the heavy carriers, causing 3 of the RH2s inside to be destroyed.

Within the ruins, together with countless rumblings, many buildings began to be plucked from their foundations and launched towards the heavy carrier.

As the buildings slammed into the heavy carrier, it was slammed repeatedly, turning into a pile of metal rubble that exploded.

Within the luxurious carrier up above, Asya watched the events below with a cold look, eyeing the ferocious Type 4 Mutant and ordered, "Wipe that beast out!"

Antonio carried the beautiful girl kneeling by his side and placed her to one side, laughing lightly, "Got it! Let's go, guys!"

"GO!"

George, Manshid, Antonio and Asya directly charged out the luxurious carrier and leaped down.

The 4 figures shot down from over hundreds of meters in the sky like meteors, landing on the ground with a huge shockwave, as the ground split apart in all directions underneath their feet.

Antonio saw the buildings being launched rapidly by the ferocious Type 4 Mutant chief, and chuckled, "Whoever kills it first, gets its horn, how's that?"

Manshid stuck its tongue out and licked with a cruel smile, "Ok! That guy's horn is mine!"

George laughed and with a tap of his foot, he had already charged towards the location with the speed of sound.

A number of Type 3 Mutants began to snarl and roar as they leaped towards George.

With a flash of a shadow, holes appeared in all of their heads, and the horns had all disappeared as their corpses slumped to the grounds.

"What terrifying fellows!! Is this the strength of a Type 4 or Type 5 Divine Warrior?"

Yue Zhong hid in the dark and watched the Type 3 Mutants being slaughtered and their horns ripped out and could not help but shiver from the fear.

Every single one of the Type 3 Mutants was slightly stronger than Yue Zhong, however, facing George, they could not even withstand

a single blow, and their horns had been ripped out and killed. If it were Yue Zhong, he would at most last for 1 second or 2.

With such a character like George, just him alone could easily vanquish the entire 3rd Eastern Division under Luo Chen and now Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong finally understood the difference between the human race and Saint Clan.

Among the entire resistance, there was not a single Type 4 Divine Warrior. Such an organization was truly like ants to the Saint Clan. As long as they got serious, they could easily wipe them out.

Because of this cruel reality, many of the humans lowered their heads and chose to be the dogs, toys, and food of the Saint Clan, because there was simply no hope of resisting.

"Such strength should be from a Type 4 or Type 5 Divine Warrior. Fucking bastard, just a Type 4 or 5 Divine Warrior is already so strong. A Type 6 Divine Warrior could just wipe out all the humans." Yue Zhong fixed his gaze on the Type 3 Mutants being slaughtered by George and cursed in his heart. This was the first time he felt such despair.

Antonio, Manshid and Asya charged towards the Type 4 Mutant chief in flashes of light. Along the way, any Type 3 Mutants that got in their way were easily killed without a fight.

In just a few breaths of time, the 4 of them appeared in front of the Type 4 Mutant chief, and both sides began engaging in a terrifying clash.

Chapter 734: Mysterious Traction Force!

The Type 4 Mutant chief was incredibly strong, grabbing a building as though it was a pick and waving it at the 3 Type 4 Divine Warriors from the Saint Clan.

Asya observed coldly from the side, keeping an eye on the entire battlefield to prevent any unexpected accidents.

Feeling the cold gaze, Yue Zhong did not dare pull out his Electromagnetic Gun to try and snipe the enemy. The moment he revealed the slightest killing intent, he would not live past a minute.

"There's no chance!" Yue Zhong continued to observe the situation from deep in the jungle. He could see how the Saint Clan was relying on the RH2s to suppress the army of Mutant.

The 4 Type 4 Divine Warriors were also controlling the Type 4 Mutant chief, and it seemed that the rest of the Mutants were at a disadvantage, even when they had the numbers.

Right at this time, Yue Zhong's God and Devil Imprint became hot, as a message came through the imprint. His right hand was suddenly immobilized, as though something was grabbing on to it.

"Is there something here?"

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened, and he moved towards the direction that his hand seemed to be tugged towards.

As he followed the path, he discovered the direction he was heading to seemed to be the place where the Mutants were living. He could see many Mutants swarming out of the buildings, heading towards the battlefield.

Yue Zhong looked at the huge buildings and frowned, "Is the thing summoning me located within here?"

The strange suction seemed to be pulling Yue Zhong towards one

of the buildings, and countless Mutants were constantly pouring out, preventing him from advancing smoothly.

He was confident of killing over a hundred Mutants with a single blow of his, but if 3 Type 3 Mutants were to launch an attack on him, he would not be able to dodge.

Furthermore, the number of Type 3 Mutants that came out from the building was not little. If he was not careful, he could easily be torn apart.

At the same time, the moment he came to the building, he could sense an indescribable danger, as though there was a terrifying beast hidden within this building.

Yue Zhong trusted his Danger Perception strongly, he quickly suppressed the urge to enter the building recklessly, and laid quietly on the ground, not moving at all.

Soon, the Type 4 Mutant chief retreated towards this building, covered in blood.

"Haha! Lowly beast, go die!!" George's eyes flashed with a glint as he charged right in front of the Type 4 Mutant chief, and slashed out at his head.

The Type 4 Mutant chief twisted his body, dodging the blow. Although it looked as though he had dodged it, however, his right shoulder suddenly split open, with a large amount of flesh and blood splattering. Even Yue Zhong could not catch what had happened.

The Type 4 Mutant chief grabbed a huge metal bat with a glint in his eyes and smashed it towards George with a ferocious look.

Antonio pointed at the steel bat, and it was forced to one side, brushing past George's body.

Manshid had a sharp bone blade in his hand, taking the chance to strike at the Type 4 Mutant chief with lightning speed. The strike managed to carve out a deep scar on the body of the chief, causing

more blood to flow.

In just a few breaths, the Type 4 Mutant chief had more injuries on his body, it was just that they could heal at a speed visible to the naked eye.

The 3 Saint Clan experts launched coordinated attacks on the Type 4 Mutant chief, causing more injuries, yet there was not a single injury on them.

Although the Type 4 Mutant Chief was strong, if things continued on, he would definitely die.

Right at this time, a hundred Type 3 Mutants appeared from the building suddenly, with sharp bone spikes, sharp ice picks, flaming arrows and all sorts of other attacks that launched at the battlefield.

The blond, big-boobed loli Asya snorted coldly and reached out with her hand, as a powerful psychic barrier appeared in front of them.

All the attacks that were cast and thrown by the 100 Type 3 Mutants were blocked by a single move from Asya.

"Strong!" Yue Zhong saw the strength of the Psychic Barrier cast by Asya and was filled with shock.

That assault by those 100 Type 3 Mutants could vanquish Yue Zhong's Shield of Light in a second.

Just as Asya's attention was focused on those 100 Type 3 Mutants, 2 shadows suddenly burst out from the ground, leaping towards the four.

One of them was an incredibly sexy and beautiful female Mutant, with a long horn on her forehead, her head full of red hair. Her eyes were blood-red, and her hands were sharp like blades, her own tail as large as a greatsword as well. She appeared right in front of George and slashed at his heart.

The red-haired Type 4 Mutant was incredibly fast, hitting 1.5 Mach the moment she appeared. Even George was unable to dodge, and could only bring up his hands to block.

The claws of the Type 4 Mutant beauty slashed across George's arms, tearing them off, causing blood to splatter.

The other Type 4 Mutant was a 2m-tall figure that did not seem that different from a normal person. However, on his back, were many boils and growths that were disturbing and gross. His speed was fast as well, reaching 1.2 Mach. At the same time that the red-haired Type 4 Mutant slashed George's arms, this other Type 4 Mutant had appeared in front of George and sent a fist at his chest.

A terrifying force blasted out, shattering George's rib cage, as his entire chest caved in. His entire body was also sent flying into the distance.

'Damn beast!!' Just as the red-haired Type 4 Mutant prepared to give chase, Asya roared out in fury and shame, reaching out with her right hand to conjure an oppressive pressure on the 3 Type 4 Mutants, their bodies sinking.

The second that the 3 Type 4 Mutants were forced down slightly, George spat out a breath of air, sending himself flying further away.

Asya's psychic ability was incredibly powerful, instantly suppressing the Type 3 Mutants with just a single thought. However, it was not as effective against the Type 4 Mutants.

The bodies of the 3 Type 4 Mutants just sank slightly, and they began to coordinate and joined hands against Manshid, the weakest out of the 4.

Other than them, the 100 Type 3 Mutants had also launched their attacks.

Asya waved her hands, causing her powerful Psychic Barrier to appear once again, blocking the attacks as she barked, "Retreat!!"

3 Type 4 Mutants against 3 Type 4 Divine Warriors were not very different in combat strength, in fact, the 3 Type 4 Divine Warriors possessed a little advantage because the Type 4 Mutant chief was heavily injured.

However, with the addition of a 100 Type 3 Mutants, the situation was different. The Type 3 Mutants possessed the ability to threaten the Type 4 Divine Warriors. Although a Type 4 Divine Warrior could crush a Type 3 Mutant in a second, it was not that the Type 3 Mutants were entirely useless against the Type 4 Divine Warriors.

If they continued to fight on in their territory, Asya and the rest would only suffer a defeat and even die.

The moment Asya gave the order, Antonio and Manshid quickly retreated from engaging the 3 Type 4 Mutants, fleeing from the battlefield.

The Type 4 Mutant chief, the other 2 Type 4 Mutants and the hundreds of Type 3 Mutants immediately gave chase.

Even more Type 3 Mutants poured out from the base, surging forth like a wave, chasing after the 4 Type 4 Divine Warriors.

The total number that surged out of the base was over 2,000, against such a horde, even the Type 4 Divine Warriors would be torn apart.

With just these 2,000 Type 3 Mutants, if they were to appear on Earth, they could easily wipe the Central Plains Army of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong watched this horrific scene, his emotions and thoughts in turmoil as he kept himself laying low, not daring to release the slightest sign or aura of his.

With the help of the Second Order Stealth, nothing about Yue Zhong was leaked, and he managed to evade the senses of the Type 3 Mutants.

Once they were all out of the base, Yue Zhong quickly darted forward using the dark corners, entering the base noiselessly.

He did not dare to enter from the main entrance, instead, routing around the building. He then stretched out his hand and fired a spider silk to the 5th level.

As the silk retracted, Yue Zhong was pulled up towards the 4th level, where the windows were all smashed. Sweeping the room with a gaze, discovering nothing, he entered the room carefully.

The entire room was damaged and dilapidated, with a thick layer of dust. It was obvious that even the Mutants seldom came here.

After entering the room, Yue Zhong's God and Devil Imprint flared in temperature, as the mysterious force tugged on him again, dragging him towards a direction.

He allowed himself to be tugged, moving forwards.

Under the guidance of the strange force, Yue Zhong found himself going downwards towards the 2nd level of the building. He looked down, and saw a deep, dark tunnel with no end in sight, with 8 ordinary Mutants protecting the entrance.

Chapter 735: Underground Hall!

Yue Zhong got down near the edge of the staircase, quietly observing the tunnel and waited for 5 seconds. Within these 5 seconds, no other Mutants had leaped out from the hole.

He took a deep breath, his eyes flashing with a strange glint as he operated his Shadow Steps. At the same time, he sent a small stone flying towards the entrance of the building.

The moment the clear sound rang out, the gazes of the 8 Mutants swiveled towards the source of the sound.

Taking advantage of that second of distraction, Yue Zhong flashed and he leaped through the tunnel in a single breath.

Within that tunnel that was covered entirely in moss, Yue Zhong could smell a foul, rotting stench.

After he leaped through, he quickly darted deeper with all his might, his speed like a specter.

Passing through the long tunnel, Yue Zhong came across a huge underground city.

The underground city was more vast than any that Yue Zhong had come across, with countless modern buildings that were about dozens of meters tall. Other than them, there were residential buildings, hotels, schools, hospitals and other buildings. However, they were all rundown.

There was not a single source of light within, if it weren't for Yue Zhong's Night Vision ability, he might not be able to see anything.

Yue Zhong had just appeared in the underground city when he saw dozens of Mutants gathered together, led by a Type 3 Mutant with a horn as they came towards his direction.

He quickly shot towards a building by the side.

At this time, a Type 3 Mutant came out from the building,

appearing in front of Yue Zhong without warning.

Yue Zhong was already poised for combat, the moment the Type 3 Mutant appeared, the Flame Blade in his hands slashed towards the body of the Type 3 Mutant, instantly slicing him in half, fresh blood spraying everywhere.

Unfortunately, the Type 3 Mutant was pretty resilient, even after being sliced in half, it didn't die immediately, and used its upper half to let out a wretched shriek.

"Damn it!!" Yue Zhong quickly slashed the head in two, before grabbing the horn.

With the death of the Type 3 Mutant, the Life Energy was absorbed through the imprint, enhancing Yue Zhong.

"Congratulations, you have gained +10 in Endurance."

A warmth surged through his body, as the notification resounded in his mind.

Yue Zhong took a deep breath, activating his Shadow Steps again, pushing his speed to the maximum, and quickly charged towards the direction with the imprint was guiding him.

The scream of the Type 3 Mutant had attracted attention, as countless Mutants swarmed out like ants towards this direction.

Yue Zhong had just gotten to 300 meters when there was the sound of glass shattering, and dozens of Mutants leaped out, pouncing at him.

His eyes flashed, and he pulled out his 2m-long Black Tooth Blade, swinging out once, immediately turning the dozens of Mutants into sliced up chunks of meat.

As he stopped, his advance was slowed, as more Mutants appeared. At the same time, there were 4 Type 3 Mutants making their way over.

Once they reached, Yue Zhong would surely die under their

hands.

At this critical juncture, a void appeared out of nowhere, as a bright flash appeared, turning into a bone carapace around Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong fired out 2 bone spikes from his feet, propelling him towards a building over 40m-tall.

When he leaped up, he quickly retracted the bone spikes.

One particular Type 3 Mutant saw this and quickly dashed towards Yue Zhong's original location, reaching out with his hands to grab onto the retracting bone spikes.

At the same time, Yue Zhong flipped his hands, the Electromagnetic Gun appearing. He aimed down and fired, sending a bright beam through the head of the Type 3 Mutant at his heels, blasting his head and brain apart.

Life energy streamed through the Imprint, entering Yue Zhong's body again. However, this time, there was no notification of any enhancements.

With the death of that Type 3 Mutant, the dozens of Type 3 Mutants around quickly converged on this location. 3 of the Type 3 Mutants closest to Yue Zhong quickly leaped onto the building, climbing upwards swiftly.

This underground city was the base of these Mutants, although most of them had followed the Type 4 Mutants out to hunt the Saint Clan experts, there were still a number of powerful Type 3 Mutants that stayed behind.

Yue Zhong watched the Type 3 Mutants converging around him, his face impassive as he turned around and leaped towards another building.

Halfway in the air, his Dark Wind Wings appeared, blowing a huge gust of wind that sent him soaring in the sky at the speed of sound.

Below, the numerous Mutants gazed up and unleashed sharp, shrill shrieks at him helplessly.

A number of fireballs, bone spikes, ice picks and poison arrows all fired at him from below. However, most just brushed past his shadows.

Against flying bodies that could travel at the speed of sound, such attacks were seldom accurate. Furthermore, most of them were from the ordinary Mutants, which could not compare to Type 3 Mutants.

Just as he was soaring through the air, a number of sharp howls began to emit from below.

Dozens of Mutants with wings began to soar into the sky, chasing after Yue Zhong. Among these Mutants, such entities capable of flight were rare, but there were some. At the same time, only Mutants of Type 2 and above could use their wings to fly.

However, the fastest among them could barely reach the speed of sound, which meant they could not catch up with him, only eating the dirt.

"Is that it?"

Yue Zhong continued to fly towards the direction where the mysterious force was pulling him to. After flying for over a 100 kilometers, he finally saw a huge clearing, that had a huge research lab built on it.

His heart rejoicing, Yue Zhong shot downwards, landing beside the entrance.

The entrance had long been destroyed, and he quickly charged in.

Soon after, 6 of the winged Type 3 Mutants came to the entrance. They patrolled around it, but their faces carried traces of fear, not daring to get near.

Within the lab, there were many machines and transparent glass tubes, other than a few broken ones, the rest of the lab seemed undamaged. It was just due to the passage of time, that a layer of dust and rust had accumulated on these machines.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across the lab, suppressing the urge to search the lab as he continued to rush towards the direction which the imprint was tugging him towards.

Inside the lab, if he were to search carefully, he was sure to come across something useful. However, he wanted to obtain whatever was calling out to him and quickly get the hell out of here.

After passing through a few corridors, he finally came into a huge hall.

The moment he entered the hall, his face fell and he quickly retreated a few steps, his gaze fixed at one particular corner.

Inside that hall, there were all sorts of advanced machines and equipment, and at the center of those countless electronic instruments, there was a huge sphere of about 1m. 20 meters to the right of that strange machine, stood a 2m-tall Mutant with a huge, red horn on his forehead. He had a head of silver hair, his looks incredibly handsome, and he had a pair of blue eyes that seemed capable of stealing anyone's soul should they stare too long. His back had a pair of silver and gold wings, and a long, silver tail grew out of his back. He was standing inside a transparent glass tube, staring and smiling at Yue Zhong.

"Fuck!! This guy is strong!! Shit, there's such a dangerous person here, why didn't he go up?" Every single cell in Yue Zhong's body was screaming at him to get out. Just by looking at the Mutant, he could feel tremendous pressure, as though the other party could kill him with a glare. His back broke out in cold sweat, that threaten to drench his entire shirt.

Even if he were to face a Type 4 Mutant, Yue Zhong was confident he could at least withstand a single blow. However, his

Danger Perception was telling him that this other party was someone way above his level.

"Hello there, friend who possesses the God and Devil Imprint! My name is Radis! I'm pleased to meet you here! Don't be afraid, I was like you, over a hundred years ago, a human that had the Imprint! What's your name?" The Mutant laughed gently, reaching out with his right hand, as the layer of silver skin receded, revealing a God and Devil Imprint on his arm. However, it was extremely faded and bleak, as though it was just a mass of grey lines.

Yue Zhong saw that Radis had no intention to kill him, and relaxed as he let out a breath of relief, "Hey, I'm Yue Zhong."

Chapter 736: Type 5 Divine Warrior Radis!

Radis had a wistful look as he asked, "Yue Zhong, is it? Has the Gates of Hell reopened?"

Yue Zhong replied, "That's right! The Gates of Hell have reopened."

When Radis heard it, he sighed lightly, as a look of anguish flashed in his eyes, "Is that so? Seems like this planet is going to welcome another period of Silencing!"

Yue Zhong became curious as he asked, "Silencing? What does that mean?"

Radis had a desolate look as he replied, "This period of Silencing, refers to a period similar to an Ice Age. There will not be any sunlight, and the entire planet would be covered in ice. The temperature will plunge to less than 10 degrees, and most life forms would freeze to death. Such an atmosphere would last for 300 years, after which, the planet would revert to its original state."

When Yue Zhong heard this, he felt a chill. The state of this planet was already harsh beyond comparison, with radiation, insufficient sunlight, lack of food and water. If the temperature was to plunge and maintain that way for 300 years, 99% of all life forms on this planet was sure to perish.

Yue Zhong continued, "Why will this happen?"

Radis chuckled bitterly, "Because we failed the game, and have been coined as losers. Ever since the day we lost the game, our planet has been doomed to welcome this period of Silencing. The only reason why it has not happened yet is that our planet is used as your training grounds."

Radis sighed, "The moment the period occurs, most of the life forms will freeze to death. Even if the Type 4 Divine Warriors that

evolved from the zombies long ago aren't afraid of cold, because of everything else, they will still perish. The threat of death will push them to look for a new place to reside in, which means that the planet you're from would become their target. Fending on their invasion would be your victory. If you lose, then your planet will become like ours. Either Mutants or other forms of creatures. We humans, in the end, had become puppets for that God up there. Once we lose, we have no value."

Yue Zhong thought for a while, "Can the humans on this planet move to ours to live?"

Radis replied, "Sure! Any life forms can live on your planet."

Yue Zhong continued, "Was it you who summoned me? Mr. Radis?"

Radis laughed out loud and pointed to the sphere, "No! It was the Treasure of Hope that I used to own which summoned you, that's it! The Treasure of Hope of the past - Super Artificial Intelligence."

Yue Zhong's gaze fell on the sphere.

"Your world has most likely just been seriously damaged, and in terms of power, it cannot compare to ours."

When Yue Zhong heard this, he nodded silently. The human factions on Earth could not even compare with the Saint Clan at all. Just the little bit of power they demonstrated earlier was enough to wipe out all the elite troops of any factions on Earth.

"In order to compensate for the difference of both worlds, there's such a tool as the Treasure of Hope. With the God and Devil Imprint, you must be one of those that entered our world first. As long as you can survive a year here, and return to your world alive, you will also gain a Treasure of Hope."

"This treasure basically means it's the last hope of humankind. Every treasure is different, however, they all possess incredible powers. In the past, my treasure was this Super A.I. It could

control and activate countless electronic machines and equipment, with its own powerful judgment and analysis capabilities. For example, the RH2s that the intelligent evolved zombie beings are using contains a small part or process from my Super A.I." Radis explained.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed when he heard this, looking at the Super A.I. with some desire in his eyes.

The A.I. systems of the RH2s were incredibly advanced, as all controls and information were transmitted directly to the pilots. Furthermore, if it weren't for the firepower and frame being backward, the RH2s would not be so easily countered by the Type 3 Divine Warriors.

Radis chuckled, "Let's take this as an example. As long as you're able to control this Super A.I, and provide it with compatible equipment, once it launches the waves, all RH2s will be under your control."

When Yue Zhong heard this, he was wildly excited. If he could gain control of this Super A.I., then those RH2s will all become his, and at the most crucial period, they could become a tool to deal a powerful blow to the Saint Clan.

He immediately asked with respect, "Mr. Radis, I need this Super A.I., may I ask if you're able to give it to me?"

The Super A.I. was too important to Yue Zhong, as long as he can control it, he had an additional 10-20% confidence in dealing with the Saint Clan. Otherwise, based on their strength, any single Type 4 Divine Warrior could smack him to death.

Radis looked back at Yue Zhong, his pupils narrowing, "Can In the first place, I had kept this to pass on to the next person with the Imprint. However, I hope you can adhere to a condition of mine."

Yue Zhong replied, "Please speak!"

Radis kept his gaze on Yue Zhong, pleading, "Other than those of us failed warriors, most of the Mutants were humans that had been exposed to radiation for too long. Mutants that are Type 3 and below have no intelligence, and only know how to kill and destroy. However, once they have evolved to Type 4, they would regain their intelligence, and wouldn't necessarily be lesser than humans. When the Gates of Hell open for real, I will lead the Mutants to support you, I hope that you can treat us equally, and not discriminate against us Mutants of Type 4 and above."

Mutants were a sort of strange creature, this was a fact that struck hard. Most of them had savage and hideous appearances. Even the lowly vagabonds would kill the Mutants anytime they could, not sparing even half-Mutants.

As a failed warrior, Radis had been confined here for hundreds of years. After he resurrected, he had hoped to live as a human once again. After all, he was a human leader hundred of years ago.

Yue Zhong laughed, "Rest assured, as long as you support me, I'll definitely treat you and your people equally, not discriminating against the Mutants of Type 4 and above. In fact, I am looking forward to having your people with me."

Yue Zhong had the Sea Clan, Treant Clan and the child of the Mutant Infected Womb, he did not really mind the differences in species. As long as they could help him, he was willing to treat them with sincerity. As long as the Mutants were willing to fight for him, he would not ostracize them.

Radis inspected Yue Zhong and realized Yue Zhong meant his words, and he revealed a smile, "Thank you!"

Yue Zhong asked out of curiosity, "Can't you come out now?"

Based on Radis' strength, once he becomes Yue Zhong's partner, he would be a terrifying force on the field. Slaughtering Type 4 Divine Warriors would not be an issue.

Radis shook his head, "Not possible. I've been sealed here as a punishment for being a failed warrior. Only when Type 5 Divine Warriors come here, then I will be able to fight. After the Gates of Hell have fully opened, I'll be released from my seal, and regain my movement."

Yue Zhong asked, "Then, may I ask, what Type of Divine Warrior are you?"

"I am at the peak of Type 5."

"Not yet at Type 6 huh?" Yue Zhong's heart sunk slightly, and he continued, "Are there any Type 6 Divine Warriors in the Saint Clan?"

"There are!" Radis's voice turned steely, "Initially, it was because there were 6 Type 6 Divine Warriors from the Ancient Clan, that caused the defeat of our humankind. We had to utilize nuclear weapons just to kill 3 of their people, injuring 2 heavily, and the last slightly injured. The Ancient Clan has a lifespan of over a thousand years, including a powerful regenerative ability. Without any enemies, as long as they're not stupid to engage in an internal struggle, there should still be 3 Type 6 Divine Warriors!"

Yue Zhong's heart sunk slightly, "Then are you able to defend against a Type 6 Divine Warrior?"

Radis laughed bitterly, "Even if I were to utilize all my strength, I can withstand one for at most 20 seconds. This is already the ideal situation. In fact, it's more likely that I'll perish with a single strike from the enemy."

Yue Zhong frowned, his expression turning ugly. If Radis could be killed in a second, then he himself was merely an ant to them. He truly did not know what he could do to defend against such a terrifying enemy.

Radis spoke, "Don't be too worried, Yue Zhong! While it's true that the Type 6 Divine Warriors are incredibly powerful, in the 2

years before the Gates of Hell open, they are rendered immobile. After 2 years, their seals will be undone, and only then would they be able to invade your planet. That is to say, from now, you still have about 3 years. Within these 3 years, if you still haven't found a way to deal with them, then you'll likely fail the game."

"3 years?" Yue Zhong's expression finally eased. If it was 3 years, he had some hope. After all, the God and Devil Imprint on his hand had mysterious powers.

Yue Zhong eyed the sphere, asking, "How do I retrieve this Super A.I.?"

Radis reminded, "Use your Imprint to press on the sphere, and it will automatically be kept in your imprint. However, in order to really utilize it to its fullest potential, you have to equip it with compatible machines. At the very list, you need a supercomputer, the more advanced the technology, the stronger the computing strength, the higher the potential."

Chapter 737: Treasure of Hope!

Yue Zhong looked around the lab and came to an understanding of its usage. All these equipment was basically built for the sake of utilizing the Super A.I.

He came in front of the sphere, and observed it carefully, before placing the Imprint on it.

With a bright flash, the sphere was absorbed right into his Imprint.

"Super Artificial Intelligence - Unnamed."

There was a notification in Yue Zhong's brain, and he could feel that as long as he willed it, the Super A.I. would be released.

Yue Zhong then asked curiously, "Mr. Radis, in the past, did you guys only have this Treasure of Hope?"

Yue Zhong knew that other than himself, there were sure to be other heroes that were able to enter this world. If they could survive, they would gain a Treasure of Hope as well. Since that was the case, there should be other Treasures of Hope on this planet.

"There are! We had over 50 billion people on this planet in the past, and there were countless heroes. Initially, when I had entered the 2nd Stage, there were a total of 12 that returned. Together with the Treasures of Hope that we brought back from the Second Stage, we had a total of 15 Treasures. It was because of these 15 that we could barely hold our own against the zombies. However, as the battles dragged out, 9 of them were destroyed, and we're left with only 6."

"Other than the Super A.I. with me, there's one that has already ended up in the hands of those evolved Zombies. The locations of the other 4 are unknown. The one with the evolved Zombies is called Wall of Sanctuary. It is able to project a powerful defensive wall that envelopes an area of 100,000 sqm. This Sanctuary can

actually defend against all sorts of attacks, even nuclear ones, the only downside is its energy consumption." Radis explained.

"It can even defend against nuclear attacks! That's too amazing!" Yue Zhong felt shocked. Nuclear weapons were the terrifying weapons of war, if one were used, the area of impact would be wiped out entirely. If it weren't for the resulting radiation, Yue Zhong would have long since used it to blast the zombies in China till kingdom come.

The Saint Clan was already terrifying, together with a defense that could protect them against nuclear attacks, it was practically a cheat code that was almost impossible to beat.

Radis chuckled when he saw Yue Zhong's expression, "Yue Zhong, don't be too worried. The might of the Wall of Sanctuary is indeed powerful, however, the energy required is also astronomical. It cannot be used as and whenever they like. Otherwise, we wouldn't have been defeated then. At that time, it was because our energy had run low, that was how they managed to breach our Wall of Sanctuary. As long as you maintain a constant assault, you can break that wall."

Yue Zhong pondered a while before asking, "Mr. Radis, I can't help but feel that the RH2 seems to be lacking something. Its firepower cannot really deal damage to any Type 4 existences."

While the firepower of the RH2 was devastating to ordinary humans, against Divine Warriors of Type 3 and above, it was barely enough. Even when someone as outstanding as Yue Zhong pilot one, he could not threaten a Type 4 Divine Warrior at all. There was something limiting.

Radis chuckled, "The RH2 was a robot designed to battle humans. Against humans, its firepower is already more than enough. In fact, the robots we used in the past had much more powerful firepower. 20 of them could threaten a Type 4 Divine Warrior. However, such machines were too dangerous to the Saint Clan.

Hence, they had either sealed or destroyed them. As for the RH2s that was fitted with numerous sensors, they are best suited for the mass slaughter of humans. However, within the Super A.I., there's a blueprint for the robots we used in the past, as long as you can construct them again, then you won't have much to fear when meeting the Type 4 Divine Warriors on the battlefield."

Yue Zhong continued to ask, "Mr. Radis, is it possible to get the 3 Type 4 Mutants to listen to my commands?"

If they were to join his team, then the Mutants in this underground city would become his subordinates. His might would soar instantly, even stronger than the resistance force he had gained.

Radis shook his head and rejected, "No! The most I can do is to prevent them from attacking you. The Mutants only recognize the strongest as their leader. Unless I'm able to get out of my seal, otherwise, if you want them to listen to you, you'll have to defeat them in combat."

Yue Zhong's gaze was like a knife as he pushed on, "Alright! In that case, Mr. Radis, I would like to know if there're any water sources that are at radiation Level 3 or lesser within these Ancient Ruins? If there are, where are they located?"

Radis looked at Yue Zhong with appreciation, "To the west of this ruins, about 15 kilometers away, there's a river, the radiation is at Level 1 or so. Other than that, there are abundant water sources below the surface, and many of these underground sources are not contaminated with radiation. Are there any other questions?"

Yue Zhong asked, "Mr. Radis, if I were to bring people to live here, can you control the Mutants not to attack my people?"

Radis replied quickly, "There must be a border. Your people must not cross the border without notifying. That way, we can exist in harmony. Otherwise, if your humans were to get too close to those low-level Mutants with no intelligence, it would be dangerous.

After all, the Type 4 Mutants could not maintain control over the rest of the low-level Mutants all the time."

Although Radis was a failed warrior, in the past, he was also a peak level expert that led the human resistance in the past. Towards Yue Zhong's questions, he had already guessed a few things and was prepared to answer them.

"Many thanks! I'll be heading off first, see you again!" Having gained satisfactory answers, Yue Zhong smiled and bowed in respect, before bidding his farewell.

"You don't have to worry about those Mutants when you head out, I'll get them to leave you in peace." Radis laughed lightly, as a rune in his eyes flashed, and a powerful spirit wave spread out in all directions.

The spirit wave passed through the lab, enveloping the entire underground city, channeling within the bodies of the Mutants.

"Strong!!" Yue Zhong was swept by the wave as well, his body trembling slightly. Had Radis attacked him with a spirit force, he would have been destroyed in a single second. A Type 5 Divine Warrior was truly a heaven-defying existence.

Yue Zhong breathed in deeply and quickly went outside.

As he approached the entrance, his entire body went tense, preparing for combat, even with Radis's promise, he didn't dare let his guard down.

Currently, there were countless Mutants right outside the lab, the Type 3 Mutants numbered at least 300. When Yue Zhong saw them, his scalp turned numb, and he couldn't help but retreat a few steps in preparation to flee.

The scene was truly terrifying, however, the moment those Mutants with freakish appearances saw him, they got down on the floor, as though paying respects to him.

Yue Zhong took a look and heaved a sigh of relief. He shot out 2

bone spikes from his legs, propelling him into the air, before quickly retracting them, and channeling his Dark Wind Wings. With a flash and a gust of wind, he transformed into a shooting star and shot for the exit.

The moment he flew out the building, he saw the 2 sides engaged in brutal combat.

The thousands of Mutants were attacking the Saint Clan forces under the lead of the 3 Type 4 Mutants, however, the number of RH2s that had landed was already over 150.

These 150 RH2s had formed a perfect fire net, that encompassed a huge area. As they fired wildly, even the Type 4 Mutants had to be careful.

As a large amount of Type 3 Mutants got closer, they would be torn to shreds by the countless cannons and lasers. They could not even exhibit their speed because they were faced with firepower from all sides. It did not matter where they ran, they would be shot at.

Some of the Mutants had tougher hides, which even the cannons could not pierce. However, these types of Mutants were much slower, and when the lasers hit, they would still be vaporized.

The 3 Type 4 Mutants that had managed to launch a successful sneak attack earlier and reclaimed the advantage of battle could only watch helplessly from afar, dodging the shots from the RH2s. Only the huge chief was continuing to grab buildings and throwing them at the RH2s, turning many of them into scrap metal.

Both sides were in a temporary stalemate, however, once the Type 4 Divine Warrior George recovers, the Mutants would lose their edge.

"Time for me to act! I'm relying on you, sphere!" Yue Zhong watched the situation, and his right hand glowed, as the sphere appeared in front of him.

There were a few indents in the sphere. Yue Zhong took out a number of Type 3 Mutant horns and inserted them. With a bright flash, the sphere glowed and beams of light shot out. As they converged, they revealed a little girl in a white dress in holographic form.

The little girl smiled at Yue Zhong sweetly, speaking with a clear voice, "Hello! I am Super A.I. It's our first time meeting, my new Master."

Chapter 738: The Might of Bai Yi!

Yue Zhong asked curiously, "Hi! I'm Yue Zhong! Do you have a name?"

The holographic little girl continued to smile, "My past memories, feelings, and emotions had all been wiped clean. In this sphere, only my programming remains. You are my new Master, so please give me a name."

Yue Zhong sighed before smiling, "Alright! From today on, you're called Bai Yi (White Shirt)."

The girl smiled, "Thank you, Master, for giving me a name."

Yue Zhong pointed to the group of RH2s and asked, "Bai Yi, I want to gain control over those machines there. Are you able to do that?"

Bai Yi giggled, "Rest assured Master unless it is a standalone mechanical control, any equipment that relies on computing cannot escape my control. Please wait a moment."

A number of small radar-like dots appeared from the sphere, before shooting out in all directions in a wave.

Asya, who was protected by the net of RH2s, looked at George resting at one side and asked, "George, how long more do you need to recover?"

George, whose chest had suffered a huge wound, was already recovering. The wound was also healing at a speed visible to the naked eye, with strands of muscle and flesh intertwining.

George replied with a pale face, "An hour more. I need an hour more to recover fully. But then, my combat ability will still be at only 80%."

The Flesh-Eaters had superhuman regenerative abilities. Injuries that could claim lives would only take a while to heal for these

creatures. Of course, healing required a huge amount of Stamina, thus, whenever they had recovered, for the short term, their combat strength would suffer.

Asya turned to look at the sky when she heard that, stretching out her hand to change the trajectory of the incoming building, causing it to land on another side.

If she wanted to forcefully block the building, even Asya would have to expend quite some energy. However, using her barriers to change the trajectories was not difficult.

It was due to her efforts that the speed of the RH2s' destruction was slowing.

The huge RH2s were slowly advancing, spreading their fire net. Even if those Mutants were to duck for cover, the lasers would turn their covers into nothing, before obliterating them.

Once the RH2s got into formation, their fire net was seemingly unstoppable, even the Type 4 Mutants dare not face them directly.

At a distance, the 3 Type 4 Mutants watched the rain of bullets and their eyes flashed with fury and helplessness. Anyone of them could easily destroy an RH2, however, the formation consisted of 200 RH2s, preventing them from rushing in recklessly. If they were not careful, they would be ripped to shreds as well.

All of a sudden, all the RH2s shuddered once, and the next moment, the cannons were adjusted to aim at the 4 Saint Clan Type 4 Divine Warriors, before spitting out a flurry of bullets.

At the same time, the RH2 that George was in self destructed. The terrifying explosion consumed George, blasting his body into pieces.

Manshid had no time to defend and was instantly punctured full of holes. However, at the most critical moment, a white light radiated from his body, forcefully stopping all the bullets from hitting him.

At that moment that he managed to stop the countless cannons from killing him, an electromagnetic beam fired from a distance, piercing the shield, blasting his head apart.

"Congratulations on gaining +40 Strength, and +1 Skill Point."

Manshid's enormous life energy went into Yue Zhong's body, giving him a sudden huge boost in enhancement.

Type 4 Divine Warriors were way above Yue Zhong in strength, thus hunting them granted him huge benefits.

On the other side, Antonio had also released his own white light to defend against the countless bullets. At the same time, his body flashed, disappearing towards the distance.

Asya, the strongest Type 4 Divine Warrior among the 4, quickly channeled her Psychic Barrier to defend against the fire net, before charging up into the sky.

A glint appeared in the eyes of the red-haired Type 4 Mutant, as she transformed into a beam of light as she charged after Antonio.

Her speed was insane, and within 10 seconds, she had caught up to Antonio, slashing out for his heart.

Antonio could only grit his teeth and turned around to engage her in battle.

Asya made use of her psychic abilities to float temporarily, when suddenly, the heavy assault helicopters in the air adjusted their formation, and began firing at her.

On the ground, Asya had a speed that surpassed the sound barrier, however, she was only in the air by making use of her abilities, thus her speed in the air could not compare. Eyeing the multiple projectiles coming for her, she could only raise up her shields again to meet the assault.

Just as she had braced herself for the projectiles in the air, the 200 RH2s below adjusted their fire net, before firing at her.

Asya gritted her teeth, pushing her abilities to propel herself down, before she fled towards the distance.

At this time, the Type 4 Mutant chief grabbed his huge bat and charged towards Asya with a ferocious expression, swinging violently.

Asya's face fell as she waved her jade-like hands, causing a huge barrier to appear in front of her.

The swing of the Type 4 Mutant chief slammed into the Psychic Barrier, the terrifying force instantly pulverizing the shield, and the recoil caused Asya to turn pale.

As a peak-level Type 4, the chief had a slight advantage over Asya, as long as she was struck by his blow, all her defenses would fail.

On the other side, the Type 4 Mutant with the boils and growths appeared silently from one corner, throwing a fist at Asya's heart.

Asya screamed out in a piercing voice, as a powerful soundwave erupted with her as the center, spreading outwards in all directions.

Both the Type 4 Mutant chief and the one with boils felt their bodies shudder, their speeds dropping suddenly.

At this time, another burst of an electromagnetic beam shot from the distance, blasting her stomach, causing a huge, bloody hole, destroying her inner organs.

Asya's face contorted in pain, as she looked towards the direction of the shot. With her exceptional sensory powers, she immediately caught sight of Yue Zhong.

Fury flashed across her eyes, and ignoring her current injured state, she tapped her foot lightly, and her entire frame shot towards Yue Zhong at the speed of sound.

The Type 4 Mutant chief and the one with boils turned to look at

Yue Zhong, a strange gaze in their eyes.

Asya had just moved when the 200 RH2s adjusted their cannons swiftly, once again enveloping Asya in a fire net. No matter how she moved, she would be blasted on all sides by those bullets and cannons.

Asya's pupils constricted, as she gritted her teeth to channel another Psychic Barrier once again, deflecting a large number of bullets. However, each time the shield blocked a cannon, her body would shudder as blood flowed out from her mouth. She dragged her heavily injured body to appear in front of Yue Zhong.

Right at this moment, a powerful missile came down from the sky, blasting Asya, destroying her lower body, knocking her right in front of Yue Zhong.

"Checkmate!"

Bai Yi's happy cheers resounded from the sphere. It was precisely her that controlled the weapons of war to deal such damage to Asya.

Asya gasped as she looked at Yue Zhong and said, "You actually have the Treasure of Hope! You must be the current generation's Seed of Hope?"

"Seed of Hope? So there's such a term. Forget it. Have you eaten humans before?" Yue Zhong chuckled lightly, aiming at her head with his Electromagnetic Gun.

Asya glared at him, barking coldly, "Don't lump me with those lowly things. I'm an honorable member of the Ancient Clan. Eating humans is only something the lowly creatures do."

Yue Zhong asked Bai Yi, "Interesting! Bai Yi, any way of containing her? An alive Type 4 Divine Warrior might be of use to me."

Bai Yi was the Super A.I. and since she had helped Yue Zhong attack Asya, he hoped to capture her as a hostage

Bai Yi shook her head, "I can't do it! Her strength is too powerful. Unless you're able to gain the Treasure of Hope Puppet Box, otherwise, there's no way to control a Type 4 Divine Warrior."

"What a pity! Too bad, you must die!" Yue Zhong looked at Asya with regret as he pressed the trigger coldly.

With a bright flash, Asya's beautiful head burst apart, and a thick stream of life energy went into Yue Zhong's body through the Imprint.

"Congratulations on gaining +40 Agility, +1 Skill Point."

Chapter 739: Shaxi!

After Yue Zhong killed Asya, he chose to put the 2 skill points into his Second Order Devil Flame, pushing to +3, enhancing its might.

Since Asya had been killed, the 3 Type 4 Mutants turned and joined hands against Antonio.

Antonio was defending madly, in a few moments, he was battered within inches of his life, before he was finally pummeled to death by a single swing of the huge bat held by the Type 4 Mutant chief.

Those helicopters, carriers and RH2s all formed a fleet that came to Yue Zhong.

"Surrender immediately, or I'll be forced to execute all of you."

One by one, all the machines started to relay messages within to warn the pilots.

"Come out from your aircraft! Hands over your head!"

The assault helicopters began to descend one by one, their doors opening. The RH2s had their weapons trained on them in case any of the occupants tried anything funny.

The soldiers began to get out from their aircraft, their hands above their heads.

After that, the helicopters rose into the air again, hovering.

The pilots came out and became Yue Zhong's captives.

All of a sudden, 3 men who had just gotten off their aircraft quickly leaped towards Yue Zhong. It was just that, the moment they moved, there was a loud roar of bullets, the dense fire net provided by the RH2s immediately riddled them full of holes.

Seeing this, the rest of the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters on the rest of the helicopters turned pale and quickly jumped off.

Each and every Type 3 Flesh-Eater of the Saint Clan had a powerful physique, landing without problems even from a height of dozens of meters. However, at that moment of impact, the recoil would prevent them from moving immediately after that.

It was during that moment where the countless cannons turned them all into meat paste.

If Yue Zhong was controlling a single RH2, he could at most deal with 2 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters. However, with the RH2s under Bai Yi's control, they had no chance to flee and were instantly dealt with.

"Strong!" Yue Zhong watched the massacre of the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters and rejoiced silently. Bai Yi's control of the RH2s provided even a suppression that was tough for a Type 4 expert to deal with. With her aid, Yue Zhong finally had some way of contending against the Saint Clan.

With the death of the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters, the rest of the humans did not dare retaliate. They came out obediently, hugging their heads, eyeing Yue Zhong with fear.

Bai Yi controlled the RH2s to bark at the captives, "Get over here, all of you. Enter these 2 transport carriers!!"

The captives went into the carriers obediently.

The carriers of this world were different from the ones on Earth. Due to the need for the RH2s to suppress potential chaos and rebellion, each of these aircraft had 3 large propellers, when necessary, they could land vertically in a heartbeat.

After the captives filled up the 2 aircrafts, they quickly flew back into the skies.

Having dealt with this, Yue Zhong's heart relaxed as he turned to the other side.

He saw Antonio's battered body under the joint efforts of the 3 Type 4 Mutants.

Since they already killed Antonio, the 3 Type 4 Mutants continued to look at Yue Zhong coldly, with countless Mutants behind them.

Yue Zhong eyed them with wariness, but maintained a smile, "How do you do? I'm Yue Zhong! How should I address you guys?"

According to what Radis said, these Type 4 Mutants already possessed human intelligence and were able to converse.

The chief replied, "I'm Shaba! The leader of the No. 5 Lab."

The red-haired beauty had her dangerous gaze fixed upon Yue Zhong, causing him to feel a chill, "Shaxi!"

The Mutant with boils laughed savagely, "Keke, I'm Shamie! Human kid, your flesh looks pretty delicious! Keke!"

"Pleased to meet you guys." Yue Zhong's face did not change as he continued to laugh, "Mr. Shaba, has Mr. Radis already told you guys?"

Shaba replied coldly, "He has already informed me on your matters. However, if you want me to submit, unless you're stronger than me, it's never going to happen."

Yue Zhong then asked, "I want to establish a human base over in the area of the river, what are your thoughts?"

In this region, the Mutants were the overlords. Yue Zhong wanted to establish himself here, and would need to work together with the Mutants on this. Otherwise, he would be torn to shreds the moment he entered.

There was water within the Ancient Ruins, and many had similar ideas as Yue Zhong before, just that they had long since become food for the Mutants.

Shaba was silent for a while, "Can! As long as your people do not stray from their areas. Let me first make this clear, if your people don't listen, don't blame me for their deaths."

Yue Zhong's eyes lit up in joy as he thanked them, "Thank you!"

With his promise, Yue Zhong could establish his base here, and would not have to worry about food or water. Furthermore, he could even sell the clean water at a price.

Since he obtained his objective, Yue Zhong did not intend to stay, "Then, I'll make a move first."

On this journey, not only did Yue Zhong obtain the Bai Yi, the Treasure of Hope, he had gained over 200 RH2s, dozens of aircrafts and assault helicopters. His own strength had undergone a huge upheaval as well. With just these equipment, Yue Zhong was confident of leveling the entire resistance.

"Wait a minute!"

Just as he turned around, the red-haired beauty Shaxi suddenly spoke up.

Yue Zhong's heart tensed as his muscles became taut. He turned around and smiled, "Miss Shaxi, is there anything else?"

"I'll come with you!" Shaxi had a quick flicker of hope in her eyes, "I would like to experience the human world."

Shamie, with his body full of boils and growths, also chuckled menacingly, "I'm coming too. I want to see the human world. Staying in this damn ruins. It's just Mutants every day. I'm sick of interacting with those brainless idiots."

Yue Zhong was slightly taken aback and could not hide his reluctance, "Miss Shaxi and Mr. Shamie, human civilization isn't as fun as you think. Some of them might really have issues with your appearances."

Shaxi was not too bad, although she had sharp blades for claws, she was still a great beauty, with an incredible body. However, Shamie had a truly revolting appearance, which was terrifying to look at. If they were to walk around in the human world, they were sure to be ostracized and targeted.

"Don't worry! I have my means." Shaxi spoke coldly, and with a swish of her tail, it curled up into her waist, while her claws retracted into her hands. She leaped into a nearby room, and soon reappeared with a tight, silver leather suit, complete with leather gloves.

After the wardrobe change, Shaxi looked like an incredible human beauty, as long as she did not take off her clothes, no one would be able to tell.

As for Shamie, he chuckled, and his muscles contorted and twisted. Within seconds, all the boils and growths were absorbed back into his body, his claws retracted, and he looked like an ordinary male.

After Shamie transformed, he came over to Yue Zhong, "In this state, I can only utilize 60% of my combat strength. However, I can still deal with Type 3 Divine Warriors. It should be more than enough to travel. Kid, let's go!"

"Fine!" Yue Zhong's expression changed many times before finally accepting that these 2 Type 4 experts were coming with him.

Shaba watched them leave quietly, before drilling into the deeper parts of the ruins, with the rest of the Mutants following him.

Out in the barren wilderness, Dina was hoisting a 20-over kg bag and running madly. Perspiration flowed down without stopping, drenching her clothes entirely. She had been running for 20 kilometers, her body exhausted to the extreme. However, she did not give up, panting as she ran.

About 200m away, a few men and women sat on the ground gasping for air, looking at Dina with complicated expressions. There was only her left that was still running.

Xiao Lan watched Dina, muttering, "She's so tenacious!"

Kong Cui Yun was slightly envious, "Hmph! What's there to be

surprised about? It's all because of the Evolving Liquid granted by Yue Zhong, that's why she's slightly better than us."

Xiao Lan glanced at her but did not say anything. Although it was true that Dina did awaken some powerful skills, her efforts were not less than triple of theirs. However, Kong Cui Yun was still her friend, thus she did not want to fight.

"There's someone!! Someone's coming!! Enemy!! Enemy!!" Dina was running halfway, when she saw something and began to shout out loud.

Hearing her shouts, everyone's expression fell, as they quickly darted back to the base.

Alarms rang out throughout the base, and everyone quickly got into their defensive places.

From afar, 5 armored vehicles came storming in a cloud of dust, stopping right outside the base.

Chapter 740: Stunning Torrent of Steel!

20 men came out from the 5 Jeeps, the leader a middle-aged man with a powerful built, his hair grey and his eyes blue. He stood straight and upright, as though he was supporting the skies with his entire being.

The man barked out with a loud and strict voice, "It's me, Jess! Luo Chen, open the door!"

"Jess!! It's Chief Jess!!"

"Chief Jess is here!!"

"....."

Seeing that man, many of the resistance were instantly thrown into panic.

Light Beast Jess was the highest in command of the entire Eastern Division, and one of the members of the Council. Before Luo Chen submitted to Yue Zhong, his direct superior had been Jess.

Jess was widely revered in the Eastern Division, hence every time appeared, the members of the resistance would be riled up.

Luo Chen looked at Jess with a glint in his eye, "Jess, I didn't expect him to come."

Aloya had a strange look as well, "Do we kill him? If we deploy all of our strength, it should be possible to kill him."

To Aloya, no one was more important than Luo Chen, as long as someone was capable of threatening him, she would kill the other party.

"No! Jess is someone I truly admire and respect. He had given his all towards the resistance, and that's admirable. Furthermore, he's likely a Type 3 Divine Warrior, we might not be able to do anything even if we give it our all. Instead, it would just anger him.

Let me go talk to him. If he's willing to join us, our might would increase again." Luo Chen turned Aloya down and went out in big strides.

Aloya gritted her teeth and followed behind.

As the gates of the base opened, Jess and his men entered easily.

In the living hall, Jess saw that only Luo Chen and Aloya stood in the hall.

With his status as a Type 3 Divine Warrior, no one was his match in this base. Hence, Luo Chen did not even bother to station any soldier.

Jess took a look at Luo Chen and barked out with a stern expression, "Luo Chen, why did you betray the resistance? Have you forgotten what you swore when you joined?"

Luo Chen also replied with a grave expression, "Chief Jess! I have not forgotten! The one and the only reason I have chosen to break away from the resistance is that I found the Savior of the prophecy. The true leader our resistance should be following! That person is Yue Zhong, he has the God Imprint on his right arm.

Hearing his words, one young man in Jess's team, with fair skin, handsome looks and luxurious clothes laughed out with disdain, "Savior?! Your lies are truly absurd. How can the Savior exist? Even if there is one, it would definitely be my father Gong Chang Tian, and not some random person without any background."

This young man with an insidious look laughed coldly, as he glanced at Aloya with naked lust, "Uncle Jess, since the matter is clear now, Luo Chen is a traitor and he has betrayed our Resistance. Please act and execute this criminal on the spot!!"

Aloya's face changed as she stepped in front of Luo Chen, "Gong Fei! We already came forth to show our sincerity, what's the meaning of your words?"

Gong Fei laughed coldly, "Aloya, I'm ordering you under the

capacity of the leader of the 3rd Branch of the Eastern Division to come over here. Don't mix with a traitor, otherwise, you will be treated as such. You know the outcome of betraying the resistance. Don't make stupid mistakes."

Aloya flipped him off and cursed, "Go eat dog shit."

Gong Fei turned to Jess and spoke with an insufferable haughty manner, "Good! Good! Good! Uncle Jess, you've seen for yourself! These people cannot be reasoned with! Aren't you going to act?!"

Gong Fei was Gong Chang Tian's only child, and his mother passed away when he was young. Gong Chang Tian loved him dearly and spoilt him from a young age. It had caused him to have a despotic nature, to the point that he didn't even hold Jess in high regards.

Jess frowned deeper, and spoke, "Luo Chen, it's not too late to regret. As long as you take your men to return to the headquarters, I can help you plead with the higher-ups. Think about it."

The law of the resistance was truly harsh. Towards a traitor or deserter, there was only death. Jess was willing to plead on his behalf, showed how much Luo Chen meant to him.

Luo Chen replied, "Impossible! I'm already a subordinate of Leader Yue Zhong. I will not betray him. Jess, Yue Zhong has the God Imprint. Only he can save our future and our kind! Chief Jess, please join me in working for him!"

Jess had a complicated gaze as he sighed, "Luo Chen, you're truly insane!! You should just give up obediently, I don't want to be forced to kill you myself."

Gong Fei laughed coldly as he ordered, "Capture them! If Luo Chen resists, kill him on the spot! Aloya must be captured alive!"

The 4 men beside Gong Fei flashed out, intending to pounce towards Luo Chen. They were all Type 2 Divine Warriors. Capturing Luo Chen was extremely easy.

"Don't move!" Luo Chen sighed softly, pressing a button, and immediately, dozens of cannons popped out within the room, trained on Jess and his men.

Seeing those guns, Gong Fei and the rest turned pale, not daring to make any moves.

Jess's face fell as he spoke, "Luo Chen, these toys are useless to me."

Luo Chen replied indifferently, "Jack, these toys might be useless to you, with your Type 3 Divine Warrior's strength, we are truly helpless. However, there are plenty of explosives buried here. If anything were to happen to me, they will go off. Even if you are a Type 3 Divine Warrior, in such a small place, you will still be blasted to death."

Jess's face turned incredibly ugly. Not to mention him, even a Type 4 Divine Warrior would definitely be blasted to pieces if they were trapped in this small space and it exploded.

Jess coldly replied, "Fine! I'll take my men and leave, the next time we meet, we'll be enemies!"

At this time, a soldier rushed in with excitement, shouting, "Leader is back!! The leader is back!! He brought many planes with him!!"

Luo Chen's eyes flashed with joy as he extended an invitation, "Jess, the timing couldn't have been better. Since our Leader is back, how about meeting him together with me? Our human race is truly too weak against the Flesh-Eaters. I don't want to be your enemy. This will just waste our human resources."

Jess thought silently, before replying, "Alright! There's no harm in seeing what this guy is made of anyway."

Gong Fei spat out sarcastically, "I just hope he's not some trash that hides behind a woman!"

Luo Chen glanced at Gong Fei indifferently, without any

intention to retort.

Among the resistance, everyone knew that Gong Chang Tian had a stupid, useless, arrogant prick for a son. However, because Gong Chang Tian himself was too outstanding, his strength reaching a Type 4 Divine Warrior, together with his abilities, no one said anything.

Aloya shot Gong Fei a cold look but didn't say anything.

Everyone came outside, only to be shocked beyond words by what they saw.

In the skies, there were over hundred planes, assault helicopters, and large carriers. Just the planes alone had exceeded all that the entire resistance force had.

When the large carrier descended, many RH2s started to disembark, and the scene of hundreds of RH2s stepping out was truly stunning.

"Did the Leader obtain all these?! Truly amazing!!" Luo Chen could not help but be shocked by what he saw. He rubbed his eyes, before looking towards the 200-over RH2s, and realized it was not an illusion. He could not help but become excited and muttered, "It truly is him! He's our Savior!! A miracle!! This is great!!"

"How the hell is this possible?! Are these real?!" Even Aloya's mouth was agape with shock and disbelief.

After all, the 3rd Branch of the Eastern Division only had 3 RH2s in the past. The entire Eastern Division only had 10 RH2s. If one added all the RH2s of the whole resistance, there were only 50 at most. However, right now, Yue Zhong had brought back over 200, easily more than 5 times of what the resistance had.

"Impossible!! How can they have this many RH2s?! Impossible?!?" Gong Fei's face was incredibly pale, and he muttered incoherently.

If the 200 Rh2s were to be in the soldiers under Luo Chen, then it

could be said that Luo Chen's faction had already surpassed the entire resistance, this was something Gong Fei was unwilling to accept.

Those soldiers beside Gong Fei were also pale, their expressions of disbelief. It was the first time they had seen 200 RH2s. Each move they made in tandem caused the entire ground to rumble, and the pressure was shocking.

Jess looked at the scene in front of him and he was not any different as well, his expression turning as a few thoughts flashed in his mind.

Yue Zhong leaped down from one of the RH2s, his face bearing a grin as he spoke, "Luo Chen, how is it? These are the new troops that I've obtained."

Luo Chen bowed slightly, "It is an honor to serve you."

Jess walked up to Yue Zhong and asked, "How do you do, I'm Jess. Yue Zhong, can I see the God Imprint on you?"

Chapter 741: Important Meeting of the Council!

Yue Zhong shot Jess a look before asking Luo Chen, "Who is this?"

Luo Chen replied, "He is Jess, the Chief of the Eastern Division, and my direct superior in the past."

Jess looked at Yue Zhong with a burning look, "Yue Zhong, please let me see the God Imprint. If it's real, I'm willing to serve you. Our entire Eastern Division would be yours to command."

The prophecy had been circulating for hundreds of years, many of the upper echelons of the Resistance had never really placed any importance on it. There would be faithful and devout believers among the lower-rank subordinates. In the past, Jess did not believe as well. However, seeing the sheer amount of firepower that Yue Zhong casually brought back, he could not help but be filled with renewed hope.

"Alright!" Yue Zhong thought for a while before removing his glove, revealing his God and Devil Imprint.

Jess took a single look and his entire body trembled, his eyes flashing with wild joy, "It's true!! It's true!!"

Had Yue Zhong's display of strength been weak, even if he had the Imprint, Jess would not believe him. However, Yue Zhong had single-handedly brought back over 200 RH2s, and with the Imprint on him, Jess became more certain about it.

He immediately got down on his knees, solemnly pledging, "Leader Yue Zhong, from now on, all of the Eastern Division is yours to command. I personally swear loyalty to you, and I will fight by your side until the end of my life."

On this planet, the difference between the humans and Saints was too great. The Resistance simply had no way of facing the

Saint Clan in combat. Each time the Saint Clan sent out their forces, many Resistance soldiers would perish. If it weren't for the Saint Clan being too cruel to humans, the Resistance would have lost their numbers a long time ago.

Since Jess had ascertained Yue Zhong's identity, he also decided to bet on Yue Zhong. There was no other way, because according to the prophecy, once the Gates of Hell open, the entire planet would really be faced with Armageddon. If the human resistance failed, 70% of all humans would perish, and the future of humans would be even worse than currently.

"We're willing to serve Leader!"

The Type 2 Divine Warriors beside Jess immediately got on their knees and swore loyalty as well, their eyes filled with respect and hope.

Many of these low-level soldiers believed in the prophecy as it was a sign of hope. Seeing Jess confirmed Yue Zhong's status, they immediately became devoted believers.

Gong Fei immediately shouted with an ugly expression, "Jess, are you betraying my father?!"

Yue Zhong looked at the arrogant and despotic Gong Fei, and frowned, "Who is this?"

Luo Chen replied, "He is Gong Chang Tian's son Gong Fei. He had already been conferred as the new Head of 3rd Branch of the Eastern Division. He had come this time to claim authority."

Yue Zhong waved his hands, "Lock him up."

4 soldiers swiftly went up and apprehended him.

Gong Fei screamed loudly, "You guys dare treat me like this?! Do you know who I am?! I'm the only son of the person with the highest authority of the resistance!! Gong Chang Tian!! You guys dare to apprehend me? Do you not want your lives?"

Shamie, who was standing beside Yue Zhong looked at Gong Fei with disdain and asked loudly, "What a stupid fool. Yue Zhong, do you want me to take care of it?"

Yue Zhong rejected, "It's ok. He still has some use."

Shamie was slightly impatient as he asked, "Since that's the case, let's not waste time here! I want to eat braised pig's trotters! Hurry and arrange for it."

Shaxi also suddenly spoke up, "I want chocolate cake!"

Both of these Type 4 Mutants had been living within the ruins ever since they gained intelligence. Since then, they were interested towards the delicacies of the human race. However, it was impossible to obtain them within the ruins. Now that they were with human civilization, they quickly requested for it.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Alright! Luo Chen, help me with this."

Such matters were usually left to Luo Chen.

Luo Chen looked at both Shaxi and Shamie with a little surprise, before quickly leaving to arrange, "Yes!"

Luo Chen could tell that Shaxi and Shamie were both extraordinary from Yue Zhong's attitude towards them and quickly brought the 2 dishes to them.

"Delicious! Oh my goodness, this is every better than white prawns! Coming here was the right decision! This braised pig's trotters can live up to its name!! Delicious!! Shamie continued to grab pieces and gobbled them up like a wolf.

On the other side, Shaxi continued to scoop small spoonfuls of chocolate cake into her mouth like an elegant, upper-class lady, revealing expressions of bliss. It was her first time tasting dessert.

Yue Zhong saw that they were both contented and quickly turned to look around.

Currently, there were a dozen people seated around him, and

they were the highest in command in the base.

Yue Zhong began to update them on the water source and the matters of the past.

When he was done, a wave of discussion began to break out.

A water source with low radiation was practically a treasure source. Just selling the water would net them a fortune. Furthermore, they could grow agriculture and solve some food issues.

On this planet, almost all cities were built around a water source, which showed the preciousness of water. Due to the extreme danger of the Ancient Ruins, few dared to even venture deep inside it.

However, under Yue Zhong's strong influence, he managed to get them to go ahead with the move.

There would only be a few subordinates left at this current base in order to maintain contact and act as a link between the intended base within the Ancient Ruins and the outside world. The base could even act as a storage facility and hangar for the RH2s.

As they began to busy themselves with the preparation, after a week, almost everyone had left the base, entering the Ancient Ruins, starting the construction of their new base.

Jess came up to Yue Zhong, "Leader, Gong Chang Tian had just issued an order, summoning all the chiefs of the 4 Divisions to head back to the headquarters in 2 weeks' time for an important meeting with the Council. I hope that you can join me on this trip, to announce your status, and gain control over the entire Resistance."

Yue Zhong groaned and asked, "Jess, in your opinion, how many would support me once I announce it publicly?"

The taste of power was incredibly enticing, and most who had tasted were reluctant to give up their authority. Even someone like

Jess who worked single-mindedly for the resistance was not willing to believe Yue Zhong at the start.

Jess replied seriously, "30%, with my support, there should be at least 30% of them who would support you. As for the rest, I reckon that we would have to put in some effort to win them over. The combat strength of the resistance is truly not strong enough, incomparable with the might you already have on hand. However, the resistance covers the entire globe, there are our people everywhere. We are able to obtain all sorts of information, and intelligence is a form of strength. Leader, right now, we possess military might but are lacking in the intelligence department. If we can gain control of the resistance, we will have the network at our fingertips."

He then continued to explain the importance of the meeting, "This time, all of the high-ranking command and officials will be there. As long as you reveal your status, and allow the matter to spread, even if not all of them support, there will be people who will come and submit to you. After all, while few in command believe in the prophecy, many of the subordinates do. And they are the ones we truly need. With them, we will have eyes and ears everywhere."

Yue Zhong pondered, before a resolute look flashed in his eyes, "Ok! I'll go with you!"

The Resistance army could survive in this cruel world, was because they had plenty of eyes and ears everywhere. Due to the Saint Clan toying with the humans, treating them as food, humiliating them, there was naturally a lot of hate. While many humans could not join the resistance personally, they could provide all sorts of intelligence and information. Due to this, the Resistance had managed to hang on for so long. Otherwise, just a few dozen Type 4 Divine Warriors of the Saint Clan could flatten the entire Resistance.

Yue Zhong gained control of a large number of RH2 with the help

of Bai Yi. His troops had increased in strength, and it was now possible to even contend with a Type 4 Divine Warriors. However, he was truly lacking in information. With Jess's support, the Eastern Division had joined him, helping to alleviate this aspect slightly. However, compared to the whole Resistance, it was still far from equal.

After making the decision, Yue Zhong decided to make his preparations.

Bai Yi also created a clone of herself within the new base, which had her computing powers, automatically controlling the RH2s to fight and defend if they had to.

At the same time, her clone could control some of the RH2s to patrol around the camp, hunt Mutant Beasts, turning those unfortunate beasts into food for the humans.

Between the 2 Type 4 Mutants, Shamie loved his food, thus he stayed in camp. Shaxi chose to travel by Yue Zhong's side, due to her interest and curiosity towards the human world.

Chapter 742: Qing Zhang City!

Qing Zhang City was a middle-tier city, with an abundance of beautiful girls. Every year, there would be many beauties traded here. At the same time, there were plenty of prostitution dens and many of the ladies would compete to get customers. It was truly an interesting sight.

A small vehicle fleet with plenty of goods was making its way from the barren wilderness, after paying the entrance tax, they managed to enter the city.

This was precisely Yue Zhong's group.

This time, Yue Zhong had only brought Lisa, Shaxi, Jess and a dozen Type 2 Divine Warriors to join him for the meeting. They formed a small group, and managed to infiltrate the city.

The reason why the Saint Clan had not wiped out all humans yet was that the humans could provide food and exceptional service. They even encouraged trade and merchant services.

In order to survive in this cruel world, humans had formed merchant groups of different sizes, traveling from town to town, cities to cities, all in the bid to exchange and trade goods so that they might get the favor of the Saint Clan.

"Master, come here for a good time, just a 100 Eagle Yuan, and you can do me however you like!!"

"Master, come over here. For just 300 Eagle Yuan, I can promise you an amazing time."

"Sir, we have a new batch just in! She's just 10, and is truly an unpopped 'cherry'!!"

"...."

The moment Yue Zhong's group entered the city, there were countless brazen women who swarmed over, trying their best to

attract them and soliciting. Furthermore, this was in broad daylight.

Yue Zhong and his men were all equipped with powerful firearms, and their training caused them to have a certain bearing. Such people were usually assumed to be rich, thus many of the women on the streets immediately swarmed over based on their experience.

Jess frowned and shot one of the soldiers a look.

The burly soldier, built like a bear, immediately barked out gruffly, "Make way!"

With such a voice, the women immediately scattered like birds. After all, Qing Zhang City was lawless as well. These women had no background whatsoever, should they be beaten up, no one would entertain their complaints.

One of the soldiers chuckled towards Yue Zhong, "These are just riff-raff, not many of them are decent. Leader, if you are really in need, there's a more decent district inside. There are plenty of women there. Qing Zhang City is famed for its beauties, especially the 4 well-known brothels, Heavenly Scent Pavilion, Red Jade Pavilion, Clear Wave Pavilion and Mild Night Pavilion. These 4 would promote their top beauties every 3 years, and each generation of beauties are truly exceptional. If I'm not wrong, tonight should be the release of the new generation of beauties. It would be an amazing sight to behold. Every time the festival happens, many people would swarm over to spectate."

"Oh? For real?" Yue Zhong could not help but become interested. He looked around, and noticed that there were many burly and ferocious looking men walking about the streets. Each of them had intimidating auras and had guns on their backs. They were either mercenaries or experts.

Such men were present in every city, but Qing Zhang City had more than usual numbers. At the same time, behind Yue Zhong's

group, there were more merchant groups entering the city.

"Do pardon us, our inn is full!"

Yue Zhong and his people were trying to find an inn to stay, however, it seemed like even after they had almost swept through the entire city, all the inns seemed to be occupied. There was no place to stay."

Yue Zhong pulled out a 100 Eagle Yuan and handed it to a waitress, "Miss, is there anywhere else that can accommodate people?"

The waitress received the Eagle Yuan with a bright smile, "Sir, our place might be full, but the 4 Pavilions would definitely have space. If you really do need a place to stay, you can consider those 4. However, the price may be steep. One night at the very least would require 5,000 Eagle Yuan."

After that waitress left, Yue Zhong sighed, "Seems like there's no choice, let's spend the night at Heavenly Scent Pavilion then."

The soldiers immediately erupted in cheers, "Leader is wise!!"

The beauties of Heavenly Scent Pavilion were renowned, however, since most of the resistance soldiers were poor folks, many lacked the qualifications to even see those beauties. Now that they were about to stay at such a place, they could not help but be excited.

Lisa eyed them with disdain and snorted, "Hmph! Men are not any good creatures."

Jess's face suddenly fell as he roared, "Watch out! Dodge!"

Everyone immediately ducked to the sides of the street.

At this time, 20 men in black clothes atop Mutant Black Horned-Horses charged through the city.

Those people who were not able to evade in time were sent flying through the air when slammed by the horses. Those riders also

pulled out their weapons and fired casually, while laughing with disdain.

The moment those black-clothed riders appeared, everyone's faces fell as they hurried out of the way, not daring to meet the eyes of the riders.

Yue Zhong watched this scene with an ugly expression.

Jess came up to Yue Zhong and said, "They're from the Saint Clan! In their eyes, we humans are no different from pigs or dogs. They would kill as they like. In front of them, we have no dignity whatsoever. Because of this, we have countless people who are willing to resist them. However, our strength is truly laughable when compared to them."

Yue Zhong nodded slightly as he looked at the group of men, his eyes flashing with a frosty chill.

As the group was about to ride further into the city, the leader who had 3 suns on his collar swept his gaze over Yue Zhong's group, and when he saw Shaxi, his eyes brightened as he ordered, "Go check out these people, I want to know where they are staying tonight."

The rider who was given the order had 2 stars on his collar. He looked towards Yue Zhong's side and responded loudly, "Yes, Lord Carl!!"

Carl smiled in satisfaction and continued to ride in,

The City Lord of Qing Zhang City, a Type 3 Divine Warrior named Gretto, came up to welcome Carl, "Carl, my dear friend, what brings you here?"

Carl chuckled, "Gretto, tonight, I'm intending to hunt here!"

The look on Gretto's face turned slightly cold, "What? Hunting game? Carl, are you intending to hunt in the special mansion?"

Carl continued without skipping a beat, "No! I want to hunt in

the whole of Qing Zhang City."

Gretto immediately shot him down with an ugly look, "no! This will spoil the reputation of my Qing Zhang City. I can't allow you to do that."

The hunting game they were referring to represented a city lockdown, where the Saint Clan would then begin to hunt the humans brazenly and wildly, killing and consuming them.

Many Saint Clan members loved to take part in such cruel games. Some of them would organize such hunting parties in their own cities, preying on the humans, reveling in the despair and struggles of the humans. Gretto had commissioned a special mansion specifically for such hunting parties.

Although Gretto was just like any other Saint Clan and did not view humans with respect, he still wanted Qing Zhang City to prosper, not a lawless ghost town. He was willing to let Carl hunt hundreds, or at most a few thousand. However, if Carl wanted to do so within the entire city, it would definitely bring the city down.

Carl laughed with self-confidence, "Gretto, my dear friend, you will definitely promise me. Because I have already completed my mission, as long as you allow me to have a hunting party in this city, I will definitely give you credit for the mission completion,"

Gretto's eyes flashed with disbelief, "Completed your mission? You mean... you have already found the thing?!! Is it for real?!"

Carl chuckled, "Definitely! As long as we hand it over to the capital, we will all be promoted, who knows, we might even become Type 4 Divine Warriors with their support! What's a mere Qing Zhang City compared to that?"

Gretto sucked in a deep breath, and his eyes flashed with a burning gaze, "Ok! I promise you, tonight when the flower competition of the 4 brothels is underway, we will begin the

hunting party!"

Carl laughed out manically, his claws directly piercing into the heart of a beautiful female servant beside him, digging it out and chomping on it with a savage, blood expression, "Floral competition!! Awesome!! The very thought of tearing apart those beauties the moment they get displayed really sets my blood on fire!! Hahaha!!"

Gretto also laughed out loud, "Hahaha!! Hunting party in Qing Zhang City eh? I'm looking forward to it!!"

Heavenly Scent Pavilion was one of the top 4 brothels in Qing Zhang City, its design and construction were extremely luxurious and alluring, surpassing even the best 5-star hotels on Earth.

The entire area in front of the front doors was already made out of countless pieces of white jade, and the numerous glamorous buildings around it.

Many beautiful girls with voluptuous figures stood in front of the entrance, and the moment they saw Yue Zhong's group approaching, they began to kneel and exclaim out, "Welcome home, Master!"

Yue Zhong's heart was slightly stirred when he saw this. These beauties were comparable, if not better than the top beauties back on Earth, but under the teachings of Heavenly Scent Pavilion, they had no self-dignity and were willing to prostrate themselves.

Chapter 743: Qi Qing'er!

The soldiers following behind Yue Zhong were elite soldiers, but they were also mesmerized by the sight before them, their eyes unable to tear away from the girls.

A charming lady of about 30 with a hotel uniform and an amazing figure stepped out, smiling at Yue Zhong, "How do you do, I'm the manager Mandy Zhang, can I help you?"

"Accommodation!" Yue Zhong replied courteously as well, asking, "May I ask who is the top courtesan of your esteemed Heavenly Scent Pavilion?"

The rest of the soldiers also quickly looked towards Mandy with curiosity.

"Hmph!" Lisa could not help but snort when she heard the question, her heart feeling sour. She had always enjoyed the adoration of the resistance soldiers, but now, just the name of an unknown courtesan had totally outshone her.

Shaxi was impassive as she stood beside Yue Zhong, looking around at everything with interest. She had chosen to follow Yue Zhong precisely to learn about the luxury of human civilization. It was a first for her to see such beautiful and elegant buildings.

Mandy continued to wear her charming smile, "May I ask your name, young master?"

Yue Zhong replied, "My surname is Yue!"

Mandy laughed coyly, "So it's Young Master Yue, today our top courtesan Qi Qing'er would be presenting a song inside Heavenly Scent Pavilion. However, as it's a special program, in order to watch it, everyone would have to pay 10,000 Eagle Yuan first."

The moment her words fell, the soldiers all had huge changes in their expressions. Finding a woman to sleep with would cost at most 400 to 500 Eagle Yuan elsewhere, but just listening to this Qi

Qing'er play would require 10,000 Eagle Yuan. This was worse than robbery.

Yue Zhong waved his hands without caring, "No problem! Jess, you handle the payment!"

Yue Zhong had obtained a huge amount of Eagle Yuan since gaining the Eastern Division, and on this trip for the meeting, he had brought along 100 million Eagle Yuan.

Jess quietly retrieved a suitcase, and took out 14 stacks of Eagle Yuan to hand to Mandy Zhang.

She looked at them, her eyes gleaming with delight, and immediately gestured for them to follow her, "Please come with me."

Lisa looked at how Yue Zhong casually handed 140,000 over to Mandy Zhang and her heart felt a stab of pain over his spending, as she muttered, "What a spendthrift!"

In the past, Lisa was one of the top fighters of the Resistance, yet her monthly pay was merely about 3,000 Eagle Yuan or so. Now, Yue Zhong's casual expenditure was more than a few years' worth of her income, causing her to be incredibly envious.

Under her lead, Yue Zhong and the rest went into a small stadium within the Heavenly Scent Pavilion that was set up for a small-scale concert.

At this time, the entire place was packed with men, most of them guarded by security. Many of them even had their arms around beautiful women, it was evident that these were rich men who could afford to spend.

Yue Zhong estimated that there were over 300 men here, just based on this number, the earnings of Heavenly Scent Pavilion for today had exceeded 3 million.

The moment their group entered the stadium, a lot of gazes fell upon them. There were many who had security details, that

contained at most 2 or 4 bodyguards. Yue Zhong had a dozen soldiers.

Mandy Zhan continued to lead their group towards one of the front seats, saying, "Young master Yue, please have a seat!"

Yue Zhong did not stand on ceremony as he sat down.

With a wave of Mandy's hands, a dozen of women in cool clothing appeared, providing various services.

"Young Master Zhao, previously the top courtesan Zhang Xue Li, it was you who managed to win her over, how was it?"

Not far from Yue Zhong, a dozen young men in casual wear were crowded around a young and fat man whose looks were ordinary.

That person called Young Master Zhao chuckled out with pride, "Of course it was amazing. She truly lived up to her status as the top courtesan! Everything from top to bottom was quality! I had so much fun with her for an entire 3 days. It cost me a bomb though, almost 10 million Eagle Yuan. Even so, it was truly fucking worth it.

"10 million! Holy shit! Young Master Zhao, you're so generous?"

"I guess only Young Master Zhao could truly afford to toy with such a beauty!"

"....."

Sounds of gasps and adoration traveled from around him, causing Young Master Zhao to feel even more proud of himself.

Young Master Zhao laughed smugly, "This time, this young master I must definitely get Qi Qing'er! Hopefully, she doesn't let me down. When I help her pop her cherry, I will package her up for you guys to have some fun!"

"Thank you Young Master Zhao!"

"Wishing Young Master Zhao success later on!"

"..."

The waves of flattery and fawning began, causing Young Master Zhao to feel elated.

Lisa could not help but curse in a low voice, "Despicable!"

As a woman, Lisa saw how this Young Master Zhao was viewing the women of Heavenly Scent Pavilion, and could not help but be furious.

Lisa's words were soft, but that Young Master Zhao's ears were extremely sensitive. He turned around and almost instantly caught sight of Shaxi who was digging into her dessert.

His eyes brightened up as he quickly came up to Yue Zhong, "Hey brother, how much for the 2 women? I will use 10 of my beauties and 4 million Yuan in exchange for the 2 by your side, how about that?"

Yue Zhong glanced at him coldly, and his killing intent billowed out, "Scram!"

Enveloped by that killing intent, Young Master Zhao's face instantly turned pale, as he retreated a few steps, his eyes filled with shock.

His 4 guards of Type 2 Divine Warriors' strength came rushing over, staring at Yue Zhong.

Jess immediately stood up, staring coldly at the 4 guards.

The 10 soldiers also stood up immediately, stepping forwards to flank Jess, each of them eyeing the 4 Type 2 Divine Warriors coldly.

The group of young men who were with Young Master Zhao also came over, their own bodyguards covering them, fixing their cold gazes upon Jess and his subordinates.

The atmosphere had turned tense in a second, and it seemed that it would erupt any instant.

Mandy Zhang immediately came over with her alluring scent, smiling sweetly, "Young Master Yue, Young Master Zhao, everyone came here for entertainment, not a fight, please give me some face and let's forget about this, shall we? This Heavenly Scent Pavilion is the business of the Saint Clan, it's not too good to cause trouble here."

When Young Master Zhao heard this, his face fell, as he coldly stared at Yue Zhong, "Mandy-sis, on account of you, I'll let this slide! Let's go!"

This Young Master Zhao might be rich, but even so, he was still a lowly human in the eyes of the Saint Clan. If they caused too much trouble here, he would be captured and fed to the dogs.

Because of the backing of the Saint Clan, Heavenly Scent Pavilion could become one of the 4 top brothels in Qing Zhang City, with no one daring to cause a commotion.

The moment he left, the rest of his followers also quickly headed back to their seats.

After everything calmed down, the lights suddenly dimmed, as bright lights shone on the stage.

Fog began to rise, as a huge jade plate began to swivel up from the stage. 8 beautiful women wrapped in white silk were surrounding an incredibly stunning beauty whose figure could only be surpassed by her looks. Her features were the epitome of flawless beauty, yet they had a hint of innocence to them.

The moment she appeared, almost every man in the audience held their breath, their eyes riveted by her beauty.

The 8 other girls besides the main lady were all beautiful, however, when compared to the stunning young woman, they were reduced to being decorations. She just sat quietly on the white jade platform, exuding an extremely alluring yet pitiful demeanor.

Even Lisa, who was good-looking in her own right, could not help but exclaim, "What a beautiful girl!"

Young Master Zhao sucked in a breath of cold air, becoming extremely excited, "Good! Good! Good! She's ten times more enticing than Zhang Xue Li!! I must have her!! Her virginity is definitely mine!!"

Yue Zhong had seen his fair share of beauties, but even his eyes brightened as he praised, "Beautiful!"

This Qi Qing'er was not only flawless in her beauty but the very aura she was exuding caused one to want to protect her.

On the stage, Qi Qing'er's lips opened slightly, and an incredible voice sounded from her lips, floating throughout the stadium.

Her voice had a mesmerizing quality to it, the moment it sounded, all noise seemed to stop, leaving only her lonely voice. Everyone was enraptured by her singing, listening to it quietly.

Even the lustful Young Master Zhao whose eyes were filled with a perverse light had an intoxicated expression as he listened to the singing wholeheartedly, forgetting himself for a moment.

Yue Zhong was not learned towards music, but he also closed his eyes while immersed in the song, the pressure on his shoulders since coming here slowly easing and disappearing with the ethereal quality of her voice.

When she closed her mouth, the wondrous music came to a stop.

"Qi Qing'er!!! One more!!!! Encore!!!"

"Qi Qing'er, I love you!!!"

"One more song!! Qi Qing'er!!"

"...."

The deafening applause and roars erupted almost instantly. Every single young master seemed to be overcome with a wild, passionate adoration and seemed to have forgotten their bearings.

Young Master Zhao seemed to stare and mutter non-stop, "Mine!! She's mine!! I must definitely get her!!!"

Facing the cheers and noise for her, Qi Qing'er smiled sweetly and bowed, before heading down the stage demurely, disappearing from everyone's view.

Chapter 744: Liu Yi Chen!

The moment Qi Qing'er left the stage, everyone felt a deep sense of loss.

Mandy Zhang appeared on the stage with a slight smile, as she spoke, "Qing'er had already sung a song for everybody, if it was to everyone's liking, we hope that everyone will help us out at the Courtesan Competition later, and help Qing'er to clinch the top position! If she can claim that glory, the one who helped the most would become Qing'er's first man."

"Mandy-sis, rest assured! This time, I brought plenty of Eagle Yuan, I'll definitely push Qing'er to be number 1!!"

"This time, the Courtesan Champion position would definitely go to Qing'er!! I, Ouyang Shen promise to buy 100 flowers for Qing'er!!"

"...."

Below, many of the young masters began to express their promises and guarantees, causing Mandy Zhang's smile to be even more radiant.

Inside one of the changing rooms, Qi Qing'er was quietly removing her makeup, there was none of the joy that came with rousing an entire crowd and having won over the hearts of countless men.

There was a 13 or 14-year-old girl beside her, who was dressed in a leather skirt that could not cover her underwear, her full peaks covered in a thin leather bra. This girl was beautiful as well, and her skin fair as snow, and she was asking Qi Qing'er with a confused expression, "Miss, all those men out there have been mesmerized by you. With their help tonight, you will definitely be crowned the top Courtesan. This is the dream of so many of us here at Qing Zhang City. You're almost there, why are you so

unhappy?"

Qi Qing'er sighed in response, "Courtesan Champion! What good is that? Isn't that still a toy for men? There's no way to change our fate. Big Sis Xue Li had been the Champion previously, but her outcome was still so pitiful. If I could choose, I'd rather not be the champion."

The previous Champion Zhang Xue Li had to serve too many customers, and due to that, her body had been broken, and she disappeared mysteriously from Heavenly Scent Pavilion.

All the women in Heavenly Scent Pavilion did not know where Zhang Xue Li went, however, they were filled with suspicion and fear. However, they had no choice. From the day they entered the Pavilion, if no one bought them, they were doomed to be in this line till death. If anyone dared to run, once caught, they would become food for the Saint Clan.

All the women had seen the consequence of becoming food for the Saint Clan. Each time they were reminded of how their close sister had been eaten alive, they dared not even harbor the thought of running.

The young girl in leather fell silent, before continuing, "Miss, becoming a Floral Champion is really not too bad. Miss Hong Wu and Miss Xin Ran are all eyeing your position."

Qi Qing'er sighed once more when she heard it, her beautiful brows furrowing. The scene would have caused anyone's heart to be moved.

Although Qi Qing'er was reluctant to be the Courtesan Champion, she had no choice. Once she was crowned that, she could at least lead a decent lifestyle for a while. Her safety and life would at least be guaranteed before she lost her value.

In this Heavenly Scent Pavilion, from time to time, there would be women who would disappear for no reason. Many had guessed

that some had caught the eyes of some Saint Clan members and became food for them.

"If only someone would save me from here! If that person could save me, then even if I have to become his woman, I'll be willing." Qi Qing'er stared at her own reflection as she thought to herself.

Qi Qing'er just wanted to get out of this hell that seemed beautiful only on the surface.

As night fell, the streets became busier with bustling activity. Many had walked out of the hotels or inns they were staying in, forming a huge sea of humans that made its way towards the main grounds where the Competition was held.

This area was called the Clear Moon Grounds, where the Courtesan Competition was held each time. It could accommodate about 100,000 people.

Soon, the grounds were filled with people. Yue Zhong and the rest of the guests who were deemed VIPs were also seated near to the platform.

Only those with money could affect the outcome of the competition, thus they were seated in front. The rest were usually reduced to just spectating.

After 2 emcees came upstage to give short announcements, the competition started.

A number of beautiful young women came up to dance on stage, performing songs, exhibiting their charms and talents, accentuating their beauty.

These women all knew that there was a chance to become recognized as top-quality women, and wanted to make use of the chance to promote themselves.

The men began to call out audaciously, while some began to offer flowers. Each flower would cost a thousand Eagle Yuan, and the one who gave the most would become the first man of that

beautiful girl.

As for the top 4 courtesans, they were not ordinary existences, thus, of these beauties that came up first, many who knew they had no chance with the top courtesans chose to settle for these other beautiful women.

Each time a girl finished her performance, the grounds would break out in applause, before loud voices of bidding would resound. Countless men would start purchasing flowers to gift to the women, and the atmosphere was truly exciting. For the sake of obtaining a beauty's virginity, some men were willing to offer a few hundred flowers.

Within a box up in the sky above the grounds, Carl was holding a glass of blood from a virgin girl as he looked down and smirked coldly, "What a bunch of stupid fools!!"

In one corner of the box, there was a beautiful, blond girl who was tied up, her face contorted in pain as she struggled. One Saint Clan member was in front of him holding a syringe, drawing out the blood from her without stopping.

Gretto was also holding a glass of the virgin's blood as he chuckled, "Yea! Once they have bid successfully for the girl, let us swoop down and crush their hopes. The moment where they thought they had won, only to be taken away, is truly amazing."

Gretto had acted in the best interests of Qing Zhang City for hundreds of years. The moment he thought of the possibility of his contributions being recognized and reaching the strength of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, his blood started to pump with excitement. He almost wanted to rip apart the beautiful girl in front of him, digging out her heart and watch her despair as he ate it in front of her.

"Are the 4 top courtesans finally out?"

Right at this time, there were resounding cheers from below,

causing even Carl to gaze down.

"Liu Yi Chen!! Liu Yi Chen!!!"

Amidst the loud cheers, a 1.7m-tall lady with a head full of lush, blue hair like the sea, a pair of eyes that sparkled like gems, a slim waist and round posterior, together with a pair of full peaks that threatened to burst out of their clothes, appeared. She was wearing red leather clothes, wielding a whip in her hand. Her features were extraordinary, as sharp as a knife, while her expression was lofty and proud.

She stepped out with an enticing gait, sashaying towards the central part of the stage before whipping harshly, her strength exploding out, causing the ground to crack slightly. This insanely attractive and hot woman was actually a Type 2 Divine Warrior.

She shot the men an arrogant look as she barked out like a dominating queen, "Come!! You pathetic commoners, come dance with this Queen!"

After that, she began to get into a sexy, gyrating dance.

Her dance was full of allure and elegance, flirtatious yet arrogant, coquettish and provocative at the same time.

Watching her dance, almost all the men lost it. Their hearts were ablaze with a powerful passion, as though they could rush up to the stage to force her under themselves, using the most brutal and violent method to dominate her into submission.

Young Master Zhao stared until his eyes were about to drop out, "What a sexy queen!! Too beautiful!! I want her so badly!! This is great, this time, the competition is truly amazing!! The previous competition cannot even compare!"

The other followers of his also stared with their throats dry, their 'members' turning hard.

Carl eyed Liu Yi Chen's dance with his eyes ablaze as he licked his lips, "Not bad! This woman is not bad!! Gretto, she's mine!! This is

a woman that really piques my interest. When I'm done fucking her, I'll eat her heart, that would be the epitome of pleasure!"

Gretto chuckled with a hint of regret, "Since you like her, she's yours."

Gretto was also somewhat appreciative of Liu Yi Chen, however, compared to power, a woman was not considered anything.

When that dance was over, Liu Yi Chen was drenched in perspiration, as she continued to look down at the audience, barking, "Come on! Pathetic commoners! Do you want my body? Do you want me to kneel down and call you master?! Do you want to whip me with this?! Only if you have the capability to crown me as the Courtesan Champion, I will be able to fulfill your most shameless and sickest desires!! Come on!!! Buy them fucking flowers for me!!"

"I want to gift 30 flowers to Liu Yi Chen!!"

"3,000!! I want to gift 3,000!!"

The moment the bids started, the numbers instantly jumped to 3,000, that was a whopping 3 million Eagle Yuan.

"4,000 flowers, I'll bid 4,000!!"

"4,200, I will present those 4,200 to Liu Yi Chen!!"

"5,000!!!! I bid 5,000!!"

"8,000, let me gift 8,000 to Miss Liu Yi Chen!!"

One voice suddenly rang out, instantly suppressing the voices of everyone else. All the men fell silent. Even the champion of the previous competition had only managed to reach 5,000 flowers. Someone actually gave 8,000 here, instantly silencing everyone.

Young Master Zhao had spent 10 million just to bag the previous champion and toyed with her for 3 days, not just 1. Spending 8 million just to spend a night with a woman was practically madness.

All the gazes fell upon the direction of the voice, noticing that it was Yue Zhong.

"Liu Yi Chen, highest bid 8,000!!" The voices of the emcees rang out.

"Tonight, I'm yours!!" Liu Yi Chen threw her whip into Yue Zhong's hands, before departing the stage in a haughty manner.

Many men stared at Yue Zhong with gazes full of jealousy!

Chapter 745: Courtesan Competition!

Yue Zhong remained unfazed as he took in the envious gazes.

Young Master Zhao's countenance turned ugly as he shot Yue Zhong an ugly look, "Damn it!!!"

Liu Yi Chen was an absolute beauty that did not lose out to Qi Qing'er at all. To some men, her allure was even stronger than Qi Qing'er. Young Master Zhao was also set to obtain this woman, he had been the one to bid 5,000 flowers. Who knew Yue Zhong would throw a wrench into his plans, causing him to be furious.

Although Young Master Zhao was wealthy, he was reluctant to spend over 20 million on a woman. His family dabbled in business, but there was a limit to how much cash flow they had.

Lisa gritted her teeth and asked Yue Zhong, "This time, we only brought 10 million, you already spend 8 million on a single woman. Aren't you too much?"

Yue Zhong did not mind as he replied, "Don't worry, I've got it covered."

Jess, who was sitting beside Yue Zhong, arched his brows, before settling back down. He believed in the prophecy and was naturally a devout follower of Yue Zhong. In terms of wealth, a single RH2 was already worth more than a hundred million, with over 200 RH2s, Yue Zhong could sell any and still afford to spend like a king.

Suddenly, the stage started to be covered with smog, and when the smoke dispersed, a lady with a head of blond hair, her figure explosively sexy, appeared with a piano while dressed in a white nightgown.

"Ibis!!"

"Ibis, I love you!!"

"..."

The entire stage erupted in excited cheers once again.

The blond lady on stage had an incredibly gentle demeanor to her, and she was the epitome of tenderness.

She broke out in a sweet smile, before sitting herself in front of the piano, and her slim fingers began to dance all over the piano.

The melodious sounds of the keys floated throughout the entire stadium.

The moment Ibis played, even an uncouth person like Yue Zhong felt enthralled.

However, the playing was just slightly lacking in terms of that mesmerizing quality about Qi Qing'er's voice. While the tender and gentle quality of Ibis might make her a goddess among ordinary women, compared to even the proud queen Liu Yi Chen, she was also somewhat lacking.

After the song was over, the grounds began to roar out with calls of offers.

"I want to gift 500 flowers to Miss Ibis!!"

"A thousand!!"

"A thousand and hundred!!"

"A thousand and two hundred!!"

"...."

Although the numbers of the flowers were over a thousand, more than what most of the rest of the courtesans could command, it was starting to stagnate at 1,800.

"3,000!!!" At this time, the voice of Young Master Zhao rang out.

All the voices stopped, as gazes fell upon him, giving him a sense of smugness. Ibis was also a beauty, as long as he could obtain her, he would have gained face. The envious gazes of the rest also gave him a sense of accomplishment.

At this time, a handsome young man seated at the Clear Wave Pavilion side chuckled, "I will gift 4,000 flowers to Miss Ibis!"

Ibis was from the Clear Wave Pavilion, and there were plenty of men there that preferred her type.

The moment this figure came out, no one wanted to call out any more. After all, it was 4 million, for a woman, it simply was not worth that expenditure,

The eyes of Ibis flashed with a down look before she revealed a smile towards that handsome man.

The handsome man also nodded towards her with a proud look.

Young Master Zhao's countenance alternated between green and white. Just like this, the 3,000 flowers he had given was wasted, and it was like a resounding slap in his face.

"5,000 flowers!"

At this moment, when everyone thought that things were settled, Yue Zhong's indifferent voice rang out.

The face of the handsome man from Clear Wave Pavilion immediately turned rigid, as his expression turned incredibly dark, eyeing Yue Zhong coldly.

Ibis also looked at Yue Zhong curiously, before she smiled sweetly, after all, this man might very well be her first man.

Ibis, Qi Qing'er, and Liu Yi Chen were all top beauties. Be it in terms of their looks, their talents or their figures, they were truly incredible. However, in this Qing Zhang City, they were just toys, and would be toyed with till their bodies broke.

Young Master Zhao's gaze was positively livid as he looked at Yue Zhong, as well as a hint of wariness. A person who was willing to spend so much like this was truly not ordinary.

Lisa was slightly pale as she stammered, "Where are we going to get that cash?!"

Yue Zhong pulled out a gold card.

Lisa's face immediately turned as she went closer to his ear, "That's the reserves of our 3rd Branch of the Eastern Division!! Are you crazy?!"

Yue Zhong replied, "Don't worry, I've got it covered."

Yue Zhong had been a poor bloke prior to the apocalypse. Since he came here and obtained a large sum of money, he did not mind using the cash to slap the faces of those he disliked.

"Ibis, highest bid at 5,000!!" The voice of the emcee rang out.

Ibis smiled warmly at Yue Zhong, before retreating back from the stage.

Smoke rose once more, and this time, a young girl of about 1.36m came out. She had an impressive C-cup bust, her waist slim, and her clothing seemed barely able to cover the important areas. Her looks were rebellious, looking like a teenager that had bad influences.

"Annie!! Annie!!

"That's great!! Annie, you're the best!!"

"...."

Seeing the little girl, there were cheers erupting everywhere again.

Annie was the top beauty of Mild Night Pavilion, she was born with a petite frame and an smoking hot bod. Coupled with her incredible skin and exquisite features, it gave her an innocent and frail, yet sexy and naive at the same time. She looked like the perfect mix of an angel and devil.

Annie smiled wide as she waved her hands, "Hello everybody!! I'm Annie!! Annie will cheer on everyone here, so I hope that all you big brothers and uncles out there will gift Annie with more flowers!"

"Oh!! Oh!! Oh!! Annie!!"

"I love you!!!"

"..."

The calls got louder and wilder, the atmosphere incredibly lively.

Annie chuckled and pulled out a microphone as she began to sing. Her voice was like that of the yellow warbler, and while her melodious voice rang out, she began twisting and dancing, shaking that voluptuous body of hers, giving off a sensual yet electrifying performance.

Her performance was extremely outstanding, where even the idols of Earth would find hard to match. The moment it ended, deafening applause broke out everywhere.

"A thousand flowers!!"

"A thousand and five hundred!!"

"Two thousand!!"

"...."

From the area of the Mild Night Pavilion, the crazy sounds of competition rang out.

Young Master Zhao looked at Annie with lust, but he did not dare call out any price again. He had already given out a large number of flowers to no avail, and he did not want to waste any on her.

"4,000!!"

Just as many of the men were calling out their prices, Yue Zhong's voice rang out yet again, causing every other bid to cease, while their gazes fell upon Yue Zhong. If looks could kill, Yue Zhong would have been dead many times over.

The moment Yue Zhong called out, the rest shut up. No one wanted to compete with him.

"Annie, highest bid, 4,000 Flowers!" The emcee's voice rang out

once more.

Annie blew a kiss towards Yue Zhong and chuckled, "Big brother, thank you!!"

After that, she quickly bounced off the stage.

Not long after that, the familiar smoke shrouded the stage once more, and this time, Qi Qing'er appeared in front of everybody slowly, dressed in a white dress.

"Qi Qing'er!!"

Qing'er!!"

"....."

The moment she appeared, those from the Heavenly Scent Pavilion that had heard her sing immediately roared with adoration and excitement.

That Young Master Zhao was also agitated to the point his body trembled.

Qi Qing'er immediately opened her lips when she appeared, and that mesmerizing and enchanting voice resounded. Within 5 seconds, the entire place was deathly silent, leaving only her magical voice.

Under her charm, everyone felt their stress and anger subside, replaced by a sense of peace.

"This woman, I definitely must have her!!" Up in the box, Carl's eyes were fixed on Qi Qing'er, his eyes filled with greed as he spoke harshly. Her voice was wondrous, even to a member of the Saint Clan, on par with the excitement during the slaughter of a human.

Gretto looked at Qi Qing'er with heartache, as he gritted his teeth in response, "Fine!"

When her voice subsided, the grounds were still peaceful for a lingering 3 seconds, before it erupted in an explosion of applause and cheers.

Many men, regardless of where they were from, stared at Qi Qing'er with greed and obsession.

Qi Qing'er's features were out of the world, and her demeanor was incredibly elegant. Her voice was amazing and she was truly a rare gem even amongst the wide throngs of beauties in Qing Zhang City.

One man who was seated at Mild Night Pavilion's area had a passionate look in his eyes, "I will gift 4,000 flowers to Miss Qi Qing'er!"

The handsome young man who had fought with Young Master Zhao for Ibis also called out, his eyes full of fanaticism and adoration, "I'm gifting Miss Qi Qing'er 7,000!!"

Young Master's eyes were bloodshot as he screamed out somewhat, "10,000!!! I will gift 10,000!!"

Chapter 746: Hunting Party!

The moment Young Master Zhao shouted that number, the whole arena quietened down. 10,000 flowers were worth 10 million Eagle Yuan. It wasn't something anyone could just pull out. Even if they did, few would do so just for a night for a woman.

After all, the previous courtesan champion had only gained at most 4,000 flowers in the previous competition.

Right as Young Master Zhao's bloodshot eyes were staring fixedly at Qi Qing'er, Yue Zhong's bored voice sounded beside him, "20,000 flowers!"

As his voice resounded, everyone's gaze riveted towards him.

By now, all the gazes were either filled with envy, jealousy, wariness and even anger. If he really won, then all the 4 top courtesans would belong to him alone for one night.

Young Master Zhao fixed his gaze on Yue Zhong, his breathing becoming rapid. He seemed to have an internal battle before roaring out like an injured beast, "21,000 flowers!!!"

Spending 20 million on the virginity of a girl, this was a first for Young Master Zhao. However, no matter what, he was determined to obtain Qi Qing'er.

Yue Zhong muttered indifferently, "30,000 flowers!"

When Young Master Zhao heard Yue Zhong's voice, he felt his chest tighten and he almost threw up blood. He stood up and barked loudly, "Are you intending to fight me till the end?!"

Yue Zhong shot him a disdainful glance, his words dripping with sarcasm, "Pauper! If you can't afford it, just scram!"

Young Master Zhao was angered to the point that he spat out blood, his eyes bloodshot as he lashed out savagely, "It's still not certain who the pauper is!! I'll give Miss Qi Qing'er 50,000

flowers!! If you have the capability, you can gift her 60,000!!"

Hearing his words, everyone was truly silent, staring at Young Master Zhao with shock and disbelief. 50,000 flowers, that was 50 million, even to a rich family, that was no small sum! Many of the businessmen only had liquid cash about 200 million at most. This young punk was actually willing to hand over 50 million for one night with a virgin. That was truly shocking.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "100,000 flowers! I can gift Miss Qi Qing'er with 100,000 flowers!"

Yue Zhong's words were like a sledgehammer that slammed into Young Master Zhao's heart, causing him to go pale, as he slumped into his seat and muttered, "Crazy!! This guy is crazy!! He actually got 100 million to buy a girl's virginity, he's mad!!"

"100,000 flowers!!"

"He actually offered 100,000 flowers!!"

"What the fuck! Is he that rich?!"

"...."

The people in the entire stadium began to break out in their own discussions, many sighing with disbelief.

Even Qi Qing'er herself could not help but glance at this young 'playboy' in her eyes.

100,000 flowers were equivalent to a 100 million, there had never been a courtesan champion that commanded such a figure in the history of Qing Zhang City before.

Right at this moment, the excited voice of the emcee resounded, "Qi Qing'er, highest bid 100,000 flowers!! The champion of this competition is Miss Qi Qing'er!!"

Liu Yi Chen, Ibis, Annie all came up on stage, their gazes filled with envy as they looked at Qi Qing'er. Wherever there were people, there would be conflict. This Courtesan Competition was

no different, as it held a strong meaning to these girls. With the identity of a champion, they would be able to lead better lives and had a sense of freedom, as well as privacy. All that they fought for, was purely for the sake of this little bit of power.

Behind the 4 of them, 4 other beautiful and mature ladies stepped out, they were the individual managers of the 4 brothels, Mandy Zhang was among them.

Within the 4 mature ladies, Mandy Zhang's expression was the most radiant and smug. Since Qi Qing'er had been crowned the champion, Heavenly Scent would be at the forefront of the 4 brothels for a period of time until the next competition. They would gain an advantage, and since she was the overseer, she was in for a period of good fortune as well.

The emcee then put on a crown full of jewels on Qi Qing'er's head and smiled, "Congratulations on becoming the top Courtesan!"

Qi Qing'er's face was lack of any joy as she replied, "Thank you!"

The emcee then extended his hand towards Yue Zhong and invited, "Then can we please have our lucky star, Mr. Yue, who has gained all 4 courtesans to come up on stage!"

All 4 ladies looked at Yue Zhong with complicated gazes, various thoughts flashing through their minds.

As Yue Zhong took his time to walk up on stage, countless jealous gazes fell upon him. In the entire history of Qing Zhang City, there had never been a single man who had won all 4 ladies before. Furthermore, the total worth of the beauties this time was incomparable to the past competitions. Other than envy, there were no other feelings that the men had.

Young Master Zhao watched Yue Zhong walk up, his own face pale and his hand gripping the beauty in his arms that even her skin turned slightly bruised.

The emcee came over to Yue Zhong and smiled, "Mr. Yue,

congratulations on becoming the first man to win all 4 courtesans! Do you have anything to say?"

"Who the fuck does he think he is? I'm the one that will get these 4 women!"

Right at this time, from behind the stage, Carl and Gretto came forward with big strides, flanked by dozens of Type 2 Divine Warriors.

The emcee frowned and asked, "Sir, this is not a place you can come, please leave!"

"Go to hell! Ant!" Carl laughed savagely, and grabbed the emcee's head with his claws, before pulling viciously, separating the unfortunate emcee's head together with his spine from his body.

The eyes of the emcee were frozen in shock and fear, as warm blood splattered all over the stage.

Seeing this gruesome scene, everyone was stunned senseless.

Mandy Zhang and the other 3 mature ladies caught sight of Gretto and their faces turned pale as they got on the ground and trembled, "Greetings, esteemed Master Gretto. Your slave did not know Master was coming, and seek your pardon!!"

All 4 renown brothels were businesses owned by Gretto. Without his support, they could not have expanded to such an extent. The 4 ladies were the front for these businesses, and even the rich playboys dare not take them lightly. However, in front of Gretto, they were just lowly female slaves.

When Qi Qing'er and the rest heard the name of Gretto, their faces fell and quickly dropped to the ground. They might be top courtesans, but their positions had been elevated by these existences, and in truth, they were even lower than Mandy Zhang and the other 3.

Carl laughed savagely at Yue Zhong, his gaze sweeping across Lisa and Shaxi, "Hahaha! See that? Lowly human, I'm the first man

for them. You're just a clown! Hahahaha!! Oh yes, hand over those 2 women by your side, and I can spare your life. Otherwise, I will skin you and barbeque you alive!!"

Yue Zhong looked at Carl and spoke coldly, "No, I won't hand them over. In any case, even if I were to hand them over, you will still want to kill me, beast."

Carl had a murderous look in his eyes, and he was a beast in human form. As long as they unleashed a rampage, they were unstoppable and could not be reasoned with.

Carl laughed out in a cackle, "Hahaha!! Kid! You're right!! Even if you hand them over, I will still kill you, just because I don't like the sight of you!! I want to squash that face like a bug!! However, before I kill you, I will fuck your women in front of you, and show you what despair and helplessness means! Now, let me announce, the Hunting Party commences!! Let us engage in a bloodbath within the entire Qing Zhang City!!"

The moment his words fell, the Flesh-Eaters mixed in within the human crowd showed expressions of glee, and they began to pounce on the humans beside them.

One mercenary had just stood up when a claw exploded through him, piercing into his heart and digging it out. A Flesh-Eater stood behind him cackling with mad laughter, devouring the heart.

Another businessman tried to flee towards the exit, but just as he reached it, he discovered that the gates were sealed shut.

One Flesh-Eater appeared suddenly before him, grabbing him and biting down viciously on his throat. A large amount of blood splattered all over the Flesh-Eater, giving him a demonic appearance.

"Save me!! Save me!!!"

Young Master Zhao screamed out with a pale expression.

8 Flesh-Eaters charged right at him. The bodyguards by Young

Master Zhao's side stood up, and in the ensuing battle, some of them were torn apart into many pieces, blood, and organs flying everywhere.

Very soon, the bodyguards were all killed, leaving the ground full of blood and limbs.

Young Master Zhao kneeled as he pleaded, "Please let me go! I'm the son of the businessman Zhao Tian Ba. I'm willing to pay 10 million Eagle Yuan, as long as you let me go, I can pay 10 million... no! 20 million!!"

"Go to hell! Trash!!" One of the Flesh-Eaters laughed savagely and unleashed a fist towards Young Master Zhao, causing his head to burst open in a shower of red and white matter.

The entire arena was filled with the screams and cries of humans, with blood and death everywhere, as though Hell had descended on them!

Chapter 747: Burning Carl to Death!

Screams and wails filled the entire place, while the 8 ladies on stage trembled in fear.

Mandy Zhang had received the love and care of Gretto, and she braced herself to ask, "My liege if things go on like this, the entire Qing Zhang City will be gone."

Many of the men were businessmen and mercenaries from all corners of the world. They were the source of Qing Zhang City's wealth as well. If the news of this were to spread out, then the prestige of Qing Zhang City would go down the drain. Few would come, and there would not be any opportunities to flourish anymore.

Gretto had always maintained the peace of this city and did not allow hunting parties in broad daylight, purely to keep the reputation of Qing Zhang City intact.

Carl looked at the sensual Mandy Zhang and laughed cruelly, "Gretto, I want to eat this woman. Do you object?"

When Mandy Zhang heard this, she became extremely pale, her eyes falling upon her master Gretto, pleading for his help. Of all the people present, only Gretto had the means to save her.

Gretto laughed out loud in disdain, crushing her hopes, "Whatever! She's just a lowly human after all."

Mandy Zhang's face immediately turned pale, as despair overcame her. No matter how much effort she had put in to maintain and run Heavenly Scent Pavilion, or how much she sought to please him, in his eyes, she was just a lowly human slave. His words crushed her hope, and her eyes were filled with despair and fear.

Carl reached out to pinch her cheeks, his face wearing a twisted smile, "Hahaha! Hear that? Even your master Gretto had

abandoned you!! Little bitch!!"

Even humans had a dark side to them, a lust for violence. Since the Flesh-Eaters were evolved from zombies, the blood in them was filled with even more violence and savagery. Carl was one of the more sick and twisted individuals even among the Saint Clan, he loved to see the despair on women's faces, giving him a kick when he devoured them.

Mandy Zhang flinched slightly, her eyes filled with despair. She knew there was no point in resisting, since it would only cause her to be tortured more.

Carl laughed savagely, as he struck out with his right claw towards her heart, "That's it!! Let me taste that despair in your heart!!"

Right at this moment, a cold blade swung towards Carl at the speed of sound.

Carl's face turned ugly as he leaped backward. His terrifying speed helped to evade that killing blow from Yue Zhong, however, his right claw fell to the ground in a spray of blood.

Gretto looked at Yue Zhong with his eyes narrowed, "Type 3 Divine Warrior?"

Carl also shot Yue Zhong a wary look, his face beyond shock, "Who are you?!"

"Since you guys don't want them, then these women are all mine. You can all go to hell!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a chilly light, as he burst forth with his Shadow Steps, with his palm outstretched, a powerful Flame Dragon shot towards Gretto and his subordinates.

After enhancing the Second Order Devil Flame thrice, its might more than double its previous strength. In a breath, the flames immediately consumed Carl, Gretto and the dozens of subordinates behind them.

With a loud roar, a dozen Flesh-Eaters of Type 2 Divine Warrior strength were instantly incinerated.

Carl and Gretto had Type 3 Divine Warrior strength, thus they had leaped up at the sight of the flames, evading it.

Carl had just dodged the flame when Yue Zhong appeared before him, his entire body shrouded in Dark Dou Qi, and a fist covered with scarlet-red flames punched towards him.

Carl's eyes lit up as he laughed savagely, not dodging the blow, sending a claw towards Yue Zhong's heart. As a Type 3 Flesh-Eater, his muscles and flesh could even block bullets from heavy machine guns, as long as his head was safe, and his heart was not destroyed, he could recover from any form of injuries. He was already used to a form of fighting where both he and his opponents would trade blows without caring for themselves.

A nether void in the air suddenly appeared, as 2 sharp bone spikes shot out from within, aiming for Carl's head.

At that moment, Carl's head defied the laws of physics and twisted to one side, as the 2 sharp bone spikes brushed past his face, tearing apart his skin.

With such a maneuver, his claws missed Yue Zhong's heart, slamming into his left shoulder instead. The sharp claws tore through the Type 4 Mutant Beast hide but was blocked by that Level 5 Defense Vest.

Yue Zhong's fist slammed into his body, and instantly, the Devil Flame erupted, consuming Carl in a burst of flames.

"AHHH!!!!!" Carl screamed out in anguish when he was enveloped by the flames, as a huge white light burst forth to protect him, forcefully extinguishing the flames that were burning him.

After that white light radiated out, Carl's breathing turned weak, his speed decreasing by a lot.

Yue Zhong flashed forward and his right fist channeled the Devil

Flame once more towards Carl's face.

"Gretto!! Save me!!!!" Carl's eyes finally shone with fear, as he screamed out loud in a piercing shriek.

Gretto, who had been forced away by the Flame Dragon, roared in anger as he charged over, "Stop!!"

On the stage, the ground shook, and countless steel beams came alive and wrecked the stage, forming a huge steel spear that pierced towards Gretto.

"Lowly human!! Break for me!" Gretto's eyes flashed as his hand shone with a white light, twisting around the huge steel spear, causing it to disintegrate.

When that spear disintegrated, Gretto saw a scene that caused him to be mortified. Yue Zhong's fist had slammed into Carl's face, as the terrifying Devil Flames burst forth again, turning Carl into a human torch.

"Ah!!!" The life force of the Saint Clan was extremely strong, even though Carl was being burned alive, he did not immediately die. Instead, he tried to flee. However, he had barely gotten to a few meters when he was turned into ash by the Devil Flames on him.

"Damn it!!!" Gretto watched Yue Zhong burn Carl into cinders and his heart turned cold, immediately turning around to flee.

From the ground, countless metal beams tore through like dragons and pierced towards Gretto.

Waving his hands, Gretto channeled some white light to turn the steel beams into broken pieces that fell to the ground.

All of a sudden, the pieces trembled as though they were alive and shot towards Gretto.

As he was unable to defend himself in time, the steel beams slammed into his body.

His body was tough, and the steel pieces could not penetrate. As

the pieces stacked up, they caused sounds of clanking, as the entire steel structure locked Gretto in.

The moment Gretto was sealed, countless steel beams shot towards him from all directions, reinforcing the cage around him.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with appreciation, "Strong, he's really a top expert in the resistance."

Jess had been the chief of the Eastern Division, engaging the Flesh-Eaters in combat countless of times. His combat strength was truly one of the top few experts, reaching the peak of Type 3 Divine Warrior strength. Adding on to Gretto's unpreparedness for a fight, he was quickly sealed down.

Seeing Gretto sealed, Yue Zhong quickly retrieved his Electromagnetic Gun and fired a few shots at him.

As the beams of lights shone, the entire steel structure was shot full of holes, the beams of light penetrating even the seal. Fresh blood began to flow from the holes.

After firing 15 times, Yue Zhong felt a sizeable life force entering his body, nourishing and enhancing his constitution.

"Sir Gretto is dead!!"

"Sir Carl is also dead!! Damn it, we need to kill these fellows to avenge them!!"

"...."

The Flesh-Eaters who had been on a killing spree saw that Gretto and Carl were killed. Their eyes flashed with murderous intent, as they abandoned their prey and charged towards Jess and Yue Zhong.

"Bunch of trash, you can all go to hell!" Yue Zhong eyed the incoming Flesh-Eaters, and with a wave of his hand, a Devil Flame Dragon roared out towards them.

The Devil Flame Dragon seemed like it had a life of its own, and

wherever it touched, everything would be incinerated. The moment those Flesh-Eaters came in contact with it, they instantly turned to ash.

Liu Yi Chen and the rest saw how easily Yue Zhong killed the dozens of Flesh-Eaters and their eyes were filled with awe. Especially Liu Yi Chen, her face flushed red as her breathing became rushed. She stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, while a strong, resolute gaze passed her eyes.

On the other side, Jess continued to manipulate the countless steel beams into sharp blades or enormous hammers to blast the Flesh-Eaters, turning many of them into meat paste or were pierced to the ground.

"Retreat!!" After 200 Flesh-Eaters were killed, the rest of them started to feel fear and chose to flee.

Chapter 748: Entering the City Lord's Mansion!

The sealing of the arena represented a cage of death for the majority of the humans. However, to the Type 2 Divine Warriors of the Saint Clan, it was not an issue to scale the walls and flee. Soon, they managed to escape from the place.

There had been over 100,000 people originally, but due to the massacre of the 1,000 Flesh-Eaters, 10,000 of them had been killed. Currently, the entire field was filled with dismembered limbs, blood, and organs. It was practically a slaughterhouse.

Many humans vomited as they looked around, while some others went crazy.

Yue Zhong walked over to Mandy Zhang and the rest, barking coldly, "I'm Yue Zhong, from now on, all 8 of you belong to me. Any issues?"

Mandy Zhang quickly crawled over to Yue Zhong and kissed his shoes, "It's an honor to serve as your slave, my lord!"

Yue Zhong had saved Mandy Zhang from the depths of despair, exhibiting his terrifying strength. She obviously had no objections towards the change of hands in power. In fact, the loyalty to Gretto had long since been thrown out the window.

"It's an honor to serve as your slave, my lord!"

The rest of the women, be in Liu Yi Chen and her haughtiness, the gentle Ibis, the young and cute Annie, the fairy-like Qi Qing'er, they all got up and went over to kiss Yue Zhong's shoes in subservience.

Although many men were willing to spend tons of money on them, ultimately, they were just toys groomed for men's pleasure. Because of that, Qi Qing'er was not extremely excited that she won the Courtesan Competition.

Yue Zhong ordered, "Very good! Mandy Zhang, go and get organized, gather all the women and resources of the 4 brothels. Prepare to leave here immediately. Jess, bring the brothers to protect them. 2 hours later, we'll gather at Heavenly Scent Pavilion! Mandy, go grab more money, even if you have to rob, understood?"

Mandy Zhang's eyes regained her spirit as she replied respectfully, "Yes! Your slave hears and obeys!"

Although Mandy Zhang's strength wasn't anything, she was truly a good aide and overseer. Furthermore, she knew Qing Zhang City like the back of her hand, with her help, Yue Zhong would be able to obtain the resources of Qing Zhang City.

While the Eagle Yuan might be the currency of the Flesh Eaters, any city could use them. Yue Zhong was intending to do some trades. After seeing Qi Qing'er, Yue Zhong had the intention to cleanse this city.

She had an ethereal quality to her, together with her voice, the stress and exhaustion that piled up could quickly disperse. After hearing her voice, Yue Zhong was determined to have her.

After calling out a flurry of orders, Yue Zhong turned around, intending to head out.

Right at this time, Liu Yi Chen raised her head, looking at Yue Zhong with a complicated gaze, "Master, if you intending to head to the headquarters of Qing Zhang City, please bring me along. I've stayed there for 3 years, and am quite familiar with the place. I'll definitely be of help. I also have a strength of Type 2 Divine Warrior, I'll not be a burden to you!!"

Hearing Liu Yi Chen volunteer to follow Yue Zhong towards the most dangerous area, the 6 other ladies had complicated gazes. They did not know what Yue Zhong was like, thus they did not dare speak too much.

After all, there were many sick experts like Carl. There might even be worse cases, with some humans even viler than Carl.

Yue Zhong looked at the beautiful Liu Yi Chen and asked, "Did you naturally awaken your Type 2 Divine Warrior strength or did you obtain through enhancement drugs?"

On this world, it was possible to awaken abilities naturally, as well as through drug-induced means

If it were a naturally awakened power, these people were usually geniuses or talented. Such people would usually have superior abilities and huge, latent potential.

Liu Yi Chen gazed back towards Yue Zhong and replied without fear, "Those Flesh-Eaters don't view as humans, they would not pass us such drugs. I awakened my abilities."

There was a slight pride in her tone, after all, she had been trained to be a queen-type. Even while kneeling, there was a slight arrogance exuding out of her, making it irresistible for some men to want to conquer her.

Yue Zhong's mouth curled up slightly, as he leaped away, "Come with me!"

She immediately became enjoyed, as she followed right behind him.

Qi Qing'er, Ibis and Annie all looked at Liu Yi Chen with envy. In such a cruel world, only those who had value would live well. The moment Liu Yi Chen followed Yue Zhong, her status had elevated from a toy to a warrior, and in this world, the position of a warrior was much higher than slaves.

Yue Zhong's Agility was reaching 331 points, almost 33 times that of a normal person. Even without activating his Shadow Steps, he was near the speed of sound. With a single movement, no matter how much Liu Yi Chen tried, she could not keep up.

"Forget it! Hold tight!"

Yue Zhong saw how Liu Yi Chen was struggling and sighed. He appeared beside her in a flash and carried her, taking in the scent that she was emitting

Liu Yi Chen nestled her head in his embrace like a lost puppy, her jade-like hands grabbing him tightly, her gaze towards him bordering on intoxication.

As he carried her and activated his Shadow Steps, his speed immediately broke the sound barrier, and within 2 minutes, he had reached the manor.

Right now, in front of the manor, there were a few Flesh-Eaters who were guarding. After the hunting party, many of the Flesh-Eaters had charged out of the manor, undergoing a massacre throughout the city, releasing their inner savage and cruel tendencies.

The Flesh-Eaters were a cruel race, and there would be humans disappearing without reason every day, ending up as food for these Flesh-Eaters. It was just that these people had disappeared without a trace, and they were usually from the lowest rungs of society.

However, the moment the Hunting Party was announced, it did not matter if it was the lowest beggar or the rich and mighty, in front of the Flesh-Eaters, they were all prey. They would go all out to satiate their desires and bloodlust, engaging in depravity without consequences, naturally, no one would stay behind.

The few Flesh-Eaters caught sight of Yue Zhong and Liu Yi Chen, and with a hint of greed in their eyes, they quickly pounced over.

Yue Zhong whisked out his Black Tooth Blade in a flash, and the 6 Flesh-Eaters turned into a pile of corpses, dropping onto the ground.

Yue Zhong glanced at the manor, placing Liu Yi Chen down, "Let's go! From here on out, you have to watch out for yourself."

Yue Zhong had something he needed to obtain in the manor, but

the defenses were tight, and he had to give it his 120%.

Liu Yi Chen pulled out a whip as her beautiful eyes glinted, "Yes! Where do you want to go, Lord?"

"The living room of the manor."

Liu Yi Chen leaped forward, "Come with me!"

Yue Zhong followed swiftly behind as they rushed into the deeper parts of the manor.

There were plenty of automatic defenses within the manor, however, the moment they appeared, they would swivel around, breaking free of the manor's controls, and fired at the Saint Clan.

In a split second, dozens of Flesh-Eaters were turned into sieves by the automatic weapons, some of their heads even exploding in a gory fashion.

"Bunch of trash!!"

The scene caused the Flesh-Eater in the control room to be furious, as he immediately dug out the hearts of the technicians beside him.

There were Flesh-Eaters and humans that flowed out of the manor in order to defend, but none of them could even withstand a single strike from Yue Zhong. Adding on to the defenses and systems of the manor coming under Yue Zhong's control, he managed to reach the living room easily.

Hong!

Just as he took a step in, there was a loud splintering of wood as a figure rushed towards Yue Zhong at the speed of sound.

With no intention to dodge or evade, he summoned his Dark Dou Qi, his right fist burning with the thrice-enhanced Second Order Devil Flame and he met the attack head-on with a vicious punch of his own.

The next instant, the Devil Flame roared and enveloped the

figure entirely.

Yue Zhong's body was also pierced by a sharp blade that pierced his lung, making it hard to breathe.

The Type 3 Divine Warriors of the Saint Clan were really strong. If Yue Zhong wanted to win in a fight against them, he could only rely on such a style of battle. Otherwise, if both were to clash, it would be a battle of attrition. He might win in the first 100 blows, but as it went on, he might be able to defeat the opponent, not kill him.

With a white light, the owner of the shadow forcefully extinguished the Devil Flames. At the next moment, with a flash of a blade, his head was cleaved cleanly in two.

Chapter 749: Puppet Box!

Having killed the Type 3 Divine Warrior, Yue Zhong swiftly entered the living room.

He pulled out an LCD Monitor, which had Bai Yi's face on it, smiling as she pointed a calendar and said, "It's right behind this calendar! Behind it, there's a hidden room. However, it's not electronic, so I can't help you there!"

It was precisely because of Bai Yi's help that the systems of the manor went awry. Otherwise, if Yue Zhong wanted to charge through the place himself, he would have had to spend more energy.

Yue Zhong tore the calendar away, revealing a strange lock. The keyhole had a special pattern, without the correct key, it was impossible to open it.

He pulled out his Flame Blade and slashed down directly at the lock. The claw of the Type 4 Flame Bird was the sharpest he had ever seen, and there was nothing it could not slash through yet. Even the enhanced Level 5 Black Tooth Blade paled slightly in comparison.

As the blade flashed, sparks flew, revealing a hidden room behind it, which was filled with countless treasures, crystal horns, and even some advanced weapons.

Yue Zhong took in the sight, feeling shocked at the advanced weapons, "These are... 6-barrel Laser Cannon, powered-suits, multi-purpose helmets with various scanning abilities, laser blades... Has the technology of this world advanced so much?"

The equipment inside this secret room was easily 20 years ahead of the rest of the manor. Even the powered suits, they were capable of withstanding cannon shots and could disperse the recoil and knockback of major heavy firearms.

The bullets from heavy machine guns had powerful knockbacks and force. In Yue Zhong's hands, he had a few Type 3 Mutant Beast hides that could block the bullets, but to normal soldiers, the resulting force would still be enough to injure them heavily, if not kill them.

The powered suit inside this hidden room would be able to make up for that, as long as a person wore it, he or she would be like a tank that could charge through the battlefield unhindered until the suit was destroyed.

Yue Zhong quickly swept up all the items into his storage ring and wore the multi-purpose helmet.

The moment he put it on, the visor flickered to life, and a radar wave rippled outwards in all directions, taking in all information and sending it to Yue Zhong's mind directly.

The information flow was incredibly detailed and complicated, causing even the movement of a small ant 400m to be transmitted to him. If anyone else wore the helmet, they would have to tweak the settings and limit the flow. However, with Yue Zhong and Bai Yi's help, it was an incredible aid.

Bai Yi chuckled, the information flow directly intercepted by her, leaving only important information for battle.

All Yue Zhong had to do was to stand there, and he could already see the entire manor and the dozens of soldiers currently making their way towards him. He could see everything clearly.

At the same time, Bai Yi was able to make a judgment based on the information of the movements, breathing and heart rate of the soldiers to determine their combat strength and provide a detailed assessment. She summarized the information and transmitted it to Yue Zhong.

"Let me test the might of this incredible equipment." Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and brought out the 6-barrel laser gun, firing out

at a wall.

A number of laser beams fired out the living room.

The soldiers watched in horror as their comrades had their heads blasted off.

Following the feedback from the helmet, Bai Yi then pulled up multiple crosshairs, leaving Yue Zhong to aim and fire. He didn't even need any marksmanship, as long as he relied on the crosshairs, he could easily kill the soldiers. It was even simpler than playing an FPS game.

Within a minute, 40 guards of the manor with Type 2 Divine Warrior strength had their heads vaporized, while the rest had fled out of the manor grounds.

Yue Zhong could sense the fleeing manor guards and sighed, "A powerful A.I and advanced equipment are truly compatible!"

Having obtained both, even Liu Yi Chen would be able to deal with a Type 3 Divine Warrior easily.

Bai Yi wore a confident smile, "If you wish to manufacture such helmets and laser cannons, with my help, as long as you have a platoon, I can assist them in killing a Type 3 Divine Warrior. Of course, that is under the condition that they're not taken out first. With an entire company, we can definitely eradicate one easily."

Yue Zhong replied with a laugh, "Relax, I will definitely produce enough equipment for you to exhibit your prowess."

Back on Earth, Yue Zhong already had decent factories and plants set up, together with the support of his research teams. He had even produced the laser gun already. As long as he sent these weapons back, he could quickly research them out. Of course, the imitations might not be comparable to the original, however, if he could obtain the actual blueprint, then it would be a different story.

He continued asking, "Oh yea, Bai Yi, are you able to hack into

the mainframe of the Saint Clan City?"

Bai Yi revealed a thoughtful expression, before explaining swiftly, "Not at here. The region where the Saint Clan City is located is pretty far off, and it's hard for most electronics to infiltrate. It must be after entering the city, that I will be able to take control of their systems. Based on past combat experiences, there are Type 5 Divine Warriors within the area they are keeping their mainframe. These Type 5 Divine Warriors are in charge of sealing the area. To hack the system without being found out, I would need a system that is linked to the mainframe. Using the soundwave method would just alert them."

The Super A.I. was not omnipotent, while the technology of the world was much more advanced than Earth, after countless battles, much of it had been lost. Many bases and equipment had been destroyed, severely limiting what Bai Yi could do.

If she was given the internet, her power would be incredibly frightening.

Having her answer, Yue Zhong gave up on getting her to hack the mainframe. After all, any Type 5 Divine Warrior was a terrifying existence. With his current strength, going against them would be tantamount to suicide.

His gaze then landed on a metal box about the size of a palm within the room, and his eyes immediately lit up with desire, swiftly opening it.

When he opened the box, it revealed a round hole to place nucleus in, at the same time, there were strange runes and symbols all around the indent.

Yue Zhong showed it to Bai Yi and asked, "Puppet Box, this is the Puppet Box? Bai Yi, how should I use this Puppet Box?"

The moment the Puppet Box was delivered to the manor, Bai Yi had discovered it, and she quickly informed Yue Zhong about it,

strengthening his resolve to attack the manor.

With Bai Yi present in those surveillance cameras, treating them as her eyes, together with her capabilities, she could tell the happenings of different things happening everywhere.

She swiftly replied him, "Put in crystal horns, beast nuclei or even crystal stones. Any of those items with energy within them can be transformed by the Puppet Box, then together with the tier or level of inscriptions and runes you can command, it will automatically translate into the channeling. Only when a living thing is unconscious, heavily injured, or when it is willing, then you can utilize the Puppet Box and place it at the target's head, and you'll be able to control the other party, just like a puppet. The Box can currently release up to the Type 9 runes. The higher the tier, the more stones needed. In order to condense the Type 4 Rune, you'll have to utilize Type 4 nuclei, crystal horns, crystal stones, or alternatively, 50 Type 3 nuclei, crystal horns or crystal stones."

Yue Zhong's heart shook slightly, as he looked at the huge chest of Type 3 crystal horns in the room and grinned, "That many eh? Fortunately, there is enough here."

In this world, there were powerful Mutant Beasts similar to Earth, and they had nuclei, while the Mutants had crystal horns. These were all energy sources, thus, the Saint Clan likely traded using such items.

The room held most of Gretto's possessions that he had accumulated over a hundred years. Just the number of Type 3 horns was over 300, and there were even 2 Type 4 horns.

Yue Zhong swiftly threw 50 Type 3 crystal horns into the box, which quickly turned into pure energy.

After the 50 Type 3 crystal horns were fully transformed into energy, a rune that contained the words 'Puppet' flew out from the Puppet Box, landing on Yue Zhong's arm.

Bai Yi spoke up, "Drip your blood on it, and it would be tied to your soul, next time, you can make use of this rune to control other living things."

With a swish of the Flame Blade, a drop of blood fell onto the rune, and Yue Zhong instantly felt a connection with it. Using his thoughts, the rune began to float and flew around according to his wishes.

Chapter 750: The Airship arrives!

Yue Zhong continued to dump more nuclei into the Puppet Box, constructing over 50 Type 3 Puppet Runes, as well as 2 Type 4 Puppet Runes.

As he was happily engrossed in creating the runes, Bai Yi's warning sounded, "Be careful, Master, there's a strong enemy seated in a Force Combat Ship moving at fast speeds towards us. They will reach Qing Zhang City in 5 minutes. Within their forces, there are 2 Type 4 Saint Clan members, 20 Type 3 and 100 Type 2. Please prepare to fight or to retreat."

When Yue Zhong heard that, his face fell, "2 Type 4 Saint Clan members!!"

After gaining 200 RH2s, his military might had already exceeded Red Rock City. If he wanted to, he could definitely conquer Red Rock City. However, the Saint Clan's strength was not to be underestimated, if he took over Red Rock City, the moment a Type 4 Saint Clan was sent to assassinate him, he would be done for.

If it were just 1, he had the confidence to at least work with Shaxi to deal with the enemy.

However, with the appearance of 2, the strength was way above his current threshold.

In a frontal clash, any Type 4 Saint Clan member could easily kill Yue Zhong.

His countenance ugly, Yue Zhong quickly asked, "Are you able to control the defenses of Qing Zhang City?"

Bai Yi replied, "Yes! Currently, all the defenses of Qing Zhang City are already within my control."

"Awesome, show me what they're capable of!"

"Yes!"

Instantly, a flurry of information was transmitted to his brain, allowing him to understand and control the defenses of the city.

In the distance, there was a ship made out of steel, its length 150m, height 15m, and it looked incredibly sci-fi as it flew towards Qing Zhang City.

Within the spacecraft, there was a handsome man sipping a glass of virgin blood. Beside him, there were 4 blond women with barely any clothing on them.

The 4 women were trembling slightly, obviously afraid.

The handsome man looked towards a blue-haired woman with beautiful features and a hot figure sitting opposite him, grumbling, "Anya. How many times have I told you, I'm going to work, not to play with women? Your presence is really annoying, you know?"

"Duanmu Sheng! Enough with your bullshit! You belong to this Lady, this Lady will never allow you to be close to other women! If you dare to mix with other female members of our race, I'll kill you!"

Anya looked at the blond women beside the handsome man, and her right hand shot out, swiftly making its way towards his heart.

"Are you fucking insane?!" Duanmu Sheng's face fell as he dodged, disappearing from his location.

Anya's claws then swept to the side, and in a flash, the 4 beautiful blonds were sliced into 6 different parts, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

Duanmu Sheng looked at the ladies and his countenance turned ugly, "Anya! What the fuck! You killed my food! What do you expect me to eat these few days?"

Anya replied with a cool tone, her nails retracting, tearing the hearts from the 4 women and devouring them, "Once we're at Qing Zhang City, there will be plenty of food, why worry?"

He snorted coldly in response, before sitting down, "Hmph! I heard that the Seed of Hope of the humans has appeared. Is this for real?"

Anya chuckled, "It's true. The Saint Clan City had caught a few humans from the other world, called Earth. It seems to be a backward world, with few experts. Once the Gates of Hell are fully opened, there will be our hunting grounds. There's no radiation there, and with the clean water, Earth will become our paradise in the future!"

Duanmu Sheng also nodded, he was extremely confident in the Saint Clan.

As the 2 of them engaged in idle banter, the huge spacecraft quickly arrived above Qing Zhang City.

The moment it arrived, a number of anti-air missiles suddenly fired up, at the same time, 48 37mm heavy machine guns started to spew their bullets at the air, forming a terrifying net of firepower.

8 RH2s appeared and fired their laser cannons at the spacecraft as well.

As the spacecraft was not prepared for such a sudden attack, with no time to mount a defense, the entire spacecraft was struck, as multiple explosions sounded out.

At the same time, a number of laser beams also penetrated the body of the ship, causing a number of the Saint Clan warriors to be killed instantly.

Yue Zhong held the 6-barrel laser cannon and fired according to Bai Yi's instructions, as the laser beams shot out, many of the Type 3 Saint Clan members had their heads obliterated.

If it were a frontal assault, it would be tough to deal with a Type 3 Saint Clan member. However, from afar, he was engaging in sniping, and not a single Type 3 Saint Clan member could defend against him.

"Congratulations, you have gained +10 Endurance."

In half a minute, 14 Type 3 Saint Clan members were killed by him, and the life force entered his body, enhancing his constitution once again.

After dealing with 14 Type 3 Saint Clan members, he swiftly took off the helmet, and handed it together with the laser cannon to Liu Yi Chen, who was wearing the battle suit, saying, "Put this on, fire at the red crosshairs!"

Liu Yi Chen did not question him as she quickly put them on, before firing at the distance, "Yes!"

The moment she put the helmet on, with Bai Yi's support, she became a mobile cannon, firing laser beams one after the other, killing the many Type 2 and Type 3 Saint Clan members.

As for Yue Zhong, he looked up to the sky.

When Bai Yi had controlled the defenses to attack, her first target was the engines. The huge spacecraft had tough defenses, but with the internal explosions as well as the external assault, it began to break apart.

With a loud explosion, the entire spacecraft combusted and was enveloped in flames, turning into a huge fireball that descended towards the ground.

Yue Zhong's pupils constricted as he could make out 2 distinct features falling from the skies, "Not dead!! Damn those freaks!!"

Those who could have escaped from that were obviously only the Type 4 Divine Warriors.

Below, the entire defenses of Qing Zhang City had been engaged, as they swiftly adjusted their targets, aiming for Duanmu Sheng and Anya.

The countless bullets formed a huge net that blasted towards the 2 Type 4 Divine Warriors as they were still in mid-air and could

not change directions. Furthermore, Bai Yi had calculated all possible avenues of escape and completely sealed them down. If he was the one in their shoes, Yue Zhong was sure he would die.

At this time, a huge ball of white light shrouded the 2 of them, blocking the rain of bullets.

They quickly descended in a breath, shooting for the ground like a meteor.

The moment they landed, their senses screamed with danger and they hurriedly twisted their bodies.

15 laser beams fired out at their positions, with 2 of them piercing Duanmu Sheng, disabling his right hand. The other beam shot through Anya's abdomen, causing a large bloody hole, looking extremely serious.

Yue Zhong had activated the defenses of Qing Zhang City and with Bai Yi's help, they managed to injure these 2 Type 4 Divine Warriors. If it had been any Type 3 Divine Warrior, they would have perished.

"Now!"

Yue Zhong roared out, activating his Shadow Steps, charging for the 2 of them.

Shaxi's eyes flashed with bloodlust, with a tap of her foot, she instantly shot past Yue Zhong like a cannonball, making her way towards the 2 Saint Clan members.

Near them, a number of buildings collapsed as the steel beams twisted out, turning into sharp spears that shot towards Duanmu Sheng and Anya.

"Break for me!!" Anya's face was contorted with fury as her nails grew to an astonishing length, slicing apart those steel spears.

When those broken steel pieces landed on the ground, they suddenly shot towards Anya again.

She looked towards the direction of Jess and laughed cruelly, "Petty tricks!! Watch how I tear you lowly ants apart!!"

With that, Anya suddenly disappeared from her location, causing the shrapnels to miss their target.

Jess's face fell as he tapped his foot and retreated explosively, a huge sense of death looming over her.

"Go to hell!!"

At the next instant, Anya had appeared within 20m of Jess, revealing a savage grin. Her right hand shot out with her nails coiling and twisting like poisonous snakes towards his heart.

A shield appeared in front of Jess to block.

In response, Anya's nails sliced through the shield like tofu, piercing towards Jess's chest without any slowing in momentum.

Chapter 751: Puppet Rune!

Seeing Jess about to be pierced by Anya's claws, a bright red shadow suddenly appeared, sending a fist towards Anya. The impact caused Anya to shoot back towards a building, slamming into the structure.

"It's her!! She's actually a Type 4 Divine Warrior. The Leader actually has such an expert with him! Amazing!" Jess turned to look at the red figure with a pale face, discovering her to be Shaxi. His heart leaped with excitement and celebration.

After sending Anya flying with a fist, Shaxi flickered and leaped towards her position.

"Stop!!!"

Duanmu Sheng roared out as he sent a number of sharp spikes up from the ground.

Shaxi's fists were full of power, sending them crashing into the spikes like they were nothing. Her charge was valiant, and it seemed nothing could stop in her way.

At this moment, the ground split open, as dust flew everywhere, turning into a sandstorm that blew towards Shaxi, looking like a mini-apocalypse.

With that terrifying sandstorm blanketing her, Shaxi could only choose to retreat.

At this moment, 15 laser beams fired towards Duanmu Sheng, forcing him to twist and evade the incoming assault.

Following his evasion, the raging sandstorm dispersed.

"Fucking human bitch, I'll kill you!!"

With a roar, Anya charged out from the building, screaming at Shaxi while staring daggers at her.

All of a sudden, Anya felt a sudden sense of danger. She leaped to

the side without thinking, as a number of electromagnetic beams shot towards her, one striking her right shoulder and dismembering her entire right arm.

With a grievous injury to her abdomen and her right arm torn, if it were any other human, the person would be dead. However, Anya looked towards the direction of the shot with a savage expression and noticed Yue Zhong staring coldly at her.

Yue Zhong activated his Second Order Stealth, enabling him to sneak an attack on Anya. However, at that instant of his attack, he could not fully repress his killing intent, thus alerting her.

"Fucking human!! You dare injure me!!" Anya was beyond infuriated now, screaming madly. With a flash, she quickly scaled the building next to her, pulling her closer to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong saw Anya's terrifying speed and his pupils constricted, "Fast! Truly a Type 4 Divine Warrior. Even with such injuries, she still has so much power!"

"Give me your heart!"

In barely 3 seconds, Anya's ghastly expression appeared before Yue Zhong, reaching out with those sharp claws of hers at his chest.

"Illusion?"

The moment Anya's claws pierced through 'Yue Zhong', he actually dissolved, turning into dust, leaving behind a bewildered Anya.

"Fool! Go to hell!" Yue Zhong had activated his Second Order Stealth and was hiding in ambush. He laughed coldly and pressed down on a button in his hand.

Hong!!

The remote-controlled explosive beneath Yue Zhong's clone immediately exploded out, enveloping Anya, causing her to be

blasted to one side, taking her remaining arm as well as a leg.

The remote-controlled bomb was this world's most advanced remote-controlled bomb, meant to deal with RH2s and tanks. Even as Type 4 Divine Warrior, Anya's flesh was not so tough.

However, her life force was still incredibly strong, even after the explosion claimed a hand and leg, she had not died. Instead, her body laid crumpled on the ground as blood flowed profusely from her wounds.

Yue Zhong went towards her in big strides, discovering that many of her wounds were already healing. Flesh and blood vessels were repairing at a speed visible to the naked eye, as muscle and cells grew out like plants on fast-forward. If there were no other accidents, she would definitely regenerate in 30 minutes.

Of course, such regeneration required a lot of stamina and strength, after 30 minutes, she would be back to herself, but her fighting prowess would definitely be at 50% or less.

Anya's eyes flashed with fear as she pleaded, "Don't kill me!! I don't want to die! Human, let me off. As long as you do, I can guide you to Saint City and wash your blood, allowing you to join us as a Saint Clan member!! At that time, you will be above all other humans, and you can gain any women that you want. You can kill any enemies that you want. You can even activate huge armies of the Saint Clan to crush your enemies! You can also gain eternal life!"

Anya had killed thousands of humans without much thought, but when it came to her imminent demise, she was unwilling, even fearful.

"Relax, I won't kill you. You still have much use to me!"

One of the Type 4 Puppet Rune flew out from his hands and stuck towards Anya's forehead.

The moment it entered, Anya's features began to twist, before

she screamed, "Puppet Rune!! This is a Puppet Rune!! You've gained the Puppet Box!!"

"Even if you have obtained it, it's useless!! I'll never become your puppet!!" Anya continued to scream wildly while her features were twisted, as white light radiated from her, attempting to block the Puppet Rune from entering her.

"It's useless!" Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold as he stepped on Anya's chest, his strength exploding out.

She spat out a mouthful of blood and the Puppet Rune immediately entered her, causing her to struggle with pain.

The twisting and contorting went on for 5 seconds, before the unwillingness and rebellion in her eyes disappeared, leaving only respect and obedience, "Anya greets Master."

He nodded in satisfaction, before bringing her limbs over to her.

The flesh grew out like tendrils, reconnecting with the broken limbs. Although the Saint Clan had an incredible recovery ability, allowing the limbs to regrow would take up too much strength and stamina.

Since he was done, Yue Zhong turned to look into the distance.

Currently, Duanmu Sheng and Shaxi were engaged in a mad combat against each other. Shaxi's speed was fast, while Duanmu Sheng could control the ground. Both parties were going all out, and neither was stronger nor weaker than the other.

However, Duanmu Sheng had suffered some heavy injuries when he was falling, while Bai Yi was still assisting Liu Yi Chen and controlling the 8 RH2s to fire at him constantly, forcing him into impossible positions, and injuring him further.

At the moment when Anya was plotted against by Yue Zhong, Duanmu Sheng had managed to spare a look, noticing her at his feet.

"Fuck! Was Anya done in by that male human?"

Seeing this, Duanmu Sheng became incredibly anxious. In front of him, there was a Type 4 Divine Warrior whose strength seemed to be at least 10 or 20% above his. At the same time, he was surrounded by many incredible marksmen, if he continued on like this, there was no chance of survival.

As someone with experience from countless battles, he immediately made a decision, splitting the earth and summoning another sandstorm towards Shaxi.

As she flashed about in order to dodge the sandstorm, it only served to follow her, leaving her no choice but to struggle within.

Duanmu Sheng controlled the ground and could call sandstorms, his power was also recognized as one of the stronger ones among the Saint Clan Type 4 Divine Warriors. As long as he had the ground below him, few could best him in combat.

Duanmu Sheng then made use of the chance to disappear in a gust of wind.

At this time, Anya, who had been lying on the ground, shot out a claw towards Yue Zhong's chest.

Yue Zhong turned to look at her in disbelief, before spitting out a mouthful of blood and dropped to the ground.

Anya quickly looked up to scream at Duanmu Sheng, "Duanmu Sheng, quick save me!! Otherwise, when I make it back to the Saint Clan City, I'll be sure to give you hell!!"

He turned to shoot a dirty look at her, hesitating for a moment, before flying over towards her. Anya had a Type 5 existence backing her from her clan, while he was just an ordinary Type 4 Divine Warrior. If he offended her family, he would definitely not have it easy.

He shot over and looked coldly at Yue Zhong's corpse on the ground, before turning to look at Anya, whose injuries were

serious as she curled on the ground. His nose was acute, and he could smell that the blood was definitely Yue Zhong's, hence, he relaxed.

Anya continued to shout at him, "Carry me!! Take me away from here!! As long as you take me away, I promise not to bug you anymore, and I will get my family to help you!!"

He took a deep breath before replying, "Fine!! As long as you swear not to stick to me, I'll take you away!!"

Being hounded by her all these years was a nightmare to him, he was not willing to let it continue.

She shouted shrilly, "I swear it!! Quick!! Take me away!! I don't want to stay here a moment longer."

Chapter 752: Type 4 Puppet!

Duanmu Sheng did not hesitate and bent over to pick up the recovering Anya.

All of a sudden, she screamed out, "Watch out!!"

His heart turning cold, Duanmu Sheng swiveled around to look, however, he discovered nothing. A strong sense of foreboding immediately loomed over.

Anya smiled savagely, her sharp nails immediately extending and piercing Duanmu Sheng's body into two. His body, which could even defend against heavy caliber bullets, was ripped apart, with blood and organs splattering everywhere.

"WHY!!!" Duanmu Sheng roared in anguish, his arms had been shredded apart.

With such a sneak attack at a close distance, Duanmu Sheng had absolutely no way of defending himself.

Yue Zhong, whose abdomen had been split apart, stood right up, his electromagnetic gun pointing at Duanmu Sheng's chest as he pressed the trigger, "Let me tell you, it's because she is my puppet, and you will be my next Type 4 puppet as well!"

The electromagnetic beam blasted Duanmu Sheng's chest, piercing it, as he stared vengefully at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong then pointed and one of the Type 4 Puppet Rune condensed towards Duanmu Sheng's forehead.

"Puppet Box!! You actually obtained it!! Fuck!! Beast!!"

As the rune entered Duanmu Sheng's forehead, he began to twist and turn in pain while screaming, before abruptly stopping, his eyes filled with veneration towards Yue Zhong, "Master, I'm Duanmu Sheng!"

"Very good!!" Yue Zhong looked at him and heaved a sigh of

relief, his heart overjoyed. Just like this, he gained 2 additional Type 4 Divine Warriors.

Shaxi and Shamie were from the Mutants, while they might be willing to follow him, they were independent contractors, and would not follow Yue Zhong's every command.

As for now, with Duanmu Sheng and Anya under his control, he could command them to fight, and his combat tactics had more room for improvisation.

With a gust of wind, Shaxi appeared beside Yue Zhong, looking at Duanmu Sheng and Anya with a strange look.

She noticed their abnormal behavior, and could not help but ask with a frown, "What's with them, Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "I've used the Puppet Box to control them, they belong to me now."

Shaxi immediately shot Yue Zhong a cold look filled with killing intent, "The Puppet Box?! I don't wish to see you using it on us, if I find out that you did so, I'll kill you!!"

The Puppet Box could condense the Puppet Runes, as long as anyone was controlled by it, unless Yue Zhong allowed it, they would forever remain as Yue Zhong's puppets. Such a mysterious treasure gave Shaxi some worries, and she did not wish to become his puppet.

Yue Zhong replied with a slight smile, "As long as our partnership is strong, I would definitely not utilize these on you guys."

Yue Zhong cooperated with the Mutants, on one hand, it was to be on guard against them as well. Based on their savage natures, if they were not careful, his human faction would be torn apart by them.

Shaxi glared coldly at Yue Zhong as a warning before turning around to leave.

Yue Zhong then gave an order to Duanmu Sheng and Anya, "Go kill all the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires in this city!"

The Flesh-Eaters and Vampires within Qing Zhang City were definitely no use to him, hence he did not intend to leave them alive.

"Yes! Master!"

The both of them bowed with respect before disappearing into the dark.

Soon after, the ghastly screams and wails of the numerous Flesh-Eaters and Vampires rang throughout the city.

While Duanmu Sheng and Anya had expended much energy to regenerate themselves, their power was still something way above the Type 2 Divine Warriors within the city. At the same time, their senses were particularly sensitive towards their own race, easily locating them, before tearing them apart.

As for the 8 RH2s, under Bai Yi's control, they began to scan for and fired at any Flesh-Eaters or Vampires they discovered, tearing them to shreds.

Having handed the cleansing operation to Bai Yi, Yue Zhong went towards the Heavenly Scent Pavilion.

On the way, there were countless limbs, fresh blood and organs spread all over the streets. Yue Zhong saw many dead humans with unwillingness in their eyes. The entire Qing Zhang City had turned into a hell of a slaughterhouse for the humans.

This was the gruesome result of the Hunting Party of the Saint Clan. Once it began, most of the humans would be slaughtered, in order to satiate their bloodlust and hunger.

Yue Zhong took all these in, his heart bursting with fury and sorrow. The humans of this world were truly like cattle, with no control over their fate. Even Young Master Zhao and the rest of the rich playboys were merely pigs for the Saint Clan to kill. There was

no sense of security. Of the resistance soldiers, most of them lacked basic knowledge, with no education, and only knew to fight for their lives and survival.

If Earth were to fall into the hands of the Saint Clan, then humans would really have no future anymore, becoming the livestock for the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires.

"Greetings, Master!!"

When Yue Zhong reached the Heavenly Scent Pavilion, he saw an entire row of women of different ages bowing down, welcoming him with a grand fanfare. There were over 500 women, each of them beautiful in their own right.

Mandy Zhang came up to Yue Zhong dressed in a white dress, smiling with a bewitching charm and introduced, "Master, these are all our quality staff from the 4 top brothels."

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "How much Eagle Yuan did you managed to amass?"

Mandy Zhang replied without skipping a beat, "Due to time constraint, I've managed to gather only 2.5 billion. However, I've also gathered plenty of precious gems, gold, silk, crystal horns and nuclei, total worth 1.5 billion. There is also a Type 4 crystal horn among them."

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened as he patted her shoulder and praised, "Great! Good job!"

A single Type 4 crystal horn was incredibly precious, Yue Zhong only had 2 with him, now he had 3.

Mandy Zhang's smiled as her eyes twinkled, "Thank you for your praise Master!!"

The rest of the 3 managing ladies looked at Mandy Zhang with envy, she was able to gain his recognition and praise, her future was sure to be bright.

Yue Zhong handed her a Level 1 Fireball skill, "This is your reward, as long as anyone works hard for me, I will grant them strength and power."

When Mandy Zhang received the book, she opened it, and the knowledge surged into her. Blanking out momentarily, she then turned towards a fake mountain and started to mutter a curse. A magical array appeared as a fireball flew out, blasting the fake mountain into pieces.

Seeing this, Mandy Zhang was elated and immediately kneeled down, kissing Yue Zhong's shoes to express her loyalty and excitement, "Thank you for granting me strength, Master!! From now on, I'll definitely work hard to keep Master satisfied, until the day I die!!"

When all the women saw this, their eyes were filled with a burning desire and envy.

This world was truly more cruel than Earth. Only those with strength could survive. Without it, they would not even be able to drink water, and if they were not careful, they could become food for others. In such a world, strength was everything.

Of the 4 top brothels, there was not a single lady who did not wish to gain strength. If they could, they would break away from the fate of being a toy for men.

Ibis, Annie, and Qi Qing'er all witnessed how Mandy Zhang gained strength, and their hearts were rocked as well, their gazes on Yue Zhong turning hot.

Yue Zhong then ordered, "Get up! Bring some people to go gather resources and vehicles, in 2 hours, we have to leave Qing Zhang City."

Mandy Zhang stood up, as though she had undergone a rebirth, her gaze filled with confidence and vitality, "Yes! Master!!"

Mandy Zhang swiftly gathered the ladies to spread out to various

parts of Qing Zhang City to carry out Yue Zhong's instructions.

Yue Zhong sat within Heavenly Scent Pavilion, eating some dessert while enjoying Ibis's massage and Qi Qing'er's wondrous voice.

One tall and voluptuous lady with blond hair came up to Yue Zhong and asked, "Master, there are some other people who hope to leave with us, are we accepting them?"

Yue Zhong asked, "How many are there? Are the resources we found enough to support us bringing them to Red Rock City?"

The blond-haired lady replied with concern, "There are 4,000 of them, as of now, our total resources can definitely support the move. However, with such a huge movement, there might be problems along the way."

Yue Zhong responded, "Then accept them, however, make it clear to them before allowing them to join. We are against the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires. If they follow us, it means they are joining us, and they must adhere to every single one of our commands. If they're not willing, they can leave."

Chapter 753: Floxenia!

Originally, there were about 70,000 humans within Qing Zhang City. However, after the Hunting Party, there were only 40,000 left. Of these, only 3,000 were willing to join Yue Zhong.

The remaining 30,000 were not willing to leave Qing Zhang City, after all, there were their possessions and livelihood. Furthermore, there was clean water here. The moment they left Qing Zhang City, all that belonged to them would be taken away.

In this world, migrating was an arduous and risky thing. Without experts to guard them, they would easily be preys for Mutants, Savages, Mutant Beasts, Irradiated Devils and even Living Corpses.

Yue Zhong got Anya to act as their guard while appointing 5 elite Type 2 Divine Warriors from the resistance to be commanded by Mandy Zhang. The entire procession then began to move towards Red Rock City while transporting a mass of resources. With the protection of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, it was sufficient to deter most enemies.

Having made his preparations, Yue Zhong then continued towards the Resistance headquarters.

Qing Zhang City had a clean water source, and it was extremely favorable for humans to live. However, Yue Zhong had no choice but to give up on it, otherwise, when the Saint Clan City sent a regiment, they could easily raze the entire city.

The Resistance headquarters was located about a thousand kilometers away to the east of Saint Clan City, within a huge ruin of a place called Chang Lan.

Chang Lan Ruins were like the Ancient Ruins, it had been an abandoned city in the past, with plenty of Mutant Plants, Living Corpses, Mutant Beasts and Irradiated Devils.

It was precisely such locations that humans had a means of

freedom. Such conditions were so harsh that most of the Saint Clan governing members disdained to even visit. It was like those rich millionaires that did not want to visit the slums.

Throughout the Chang Lan Ruins, there were many heavily radiated areas, and many soldiers were following Jess as they applied for their anti-radiation medicine, before employing their radiation detectors and advanced slowly.

Yue Zhong and his men had managed to clear out a few waves of the Living Corpses, and some small Mutant Beasts. They infiltrated the heavily radiated areas and managed to come to a region which seemed to be full of skyscrapers that had been at the mercy of time and erosion.

"Help!!"

"Ah!!! Save me!!!"

"...."

At this moment, there were the sounds of human screams and wails of agony.

"Prepare for battle, I'll go take a look!"

Yue Zhong left his instructions and immediately rushed towards the source of commotion in a blur.

In a few breaths, he arrived at an area, noting hundreds of humans fleeing madly. Behind the humans, there were a number of human-like creatures, their skin reddish-black, covered with sores and boils. Their eyes seemed to be compound, and they had sharp claws, powerful thighs, and the stench they emitted was extremely horrid and putrid. These were the Irradiated Devils.

There were only about 20 of them, but their movements were agile and quick, the weakest was at least 4 times as strong and fast as a human. They were chasing the humans with fervor, killing them by biting through their throats.

The screams rang out constantly, as many of the humans were helpless against these powerful creatures. With no defense or way to fight back, they could only flee, or be killed.

In fact, there were over hundreds of humans here, if everyone worked together, they could possibly turn the tides and hunt the Irradiated Devils down. However, every single one of them was frightened out of their wits and only sought to flee, hence, becoming prey.

In the face of crisis, the ugly nature of humans began to show itself. In order to live, in order to run faster, many of those behind fought to go in front, pushing the ones in front of them or shoving them away.

"Get lost!!" One middle-aged man ran like mad when suddenly, a girl appeared in front of him, and his eyes turned bloodshot as he reached out to shove her without hesitation.

The girl seemed to execute a dodging maneuver, but her actions were too slow, and she was pushed to the ground. Her bleak eyes seemed to dilate with despair.

One of the Irradiated Devils who was munching on some brain matter immediately charged towards the girl, reaching out to grab her head. Once its claws connect, her brain would definitely be squashed.

At that critical juncture, there was a flash of a blade, and the Irradiated Devil was sliced in two, as the dark pus from its body splattered everywhere.

"These Irradiated Devils are truly a nuisance!"

Following Yue Zhong's shout, Devil Flame burst out from him, turning all the black pus into smoke.

Yue Zhong's figure appeared in front of the little girl as he frowned at the sight of the Irradiated Devils. It was the first time he came across them, however, he had already grasped their

distinct features from Jess earlier.

The difference between the Irradiated Devils and most other strange creatures was that their bodies had a corrosive attribute. Once their pus and blood were spilled, there would be a strong poisonous gas that is released. It could corrode and infect anything it touched. Even Type 4 Divine Warriors could be mutated. It was one of the terrifying poison of this world.

Facing such creatures, the best method was to use the RH2s to eradicate them from afar.

Yue Zhong eyed those Irradiated Devils coolly, and fired a number of Devil Flame fireballs at them, causing them to combust and be consumed in flames.

In a manner of seconds, all 20 had been wiped out by Yue Zhong easily, as the life force from them was absorbed into his body.

After all that, he turned to look at the girl.

He had just turned when the girl replied, "I'm fine, I'm ok."

"What? Did she just read my mind? No way?" Yue Zhong was taken aback, as he assessed this girl in front of him.

The girl had a head of short, blue hair, clear eyes, and although her body was dirty and smelly, he realized her features were distinct and pretty. The only thing was that she seemed to have no expression, and her eyes did not have any sign of life, as though she was a toy that had been broken.

A look of pity flashed past his eyes, such cases were truly all too common here. Once they landed up in the hands of perverts, even the prettiest girls would become like lifeless dolls.

The girl looked at Yue Zhong coldly, her beautiful but soulless eyes, "I truly am able to read minds, but I'm not a toy that was broken! You shameless man!"

When Yue Zhong heard this, he was shocked. He had not said

anything, and was thinking to himself as he looked at this mixed-blood loli, "Mind-reader!! You truly can read minds!! Let me ask you, are you able to hear what I'm thinking right now? What's your name?"

The girl continued to stare at Yue Zhong coldly, "Of course! My name is Floxenia, a Chinese-American, and I'm a freak that can read minds."

"Amazing!!" Yue Zhong's heart leaped with joy as he ignored her stench and carried her, "This is great!! Who would have thought I could gain such a treasure here!!"

Floxenia looked at the celebrating Yue Zhong, her eyes flashing with self-loathe, "Treasure? Am I a treasure? Aren't you afraid of me? I'm a monster that can unearth your darkest thoughts, a monster that even her own father, mother, grandfather, teachers and friends would not want to be with. A freak with no love!"

Due to her powers, Floxenia's family had broken apart, and everyone around her hated and distanced themselves away from her, afraid that their thoughts would be revealed.

There would be darkness in everybody's thoughts, and everyone was afraid of them being revealed. Even the closest of couples would have their secrets and things that they didn't want others to know. Floxenia could lay all these secrets bare, naturally, everyone would avoid her.

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at her, his gaze burning, "Hahaha! Floxenia, that's because you don't know how to utilize your power! I'm not afraid of you, even if you can peer into my deepest thoughts. Because from now on, you are a treasure that belongs only to me! I will teach you how to utilize your power, and keep you by my side. You must listen and obey me. In exchange, I will never abandon you, how's that?"

Mind-reading was a rare and precious skill, not to mention that it was a skill she naturally awakened even before the apocalypse.

Such people were truly talented beyond talented, different from those who fought constantly to improve and enhance themselves like Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had experienced countless battles and had many close shaves with deaths that he could count, relying on the System to enhance him every step of the way. He had become an Evolver also due to using treasures, unlike those heaven-defying ones. He was just an extremely hardworking person. However, he would not underestimate a natural talent, instead, he wanted them all within his control. Only then, he could become strong, extremely strong.

Chapter 754: The Resistance Headquarters!

Flozenia felt touched, no one had ever said anything like that to her before. Because of her power, everyone else had ostracized and bullied her.

In truth, if it wasn't for Yue Zhong becoming a leader of a faction as well as his strength, had it been him before the apocalypse, he would definitely not take the initiative to get close to someone like her. After all, he also had his deepest thoughts that he would rather remain private. However, with his position and strength now, it was entirely different. His perspective and attitude to things were different now, thus he valued Flozenia a lot.

She stared at Yue Zhong and asked, "What if I don't agree?"

He looked at her and did not bother hiding anything, "I will try my best to convince you, however, if you keep rejecting me, there will come a day I'll have to kill you, or turn you into a puppet. Your power is too dangerous and precious, if I can't get it, then no one else can. With your ability, there's no need for me to lie to you. In fact, I'm not a saint anyway! Oh right, my name is Yue Zhong!"

With her ability, it did not matter if he tried to lie, she would be able to tell. Hence, he did not want to as well.

Flozenia immediately hugged back tightly like a cat, "Ok! Then I am willing to become yours, and employ my ability as your desire! In exchange, you cannot abandon me! Hug me tight and let me feel your warmth!"

Yue Zhong had a look of delight as he hugged this little girl tightly, "Alright!! Once we reach our destination, I'll let you take a good bath."

With her ability, Yue Zhong would be able to clear up any traitors or potential rebels.

A fortress could be broken from the inside, with over 100,000

subordinates, there would definitely be a few that were not aligned with him. In fact, many were still hiding their claws, waiting for the right opportunity to strike.

With Floxenia's help, Yue Zhong would be able to weed out the traitors and spies, at the same time, better understand what his subordinates thought.

Mind-reading was an ability most people of authority hoped to have, with it, they could tell who was loyal and who had hidden motives.

Yue Zhong currently hoped to gain more trustworthy and loyal subordinates instead of people who were strong. That was because those with the ability would tend to be ambitious, if Yue Zhong granted them any power, by the time he headed back to base, the master would have changed.

Jess and his men came over, and when he saw Floxenia in Yue Zhong's arms, his eyes flashed with a strange glint, "Leader, this is...?"

Floxenia suddenly spoke up, "Brother Yue Zhong, this man hopes that you don't get too smitten with women, even if you do want to vent your desires, he hopes you vent them on normal women, not young girls. He has mistaken you to be a lolicon. However, he is extremely loyal to you, and is concerned about you, and hopes that you can truly become the savior of this world!"

When Jess heard this, he felt like the sky had darkened, and his expression turned pale. He recoiled in horror, after all, who would feel good about having their inner thoughts revealed?

Floxenia then turned her gaze towards Liu Yi Chen, "This woman called Liu Yi Chen likes you, Brother Yue Zhong. She hopes that when you do 'it' with her, you can spank her with her whip, and step on her face, and trod on her dignity. Although she presents a Queen-image, she actually likes to submit. She hopes for you to conquer her and humiliate her. She is also very loyal to you."

Liu Yi Chen's face turned pale, but at the same time, there was a flush to her face. She felt everyone looking at her. Although she was dressed, at that moment, it felt that she was laid bare naked for everyone to see. At the same time, in her sense of shame, there was a sense of joy.

Many strange gazes fell upon Liu Yi Chen. The soldiers never expected this high and mighty Queen-like character to have such a strange mindset.

Flozenia's gaze then turned to Annie, saying, "This woman called Annie hopes to use her body to charm you into giving her strength. She is full of respect for you, but would not hesitate to use her body in exchange for your protection. She hopes to become the wife of the leader, earning respect and fear, and revels in authority and fame. However, her body is truly soft, and she is able to do all kinds of positions. This is where her confidence lies in."

Annie's innocent features contorted in fear as she shrieked, "Enough!! Enough!! You monster!! Monster!!"

Flozenia then turned to Qi Qing'er, "This woman respects you a lot, Brother Yue Zhong, and she doesn't harbor any hopes of gaining authority. She just has pure respect for you as a subordinate. At the same time, if you want her body, she would not reject, purely because that's the law of this world, it has nothing to do with love or lust. She is a woman with not much hope, and goes with the flow."

Qi Qing'er looked at Flozenia indifferently, not saying anything.

Of the 4 top courtesans, 3 of them followed Yue Zhong, with Liu Yi Chen and Qi Qing'er decided by Yue Zhong, while Annie followed of her own accord.

Now that Jess and the 3 women had been laid bare by Flozenia, the rest could not help but take a step back, eyeing the girl in Yue Zhong's embrace with fear. In their eyes, she was more terrifying than a demon, as none of their thoughts were safe from her.

Yue Zhong eyed Annie and spoke coldly, "Things are like that now! Floxenia can read minds, and she belongs to me, and she is a treasure. Annie, apologize right now!!"

Yue Zhong's voice turned chilly, and Annie immediately felt a sense of fear, apologizing with a slight unwillingness, "Sorry, Floxenia, I shouldn't have said that."

After that, 2 streams of tears flowed down her eyes, as she felt wronged.

Yue Zhong ruffled Floxenia's hair and chuckled, "Floxenia, you shouldn't have done that as well. Don't just speak out everybody's thoughts, this would make it awkward. From now on, whatever you hear, try not to speak it out, unless it has to do with betraying or treachery."

Mind-reading was truly an overpowered ability. Because Floxenia was still young, she did not know how to limit her words, as long as someone was around to guide her, she could exhibit this power to its fullest potential.

Floxenia nodded lightly, "OK!"

Annie looked at Floxenia with envy and jealousy, hoping for the same kind of treatment. That way, she could stand to enjoy the high life.

Jess then pointed to the rest of the survivors who were still shell-shocked, "Leader, what do we do with them?"

The survivors numbered about 400 when they were transported to this world, but after being hunted by the Irradiated Devils, they were left with only a hundred or so. Most of the rest had either chosen to flee towards the radiated areas, turning to Irradiated Devils themselves, or were killed.

Yue Zhong then turned to Floxenia.

She quickly replied, "They're all from Earth."

Yue Zhong replied, "Go let them know our conditions, if they're willing, they can come with us, otherwise, they'll have to find their own way."

"Yes!"

Jess turned around and walked over to the survivors.

These people had no choice when they were teleported from Earth. Without Yue Zhong's help, they would either die at the hands of the Mutant life forms, or die to the radiation, become Irradiated Devils themselves, or even Mutants.

These Irradiated Devils were life forms that were exposed to radiation and did not die, having a different mutation occurring in them. Their bodies would then be highly dangerous sources of radiation themselves. Many humans in such locations would tend to become Irradiated Devils. Mutants are a result of consuming too much radiated water or food in moderate or low areas of radiation.

After taking in those people, under Jess's lead, the entire group began to head further into the ruins.

After walking for about 2km, Yue Zhong and the rest came to a street full of old, dilapidated buildings.

A group of soldiers walked out from a dark alley with assault rifles, their weapons trained on Yue Zhong's group while their gazes wary, "Who are you people?"

Jess took a step forward and announced, "I'm the Chief of the Eastern Division, Jess!"

The leader came up and looked at Jess with suspicion, as well as the other survivors behind, "So it's Chief Jess, I'm Zhang Xing, who are the rest behind you?"

Jess ordered, "These people agreed to join the Resistance. Go settle them in. Bring me to the headquarters!!"

"Yes, sir! Come with me" Zhang Xing replied and prepared to lead

Jess further in.

"Isn't this Jess? I heard you brought Gong Fei to the Eastern Division to take over the 3rd Branch, how come only you are back?"

A voice full of sarcasm rang out, as 3 men and 1 woman walked over.

Chapter 755: Traitor!

The leader was a burly man with a head of red, fiery hair. Every motion of his seemed to exude a bearing of a ruler. Beside him, there was another burly man with ordinary looks and blue hair. On the other side of the blue-haired guy, was a man with spiky hair, and shifty looks.

There was one more lady in black leather, her smoking hot body accentuated through her clothes, and she looked extremely beautiful due to her mixed-blood heritage.

Lisa came up to Yue Zhong and whispered, "The one with red hair is Blazing Flames King Yan. He is the Chief of the Western Division. The blue-haired guy beside him is his best friend Human-Tank Ken. The woman is Snowstorm Queen Sima Bing, and she is the Chief of the Southern Division. The man with spiky hair and braids is TuoTuo Mu, he is an ardent chaser of Sima Bing, and also one of the core personnel of the Southern Division."

Jess ignored Yan's question and asked indifferently, "Where's Gong Chang Tian?"

Yan grinned while sweeping a glance over Yue Zhong and the rest, "He's in the meeting room. Jess, why don't you introduce us to these few gentlemen?"

Sima Bing and TuoTuo Mu also looked towards Yue Zhong, they had already discovered his extraordinary aura. Furthermore, Jess had been walking behind him when they came in, with a look of respect, causing them to be suspicious.

Jess spoke slowly, "This is the prophesied savior from our predecessors over hundreds of years ago. He is Yue Zhong, the man who has the God's Imprint. I've brought the entire Eastern Division to submit to him. This time, I'm here to announce this fact to you guys."

When they heard this, Yan's face changed as his voice turned hoarse, "What? Does he possess the God's Imprint? How is that possible? It should only be a legend!!"

Ken, TuoTuo Mu, and Sima Bing were all taken aback as well, their expressions of disbelief.

The prophecy had passed down over hundreds of years, many had already long since not taken it seriously. Only the lower rungs of the organization still believed strongly in it. At the same time, it was a tool for the Resistance to recruit new blood. With hope, humans would struggle. If despair was the only result no matter how much they fought, then no one would join them at all.

Hearing Jess proclaim this and recognize Yue Zhong's status, Yan and the rest felt threatened, because they knew that Jess was definitely not someone who would just believe blindly.

Yue Zhong stepped forward and pulled up his right sleeve, revealing the God and Devil Imprint, "This is the God's Imprint!"

Zhang Xing, who was leading them to the meeting room, and was part of the lower rungs of the organization, had a huge change of expression, his gaze towards Yue Zhong now filled with veneration and respect.

When Yan saw it, his face turned pale, and he immediately stretched out his right hand to attack viciously, "God's Imprint? You must be an imposter!! Let me tear off this mask of yours!!"

If Yan could take down Yue Zhong, then he could prove that this guy was some fluke, and could deal a huge blow to Yue Zhong's faith.

To Yan, he was unable to accept someone who had not contributed anything and could just stand on top of them just because of some unfounded prophecy.

Yue Zhong drawled indifferently, "No need to kill him, just teach him a lesson!"

When Yan heard those words, his fury erupted, and a huge ball of flames that could melt even steel enveloped his fist. He intended to teach Yue Zhong a lesson.

Sima Bing saw the flames and her face fell, bringing up her own icy cold frost to grab towards Yan's hands, "Yan! You can't do this!!"

Sima Bing did not mind having Yan test Yue Zhong's strength, however, she was not willing to have Yue Zhong killed. After all, she was also in a dilemma towards the prophecy. She hoped that it was real, but at the same time, she was not willing to submit to a stranger who came out of nowhere.

At this time, Duanmu Sheng, who had been standing beside Yue Zhong quietly like a shadow, suddenly struck out. He only executed 2 moves, stepping forwards once, and his hand struck out at Yan's body.

In an instant, a terrifying force exploded out, and Yan was sent flying back, slamming into a wall violently. He spat out a mouthful of blood, his injuries apparently heavy.

A Type 4 Divine Warrior was way above what a Type 3 Divine Warrior could handle. Based on Duanmu Sheng's strength, in a face-to-face contest, he had the confidence to kill Yan in a single move.

"Yan!!" Ken saw Yan being struck heavily and he could not help but roar out in anger, and his muscles tensed up. In such a state, he could withstand even the force of heavy caliber bullets, and his speed could surpass the sound barrier.

With a flash of a shadow, Duanmu Sheng instantly appeared in front of Ken and sent a slap across his chest.

Ken, this huge man over 2m tall with muscles rippling, was immediately sent flying towards a wall, as he spat out a mouthful of blood and slid down while looking at Duanmu Sheng with shock

and fear.

"Type 4 Divine Warrior!!!"

Simba Bing and TuoTuo Mu stared at Duanmu Sheng in shock, after witnessing him defeating 2 of the top warriors of the Resistance so easily. Their bodies tensed in shock as well in preparation for combat.

Type 4 Divine Warriors were truly powerful existences, just one could easily decimate the entire Resistance. Even if they were to utilize all sorts of traps, they could at most cause the entire base to destruct and perish together with this Type 4 Divine Warrior.

Jess replied, "That's right! Duanmu Sheng is a Type 4 Divine Warrior and used to be an expert of the Saint Clan, but he had already been controlled by Leader Yue Zhong through the legendary Treasure of Hope: Puppet Box! He is a puppet that listens and obeys to every command of Leader Yue Zhong!"

Duanmu Sheng was an expert of the Saint Clan, with the Resistance gathering their talents, it would not be an issue ascertaining his identity. Yue Zhong could only make use of this method to win over support from the Resistance.

No one would follow a weak person, even if he or she was the prophesied leader. Initially, Luo Chen had witnessed Yue Zhong's strength for himself, in addition to the God's Imprint, that was why he decided to recognize him. If Yue Zhong was a trash, then even if he had the Imprint, no one would have handed him their authority.

Everyone's gazes fell upon Yue Zhong.

He chuckled lightly and barked, "Duanmu Sheng, kneel!"

Duanmu Sheng immediately got down on his knees with a blank look, just like a puppet.

After being controlled by the Puppet Rune, while those still retained their strength and memories, they had no way of

disobeying their master, at the same time, there was no possibility of having any dissatisfaction or disloyalty.

Seeing the Type 4 Divine Warrior kneeling in front of everybody, they were all shocked.

A Type 4 Divine Warrior was an expert that received respect wherever they went. In the entire Resistance, there was not a single Type 4 Divine Warrior. Such an expert actually kneeled down with a single command from Yue Zhong. This showed his dominance completely, and no one dared to suspect his might.

Sima Bing looked at Yue Zhong with a strange glint and asked slowly, "The Treasure of Hope: Puppet Box should be a weapon that our initial leaders had used against the Flesh-Eaters. Who would have thought that it had ended up in your hands? With its might, it should be easy to control a Type 4 Divine Warrior."

TuoTuo Mu's countenance flickered constantly before he finally smiled at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, can you let us take a look at this fabled Treasure of Hope?"

Flozenia, who was in Yue Zhong's arms, immediately whispered, "Brother Yue Zhong! He wants to take a look and find the opportunity to snatch it away. In fact, he's a spy sent from the Saint Clan! He had already exposed the location of this headquarters to the Flesh-Eaters."

Yue Zhong was astounded and quickly barked at TuoTuo Mu, "TuoTuo Mu! When is the Saint Clan attacking this headquarters?!"

TuoTuo Mu felt rocked by the sudden interrogation and could not stop his thoughts from flowing, but he maintained a bewildered look, "Yue Zhong, what are you talking about? I don't understand what you're saying!"

Flozenia continued to whisper, "The attack is due to happen in 2 hours, simultaneously against all divisions of the Resistance. Due

to the Seed of Hope among the humans, that is to say, the prophesied savior, the Saint Clan does not want to leave the Resistance alone any longer as festering cancer. At the same time, one of the Seeds of Hopes from Africa on Earth has already landed in their hands."

If TuoTuo Mu were not thinking of these, Floxenia could not possibly peer into everything, but once his thoughts were nudged, they would all be laid bare for her to read.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold, cruel light, as he ordered, "Fuck!! 2 hours? Duanmu Sheng, capture TuoTuo Mu and tear his limbs off!"

"Yes! Master!!" Duanmu Sheng's eyes glimmered viciously, and without any warning, 2 sharp spikes burst out under TuoTuo Mu, directly through his legs.

TuoTuo Mu grabbed onto those spikes with fear and screamed out, "AH!!! Chief!! Save me!! Yue Zhong is mad!! No!! He must be a spy from the Saint Clan!! He wants to kill us all!!"

"Stop!!" Sima Bing immediately barked out, and raised her hands, as a white, frosty energy shot towards Duanmu Sheng.

Chapter 756: Cluster!

Duanmu Sheng remained impassive as he waved his hands, sending a wall of earth to block the oncoming frost. When the frost came in contact with the earthen wall, it turned into a huge ice block.

Duanmu Sheng flashed and appeared before TuoTuo Mu, his hands clawing out and tore off his arms easily. With a swipe of his legs, TuoTuo Mu's legs were also shattered by that obscene force.

"AHHH!" With his limbs dismembered, TuoTuo Mu screamed out in an inhumane manner.

The hearts of Yan, Ken, and Sima Bing all turned cold upon witnessing this gory scene.

Especially Yan, whose thoughts went to the slap just now from Duanmu Sheng. Had he not been merciful, he would have died already.

Sima Bing's expression turned incredibly icy as she stared at Yue Zhong, her power flowing from her body, "Yue Zhong, what the fuck are you doing? Are you really a spy from the Saint Clan?!"

Yue Zhong replied solemnly, "Keep your cool, Sima Bing! TuoTuo Mu is a traitor from the Saint Clan, he had already given all the information to them!! In 2 hours, they're sending their armies to eradicate us!! We are already in grave danger, and we have to leave now!"

Sima Bing was not convinced, instead, retorting coldly, "Where's the proof that TuoTuo Mu is a spy?"

Yue Zhong glanced at TuoTuo Mu and asked indifferently, "Where's the proof?"

TuoTuo Mu's eyes were red as he wailed, "I'm not any fucking spy!!! You set me up!! You're the spy!! Bing, I've followed you for so long, how can you not know me?! If I were truly a spy, you would

have landed in their arms a long time ago!! Yue Zhong is the true traitor, his motive here must be to cause an internal strife. Who knows, Jess might already have come under his control!!"

Under his incredible acting, all the resistance soldiers immediately felt wary, casting grave looks towards Yue Zhong.

After all, humans would tend to trust those they knew better while maintaining wariness towards others. The Resistance was the same, they would choose to believe somewhat they fought alongside rather than Yue Zhong.

It was especially so for Sima Bing, who had fought alongside TuoTuo Mu through countless battles. Although she did not view him as a lover, she did recognize him as an important partner.

Flozenia whispered, "In the inner pocket on the left side of his clothes, there's a U-plate, on it, there are the records of all the chiefs of the various Divisions."

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Sima Bing, if you don't believe me, you can go search his inner pocket on the left side yourself. Check it and see what it says."

This time, TuoTuo Mu's face finally broke as he began to shout anxiously, "Bing, don't believe him!! I have nothing on me!! Even if there is, it must be planted by him!! Don't believe him!!"

"If there really isn't anything, I will not let you off, even if you are the prophesied savior!! I will not let you get away with hurting my partner like that!!" Sima Bing shot Yue Zhong an icy glare, as she reached into TuoTuo Mu's pockets. Her expression fell, as she pulled out a U-plate.

TuoTuo Mu turned ashen as he stared at the U-plate and continued to mutter, "He set me up!! He set me up!! Bing, believe me!! You must believe me!!"

Sima Bing's gaze flashed as she summoned a soldier to bring a handheld computer. She loaded up the U-plate and immediately,

the information inside was displayed.

Inside the U-plate, all the information including personality, strength, position, family members as well as other vital details about the top brass of the Resistance was given. Besides the information, there were even TuoTuo Mu's personal comments on each of the leaders. Other than that, there was a huge picture of Sima Bing herself.

Sima Bing's countenance seemed to flare as she swiveled around and roared, "WHAT DO YOU HAVE TO SAY FOR YOURSELF?!"

TuoTuo Mu had a miserable look as he groaned, "Grant me a quick death!!"

Sima Bing was pale as she gasped for breath while speaking coldly, "Why?!! When I've always trusted you??!!"

TuoTuo Mu's face contorted into a savage and mad look, "You trust me, but you can't give me what I want!! I can't get clean water, I can't play with beautiful women, I can't lead a stable life!! I don't want to hide and scurry around like a rat!! Unable to eat full meals, no warm clothes, no ladies!! What's more, what I want most is you!! You view me as a partner, but cruelly reject my advances!!! This is the main reason why I chose to betray the organization!!! I want you, no matter what, I MUST HAVE YOU!! EVEN IF IT MEANS SELLING MY SOUL TO THOSE FLESH-EATERS!!!"

The Resistance had always been in a situation where resources were lacking. Each time the Saint Clan launched an attack, they would be forced to retreat over and over again. After all, they weren't a match for the Saint Clan. Even TuoTuo Mu and the rest who were leaders, they had times where even they could not eat their fill and had to consume irradiated water. Many of the middle-management had consumed large quantities of irradiated water, turning them into Mutants or even Irradiated Devils.

Because of this, many middle-management had already started to turn to the other side, becoming spies and traitors in exchange for

a better life. Without a resolute goal, nor a symbol of hope, it was easy for people to betray.

She looked at TuoTuo Mu with an icy look and congealed a sharp, ice pick in her hand, slamming it into his brain, directly killing him, "You make me sick!!"

After that, she turned to look at Yue Zhong, "Thanks, Yue Zhong. I would like to know though, how did you find out?"

Yue Zhong chuckled indifferently, "Since I'm the savior, naturally, I have some mysterious abilities. Now that the traitor is taken care of, let's go have a good chat with President Gong."

Yue Zhong had a Type 4 Divine Warrior as well as some strange method to weed out TuoTuo Mu, this caused all of the soldiers from the Resistance to look at him with renewed respect and idolization.

Even Yan and Ken, who were dissatisfied with Yue Zhong, had no choice but to accept the reality.

Within the meeting hall, Gong Chang Tian and his buddy Lance were seated at the main seats.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the hall, Gong Chang Tian stood up, saying, "How do you do! Yue Zhong, I'm Gong Chang Tian! I've been briefed on your matters. From today on, our Resistance will be your loyal subordinate."

Yue Zhong was stunned for a while as he carefully assessed Gong Chang Tian.

Gong Chang Tian was the highest authority of the Resistance, although the other 3 Divisions were all independent, he was truly the one in control. A person that could get to this point would not be simple, and would definitely be characters of grit and abilities. Yue Zhong was surprised that this person would give up his power.

Gong Chang Tian chuckled bitterly, "Leader, before you came, I was also skeptical of the prophecy. However, since the Treasure of

Hope is in your hands, then we humans can only gather under your banner and lead, in order to deal with the Saint Clan. For the sake of our humankind, I'm willing to become a subordinate to you. My son has a poor personality, and that was my fault as a father. I hope that Leader can return him to me, I promise to guide him properly, and get him back on the right track."

Yue Zhong saw that Gong Chang Tian was so forthright, and could only smile lightly, "Alright!!"

Gong Chang Tian had given up his power, instantly placing Yue Zhong as the highest authority.

In fact, if Yue Zhong truly wanted to gain control over everyone, he would still need some time.

Yue Zhong asked, "Gong Chang Tian, it is a critical situation now, our base has been exposed, and we need to move, now. In 2 hours, the Saint Clan's army would arrive. Do you have any suggestions?"

Gong Chang Tian was, after all, more familiar with the base, it was strategy and tactic to seek his opinion.

Gong Chang Tian presented his views, "We should immediately evacuate all members, allowing them to leave their separate ways. There are over 10,000 people. If we want to organize a retreat, it would be impossible. As for the base, let's set the automatic self-defense to self-destruct when they are here."

Sima Bing was reluctant, "Leaving on our own, that will cause many to perish!!"

The Ruins were a dangerous area, and many of the people were families of the Resistance. If they were to travel on their own, there would definitely be many casualties.

Gong Chang Tian sighed deeply, "Sima Bing, this is the best we can do! Our strength is too weak!"

Sima Bing was speechless, but she knew the truth, they were too weak compared to the Saint Clan.

Yue Zhong made his choice, "Since this is the case, immediately evacuate them. Send the soldiers to protect the family members. Leave the self-destruction of the base to me, as well as the control of the mainframe.

"Yes!!"

Gong Chang Tian responded and swiftly went to carry out Yue Zhong's orders.

Not long after, from the Resistance base, humans began to pour out like ants, frantically making their way towards different directions. Every one of them carried some resources with them, escorted by soldiers with experience as they fled for their lives.

After more than an hour, 300 heavy aircraft carriers appeared in the skies, together with 100 assault helicopters and 400 heavy bombers.

800 aircraft filled the skies, blocking out the sunlight like a huge flock of Mutant Birds, looking extremely frightening.

Chapter 757: The Saint Clan Army!

800 aircraft, even a country from prior to the apocalypse would not be able to pull out such a fleet.

Within the 800 aircraft, there was a huge, steel ship that looked like a fortress suspended in air, of about 300m length. It had countless cannons pointing out of its sides, and the sight of it would leave enemies despairing.

Inside the steel ship, it was renovated with plenty of resplendent pearls and precious jewels, with lush carpets laid on the ground, and the entire interior looked extremely luxurious.

The table, sofa, and even bar were all made out of gold, shining brightly. A number of beautiful women were kneeling in two rows, enhancing the look of the interior.

On the couch that was cast in gold, there were 7 men and 3 women. They were either sampling fresh blood or flirting around with handsome men and beautiful women with casual looks.

One particular young male in jeans and his golden hair in a ponytail, held a glass of virgin blood, sipping quietly, "Seems like information on our attack was leaked, look at all the fleeing bugs."

Inside this huge airship, there was a large display, showing the feed of the humans fleeing within the ruins below.

The people of the Resistance had plenty of experience escaping, however, with the airships above scanning below, many were still discovered.

One muscular black man, who was chewing on some bubblegum asked, "Who wants to go down and play? This is a rare Hunting Party. Hunting these people of the wild would definitely be more interesting than those in the cities."

A handsome young man with spectacles and black hair spoke with a cold expression, his expression impassive, "Friday!! We are

not here to play! This time, it is to wipe out the lowly Resistance, Sir Sitolius is watching us."

Friday shrugged, "Xiangma Yiming, don't be such a prude! I was just joking. I'll definitely carry out the mission well."

Sitolius was a respected and strong Type 5 Divine Warrior of the Saint Clan. Of the 10 million experts in the Saint Clan, only 30 of them had a strength of a Type 5 Divine Warrior. Such an expert had a lofty position.

Xiangma Yiming's face sunk, "Everyone, pay attention. Sir Sitolius is just here to hold the fort. We have so many Type 4 Divine Warriors here, if we still have to request for his assistance, it will be our eternal shame."

A beautiful lady with blond hair and blue eyes, a sexy and voluptuous body, dressed in black leather shorts, black bra, her makeup thick and heavy, laughed out in an alluring manner, "Relax, Xiangma Yiming! We have 10 Type 4 Divine Warriors here. The strongest warrior of the Resistance is only a Type 3 Divine Warrior. I can easily wipe them out."

Xiangma Yiming swept a gaze across the dozens of strong and handsome men kneeling by the beautiful woman, as he coldly barked, "Bianna, play as you will, don't get in the way of Sir Sitolius, otherwise, I won't let you off!!"

"How will you do that, hm? Conquer me in bed? Then you're just like this fellow, satisfying me with that thing?" Bianna laughed out in an unbridled manner, before reaching out to grab the lower part of one of the men beside her, and crushed down forcefully. He was instantly castrated, as fresh blood flowed from her hand, giving her a cruel and savage aura.

The strong man let out a whimper of pain as he grabbed his private area, thrashing on the ground as blood flowed.

The rest of the men shuddered, their faces pale as ash, but they

did not dare move. This woman in front of them might be a beauty, but they knew she was a monster in human skin, and they did not dare antagonize her.

"What's the matter with you? Why are you screaming? So annoying!!" Bianna frowned at the sight of the man, and with her claws, she instantly tore the head of the man from his body.

Piercing into the skull, Bianna dug out a hole and reached out with her tongue to suck the inner contents.

The rest of the men had looks of anguish, knowing that their plight was the same. The more she favored a man, the earlier he was eaten. The rest who were not as liked would lead hellish lives, and killed in the end.

A boy of about 12 showed a cute smile, "Bianna's eating manner is still so crude! Oh yea, Jonas, I heard that one of the Seeds of Hope among the humans have appeared, and was captured by you. Is his head still with you?"

"It's right here! The planet we're about to invade is called Earth. It's filled with zombies, Mutant Beasts, and Mutant Plants. Their combat strength is weak there, the strongest of the humans reaching only about a Type 3 Divine Warrior. Most of their infrastructures have been destroyed as well. The only organization that could pose a threat to us is called the Kingdom of God. They had already recovered most functions of society, and conquered a few cities, with 12 Type 3 Divine Warriors called Apostles. Their technology isn't too high, but they have nuclear weapons, capable of turning the entire planet into a wasteland. Once we go over, we must get those nuclear weapons first, then the planet would belong to us."

A blond man with an evil and maniacal expression pulled out a glass box beside him, tearing the cloth away, revealing a head of a black man, whose expression was forever frozen in fear.

The young boy had a strange look as he asked, "Type 3 Divine

Warriors are the peak over there? That planet is truly weak. Oh yea, Jonas, where is the God and Devil Imprint on that human? Can I see?"

Upon hearing that term, the 9 other Type 4 Divine Warriors almost ceased their breathing and cast their gazes on Jonas.

The God and Devil Imprint held many secrets and untold power. Legends had it that the Ancient Clan Type 6 Divine Warriors had reached their levels because they obtained the imprints, breaking through the Type 5 barrier.

The 10 Type 4 Divine Warriors present were all above 100 years but had no means of breaking through to the Type 5 stage. In truth, the Type 5 Divine Warriors were old antiques left from the first War, and in the new generations of the Saint Clan, there had only been one genius who struggled hard within a heavily irradiated zone to suddenly become a Type 5 Divine Warrior. Most of them peaked at Type 4 and stuck there.

It was because of this that everyone looked forward to seeing the legendary God and Devil Imprint.

Jonas had a look of pity flash past his eyes as he spoke mildly, "I've already given it to His Holy Majesty Carlman."

Upon hearing that name, everyone became quiet.

The Holy Majesty Carlman was the Ancestor of the Saint Clan, with a Type 6 Divine Warrior strength. A long time ago, it was he and a few other Type 6 Divine Warriors who banded together to crush the human resistance, allowing the Saint Clan to become the rulers of this world.

In this world, other than a few terrifying Type 6 Mutant Beasts, no one was his match. And while those Type 6 Mutant Beasts had insane strength, they were mostly in some obscure places, with no interest in the power struggles of the world. Hence, they were no threat to Carlman. It could be said that Carlman was at the

pinnacle of this world. If any of the Type 4 Divine Warriors even thought of betraying his will, there would only be death.

Xiangma Yiming ordered coldly, "The orders from Saint City are to kill every single human from the Resistance, not allowing a single one to escape. Bianna, go lead a 100 RH2s to surround those in the East. Xi Meng, you take a 100 to surround those in the West. Zhang Li, go to the North, Samo, you take the South. Hua Du, go lead 100 RH2s and 200 Type 3 Divine Warriors to attack the base."

"Yes!"

"Understood!"

"..."

The 5 Type 4 Divine Warriors who were picked up immediately dropped whatever they were doing and entered a combat-ready state.

5 smaller aircraft swiftly departed from the floating fortress towards all 4 directions.

The large fleet also began to descend under the cover of the assault helicopters, as they landed, many RH2s disembarked.

5 armies made up of robots quickly got in formation, galloping towards 5 different locations.

The speed of the RH2s was fast, quickly chasing up to those fleeing Resistance soldiers. The cannons uncurled out of their hatches and began to unleash hell upon those unfortunate humans.

Among the soldiers, many tried to make use of the terrain to engage the RH2s. However, their weapons were too inadequate, their bullets unable to pierce the armor of those RH2s. Furthermore, due to the advanced sensors, once they were within the scanning range, they had no way of evading the rain of bullets.

The moment the battle started, the Resistance began to lose

many soldiers, as they crumbled apart, turning into corpses.

Chapter 758: Type 5 Saint Clan Member, Sitolius!

Yue Zhong watched the Flesh-Eaters launching an assault on the base and frowned, "Crafty bastards, they actually use such a small force to attack the headquarters!"

Hua Du had been extremely careful to deploy only 40 RH2s and a hundred Type 3 experts to attack, not dumping all of his troops. At the same time, Hua Du himself stood far away, with no intention of getting closer.

Gong Chang Tian laughed bitterly, "That's natural. We had self-destructed a base before, killing a Type 4 Flesh-Eater in the process. That was the only time we managed to eliminate one. With this lesson, they are definitely more careful. Furthermore, our strength is weak, if you weren't here, these units that he sent is more than enough to wipe us out."

40 RH2s and 100 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters, such a force was truly more than sufficient to wipe out the Resistance. After all, though the Resistance had 10,000 people, there were only 3,000 soldiers, of which, not even 10 were at a Type 3 Divine Warrior level.

Any Type 3 Divine Warrior had the ability to fight 100 enemies, and the Resistance had no way of defending against a 100 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters.

In the past, the Resistance had not been eliminated entirely because the Saint Clan did not hold them in regard. Furthermore, they had always been running around, their bases kept secret. With TuoTuo Mu's betrayal, it had changed everything, thus the Flesh-Eaters to wipe them out once and for all.

Just this small troop of the Saint Clan surpassed what the Resistance could handle. Without Yue Zhong, there would only be death for them.

Of course, this was because the Saint Clan was in power, and had no enemies. Without enemies, they could casually deploy their armies, and not have to worry about defense.

Yue Zhong watched the displays and declared solemnly, "No other choice, I've to act now! Bai Yi!"

"Yes! Master!!"

Bai Yi smiled sweetly before her consciousness went into the electronic systems and unleashed a powerful signal outwards.

The RH2s that were attacking the Resistance suddenly jerked, before all their weapons came out their hatches and under Bai Yi's adjustments, they began to fire madly at the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters.

The Type 3 Flesh-Eaters were not prepared against the RH2s and were instantly ripped to shreds.

Bai Yi was a super A.I and she could instantly calculate the movements and positions of the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters. With her overpowered calculations, there was no way for them to dodge.

"Damn it!! What's going on?"

Seeing the RH2s suddenly going berserk, Hua Du's countenance turned ugly, turning into a flash of light as he continued to dodge the firepower.

"Damn bastard humans, you dare to rebel against our mighty Saint Clan?! Go to hell!!"

Hua Du appeared in front of an RH2, roaring in rage and waving his right hand, as a huge blade of air slashed across the cockpit, slicing the pilot within in two together with the RH2.

After destroying one RH2, Hua Du continued to flicker across the battlefield like a ghost, his right hand slashing out with air blades, destroying RH2s and their pilots.

"Strong!! A Type 4 Divine Warrior is truly not to be underestimated!" In the base, Gong Chang Tian watched how Hua

Du was slaughtering the RH2s with ease, and his heart was filled with shock.

Gong Chang Tian felt that he could take on an RH2 as well, but his method would be to deal with the pilot. Furthermore, he would have to expend some energy, unlike Hua Du, taking down RH2s every second.

With the electromagnetic wave sent out by Bai Yi, all the RH2s were gradually affected, falling under Bai Yi's control. They quickly adjusted their targets and began to attack their commanders.

Caught defenseless, Bianna and the other Type 4 Flesh-Eaters were struck violently. However, due to their status as Type 4 Divine Warriors, they just had to expend some more energy to evade death. After that, they launched their own counterattacks, destroying the RH2s.

Bai Yi's wave also reached to the skies, causing the numerous aircraft to come under her control.

The fleet began to fly towards the Resistance base, adjusting their cannons to aim at the huge floating fortress.

In a split second, Bai Yi had completely turned the tides, displaying the terrifying might of the Treasure of Hopes.

The wave continued to stretch out towards the huge fortress, if it could end up in Yue Zhong's hands, then the entire battle could be flipped.

The moment Bai Yi got close to the huge fortress, the mainframe within sounded off an alarm.

Near the computer, a muscular and handsome blond man dressed in a suit was sitting in his seat, his entire being exuding a terrifying aura. He opened his eyes suddenly. This was the Type 5 Divine Warrior holding the fort from the Saint Clan, Sitolius!

"Super A.I! Seems like this Treasure of Hope has ended up in the

hands of the humans. We really can't underestimate these ants." Sitolius looked at the computer as the alarms continue to ring out, as he reached out with his right hand, instantly dispersing the electromagnetic wave.

Sitolius ordered out solemnly, "Convey my orders, full defense protocol is in play now. Isolate all wavelengths."

He had just finished speaking and instantly, the exterior of the flying fortress began to extend out with radar systems, blanketing the entire ship, cutting off all interference.

When full defense protocol was up, no electromagnetic wave could hope to penetrate the mainframe of the flying fortress, and Bai Yi could no longer attempt to control the huge ship.

Of course, there was a downside to it, that meant that the entire ship was now deaf and blind, with no means of obtaining information from the battlefield, nor could it send messages. It was relying only on the Saint Clan members piloting the ship.

Like this, the full might of the floating fortress was cut down by at least 70%. However, this was the best way to deal with Bai Yi.

Any mainframes or central computers that were technologically advanced would not be spared from Bai Yi. Initially, the Flesh-Eaters and the Vampires had truly suffered during the war against the humans and had to come up with several measures.

When the full defense protocol was up, Bai Yi knew she could not continue and immediately went to control the rest of the fleet to start firing at the huge floating fortress.

The outer hull of the ship was made with the latest technology using alloys and its toughness and durability were even stronger than tanks. As the bullets and cannons and all sorts of projectiles were slamming against the hull, they caused sparks and fireworks but did not manage to actually damage the ship. Only a few guided missiles managed to blast a small part of the armor away, but due

to its thickness, there was no way the missiles could penetrate within a short time.

The 500 RH2s on the ground were also firing their laser beams up at the huge fortress.

When the laser beams struck the ship, they managed to burn through the alloy armor, tearing numerous small holes in the hull.

Sitolius ordered out coldly, "Destroy all enemies!!"

At that moment, countless firearms opened out of the huge fortress, firing countless projectiles towards the surrounding fleet as well as the RH2s on the ground.

Although they lacked the scanning and automatic aim of the central computer, the elite pilots of the Saint Clan made up for it through their terrifying control.

A number of the assault helicopters were instantly blasted and exploded in balls of fire.

The large cannons rained down from the skies, buffeting the RH2s, blasting them into pieces as well.

Yue Zhong looked at the huge fortress with desire in his eyes, "Powerful! If only I can get such a powerful flying fortress!!"

With just that single ship, the Saint Clan was able to fend off the assault from a hundred assault helicopters and a few hundred RH2s. This was under the condition of having their mainframe shut off, and their combat ability decreased to a mere 30%. If it were at its peak, this ship could easily raze the entire Resistance base to the ground.

A number of heavy aircraft descended swiftly, unloading a huge number of RH2s that quickly raise their laser guns and fired into the skies.

With the added firepower, the huge floating fortress began to take more damage.

Chapter 759: Reversal of the Situation!

Although the floating fortress was strong, under the combined attacks from the RH2s under Bai Yi's control, it was beginning to get damaged, and it would be a matter of time before it got destroyed.

Sitolius immediately made a decision, "The Super A.I. is really a powerful Treasure of Hope. Xiangma Yiming, come and command the ship. The rest of you, come with me to go and destroy their 'hope'."

"Yes! Sir!"

The other Type 4 Divine Warriors immediately saluted with respect.

The doors of the huge fortress opened, and 5 people leaped down towards the ground.

The moment they exited, countless firepower was already trained on them under Bai Yi's command, blasting madly.

With a wave of Sitolius's hand, a shield appeared in his hand, its appearance mysterious and carved with strange runes, the center stuck with a piece of Type 4 Mutant Beast nuclei. The shield suddenly enlarged and the runes flashed out, causing a white light to envelop all of them.

The cannons and bullets struck the bright white light, only to bounce off, leaving a small mark.

The white light slammed into the ground like a shooting star, and 4 Type 4 Divine Warriors immediately charged towards the West.

The speed of the 4 Type 4 Divine Warriors exceeded the sound barrier, quickly charging through the ranks of the RH2s and destroying them.

With a tap of his foot, Sitolius disappeared from his location, appearing right in front of another RH2, and he waved an 8m-long bone whip towards it.

The huge bone whip directly sliced through the RH2, countless metal parts flying.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The loud roars and explosions sounded constantly, as many RH2s were torn apart in two. Even under the control of Bai Yi, the robots had no means of locking down on Sitolius's position.

It was not that Bai Yi's calculations were not strong enough, but the speed of the RH2s could not compare with Sitolius at all. After all, the machines had limitations as well.

On the battlefield, many RH2s were exploding from the assault of the powerful Saint Clan members with no way to retaliate.

Inside the underground base, the Resistance soldiers watched this with pale faces. They had known of the terror and might of the Type 4 and Type 5 Divine Warriors. However, at that time when Yue Zhong wrestled control over the RH2s, they were filled with a glimmer of hope. Now, with Sitolius acting, their hopes were instantly dashed. They finally knew why humans ultimately fell even with the support of those Treasures of Hope.

Sitolius's speed at wrecking the RH2s was even faster than the Type 4s, and he had never even exhibited any special skills, just using the bone whip to tear the robots apart. It was a testimony to his strength and speed.

Gong Chang Tian was pale as he asked, "What now?"

The combat might of Sitolius had completely exceeded Gong Chang Tian's imagination. Just him alone, with time, he could single-handedly crush all of the Resistance. There was no way they could retaliate at all.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange glint as he barked, "Since

he came down, let us go up!! Bai Yi!! Stop the laser attacks on the fortress. Focus fire on all the Type 4 Saint Clan members on the ground, and maintain some pressure on the fortress."

Bai Yi smiled and replied, "Yes! Master!!"

The RH2s that were ignoring everything else and firing their lasers at the floating fortress immediately adjusted their firepower towards the Type 4 Flesh-Eaters. Due to the sudden attack, 2 of them were instantly ravaged by laser beams.

"Move out!!"

Yue Zhong and the rest quickly got on an assault helicopter.

The ground opened up, and the assault helicopter quickly rose up into the sky, making its way towards the flying fortress.

During the hacking attempt, Bai Yi had gleaned some intel, informing Yue Zhong that the Saint Clan had only deployed a single Type 5 Divine Warrior on this mission.

In truth, to quell these Resistance soldiers, all it needed were 3 Type 4 Divine Soldiers. However, they actually sent a Type 5 Divine Warrior, 10 Type 4 Divine Warriors, plus an entire fleet. This showed the importance they attached to the Resistance. If it weren't for Yue Zhong's appearance, the Resistance headquarters might have truly been wiped out.

The moment Sitolius came down from the aircraft, it presented an opportunity for Yue Zhong to snatch it.

"You want to steal it huh? What wishful thinking!" Sitolius caught sight of the assault helicopter rising towards the floating fortress, and he sneered coldly. He grabbed a boulder and flung it with force, sending it hurtling towards the assault helicopter like a cannonball.

With his insane strength, under that forceful throw, the huge boulder was even more powerful than an actual cannon, if struck, the assault helicopter was sure to be destroyed.

At this critical juncture, Sima Bing stood up, gritting her teeth to channel her frost ability, forming a huge ice wall in midair.

The huge boulder slammed through the gigantic ice wall, leaving a hole in its wake, while it continued to hurtle towards the helicopter with slightly reduced speed.

"GET LOST!!" Lance roared, and fired out a beam of white light towards the rock, forcefully knocking it away from its trajectory, barely brushing past the assault helicopter.

It took 2 Type 3 Divine Warriors just to move a single throw from Sitolius, and both of them were already pale in their faces, having exerted all their might.

After Sitolius threw that rock, countless cannons and laser guns blasted towards him, forcing his attention away from the assault helicopter.

As a Type 5 Divine Warrior, his flesh body was truly perverse, even cannons would not be able to penetrate his body. However, the impact from all the various firepower would still cause him some distress. Furthermore, he could not withstand the laser beams. Under Bai Yi's controls, the RH2s had cast a fire net over Sitolius, fully occupying his attention, otherwise, he would likewise suffer.

"Damn, the communications with the aircraft is down." Sitolius looked up with frustration, but soon threw it to the back of his mind, "There's still Xiangma Yiming within, those ants, not even a single Type 4 Divine Warrior, they can't possibly do shit."

Within the intel of the Saint City, the strongest expert of the human Resistance was only at Type 3 Divine Warrior level, and there were already 200 such experts from the Saint Clan together with Xiangma Yiming on board the fortress. Even if the humans made it up there, it would be suicide.

Sitolius brought his attention back to the battle and started to

wreck RH2s, leaving none that he came across intact.

One of the observers on the ship discovered the assault helicopter, and reported, "Sir, there's a helicopter flying towards us, please advise!"

"These ants actually dare think of stealing the ship? Too bad, I won't even grant you that hope!" Xiangma Yiming laughed coldly, and ordered, "Fire with all we have, do not let them close!!"

"Yes!"

With that order, the floating fortress unleashed a barrage of firepower towards the assault helicopter.

Although they have lost the control of the mainframe computer, and suffered a loss of accuracy, within a close range, the barrage of bullets and cannons still formed a dangerous firenet, as long as the assault helicopter was struck, Yue Zhong and the rest would be blasted to kingdom come.

Facing those projectiles, Yue Zhong immediately summoned a light shield, forming a protection around the helicopter.

The shield managed to block 2 shots before it completely disintegrated, leaving Yue Zhong no choice but to activate another light shield.

Yue Zhong had 20 of these low-level items from the God and Devil System, he gave 10 to his own generals, while he had 10 on himself.

When the 9th shield was destroyed, the helicopter managed to come in contact with the fortress.

At that moment, Jess immediately leaped out and channeled his ability to tear the alloy door open, revealing a hole for them to enter.

The group disembarked and quickly leaped through.

"How is it, Bai Yi? Any chance of controlling the ship?"

When they were in, Yue Zhong pulled out the display and asked solemnly.

Bai Yi shook her head, "Not yet! The main computer on this ship had already been sealed, furthermore, there's some jamming signal near the mainframe. I can only infiltrate if we come in direct contact with the equipment!"

Chapter 760: Entering the Ship!

Bai Yi spoke quickly, "However, I know the layout clearly, and know where the central location is. Head right!!"

Without any hesitation, Yue Zhong followed Bai Yi's instructions and ran to the left.

"Hold it right there, damn humans!!"

Yue Zhong and his group had just run forwards about 200m, when 6 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters appeared, pouncing towards them with bloodthirsty expressions.

The bodies of the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters were their strongest weapons, hence, they did not bring along any modern firearms.

Facing the sudden appearance of 6 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters, Gong Chang Tian and the rest felt anxious, knowing that these freaks were strong, and should they be held here, more would swarm over soon.

"Shaxi! Injure them! Don't kill them!"

"I'm not your subordinate! Don't order me around!!"

Shaxi declared coldly, before shooting forward like a shooting star right into the midst of the 6 Flesh-Eaters, slicing them into halves.

"Type 4 Divine Warrior!! She's a Type 4 Divine Warrior!!! Yue Zhong actually has 2 Type 4 Divine Warriors as guards, too fearsome!"

Gong Chang Tian and the rest looked at Shaxi with shock and awe. In such a dangerous place, the stronger their forces, the higher the chances of success.

Yue Zhong pointed and sent 6 Type 3 Puppet Runes, that entered the foreheads of the Type 3 Divine Warriors.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong did not stop to wait for the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters to proclaim their loyalty, quickly leading the rest further in.

They could not afford to screw up now or waste time, as Yue Zhong was afraid that the Saint Clan might destroy their mainframe, or cause the ship to self-destruct.

If anything were to happen, they would all lose their lives.

After all, if they did not manage to gain this floating fortress, which could be considered a technological marvel even in the Saint Clan, they would not have a sliver of hope against a Type 5 Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong knew that while he had 2 Treasures of Hope, in terms of face-to-face combat, he was still a long way off.

Kacha!!

A number of automatic doors closed the tunnel, sealing their path.

Jess immediately activated his ability and pulled the doors apart easily, allowing them to move forward.

Type 3 Flesh-Eaters continued to pour out from various corners of the ship, attacking Yue Zhong and his group.

Shaxi continued to charge towards the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters without waiting for Yue Zhong's orders, injuring them heavily.

For each and every one that fell, Yue Zhong would quickly summon a Type 3 Puppet Rune and imprinted them on the Flesh-Eaters, bringing them under his control.

With Shaxi taking the lead, all the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters were swiftly subjugated by Yue Zhong, allowing him to come to the control room for the mainframe easily.

Yue Zhong took a look and his eyes lit up, "This must be the brain of the entire ship right?"

As long as they gained control of this ship, Yue Zhong would

have the capacity to deal with the Saint Clan, otherwise, they could only flee or die.

Xiangma Yiming came out from another room, walking slowly while smiling evilly, "Impressive!! Truly impressive, a measly human like you actually made it here. What a feat. I'm Xiangma Yiming, Type 4 Saint Clan member. I admire you a lot, come be my dog. As long as you obey me, you'll gain riches, and can become the leader of any city, and you'll be the ruler of over 100,000 people. How does that sound?"

Yue Zhong stared at him with a strange look, "It's only you here?"

Xiangma Yiming laughed out lightly, "I am more than enough. Overlord Gong Chang Tian, I know that you're at most at the Type 3 Divine Warrior level. Just the few of you aren't my match, no matter how many other Type 3 Divine Warriors you might best. Surrender to me, and it's not too late. As long as you hand over the Treasures of Hope in your possession, I can guarantee all of you will lead decent lives, and no longer have to live like rats, worried about your fate."

Type 4 Divine Warriors and Type 3 Divine Warriors were truly too far apart in strength, due to this, Xiangma Yiming dared to face them alone. On one hand, his speed was a factor, on the other, he had confidence in suppressing them.

Xiangma Yiming's gaze swept across them when suddenly, it landed on Duanmu Sheng, and his voice faltered, "Wait!! You're Duanmu Sheng!! Fuck, you guys have the Puppet Box!!

Yue Zhong ordered, "Kill him! Shaxi, Duanmu Sheng!!"

Both of them immediately shot forward.

The 3 Type 4 Divine Warriors engaged in battle, causing loud blasts and their shadows blurred everywhere.

Xiangma Yiming was a peak existence of the Type 4 Divine

Warrior stage, against Shaxi and Daunmu Sheng, he was still able to fend them off, although it seemed unlikely he could extract himself safely.

Gong Chang Tian roared and instantly, a powerful red-colored Dou Qi exuded from his body, enhancing his Strength to reach the Type 4 Divine Warrior level. With a step forth, he quickly joined the fray.

The moment Gong Chang Tian joined the battle, Xiangma Yiming's outlook became even worse, suffering blows from time to time.

Ken and Yan also quickly activated their strength and joined the fray.

However, just as they charged in, they were quickly sent flying out by 2 slaps from Xiangma Yiming, causing the wall to be dented, as they both spat out blood, almost dying on the spot.

This showed the difference in the combat ability. Right now, only Gong Chang Tian had the necessary strength to forcefully engage Xiangma Yiming. Most other Type 3 Divine Warriors would die or become burdens.

Yue Zhong shot them a glance and made for the control room. Even if he joined in the fray, he could not bring the battle to an end quickly.

Xiangma Yiming saw that and his face turned ashen as he roared out in anger, flashing forward to pounce on him, "Damn human, stop right there!!"

Shaxi, Duanmu Sheng, and Gong Chang Tian all lashed out at him.

He ignored their attacks and charged right at Yue Zhong, not daring to let him into the control room.

Shaxi's claw, as well as the fists of Duanmu Sheng and Gong Chang Tian blasted Xiangma Yiming's body.

His body twisted strangely for a moment, dispersing about 70% of the power, while he spat out a mouth of blood. The remaining 30% of force propelled him forwards closer towards Yue Zhong.

With a strong sense of death looming, Yue Zhong swiftly activated his Shadow Steps and Dark Dou Qi, his body flashing as he dodged to one side. At the same time, he sent out a fistful of Devil Flame towards Xiangma Yiming.

"Open!!" In response, Xiangma Yimign roared and a white light radiated out of his body, it was the Radiance of Life that he trained.

Many of the Saint Clan members who were Type 3 and above would usually cultivate the Radiance of Life, condensing their life force into an energy that protects them.

Of course, there was a limit to the usage. If their life force was overdrawn, then their Stamina, Spirit, and Strength would drop drastically for a short period of time. With this Radiance of Life, it showed Xiangma Yiming's determination to eradicate Yue Zhong.

With the protection of the Radiance of Life, he managed to get past the Devil Flame, reaching out with a vicious claw towards Yue Zhong's head.

At that instant, Yue Zhong's body disintegrated, turning into dust and disappearing from this world.

"Clone? Illusion?"

Right at that moment, a void appeared in mid-air, with 10 sharp bone spikes firing out towards Xiangma Yiming. Due to the sudden attack, if it had been any other Type 3 Divine Warrior, they would definitely have been slain instantly.

"Petty tricks! Break for me!!" Xiangma Yiming laughed coldly, and brought a fist full of power smashing towards the 10 bone spikes, instantly destroying them.

"Fucking strong!!" Yue Zhong's heart trembled with shock. He had exerted all his strength, made use of all his skills, and could

only watch helplessly as Xiangma Yiming tore through them like paper. He truly experienced the difference between a peak Type 4 Divine Warrior and himself.

Yue Zhong did not lose hope, instead, he continued to activate his Devil Flame, firing them towards Xiangma Yiming.

At the same time, Shaxi, Duanmu Sheng, and Gong Chang Tian had chased up, using all their might to attack Xiangma Yiming.

Of the 3, Duanmu Sheng was the strongest, but he could only exhibit his full prowess on the ground. In terms of body flesh, he could not compare with Shaxi. Hence, even though the 3 of them joined hands, they could barely suppress Xiangma Yiming, not killing him.

Yue Zhong took the chance and broke through the room, immediately pulling out a data cable and connected it to the computer.

Bai Yi's eyes started to glaze over in the handheld monitor, as data and numbers flashed through her eyes, and the entire ship started to blare out with alarm.

Chapter 761: Suppressing Xiangma Yiming!

"Stop!!!" Xiangma Yiming roared in anger, forcefully trying to break out of the entrapment of the 3 others in order to kill Yue Zhong. However, Shaxi and the rest were all powerful experts in their own right, and he was already heavily injured. He had no way of getting past them, and could only watch as Bai Yi tore through the system.

This air fortress was one of the most precious weapons of the Saint Clan. In the entire arsenal, they only had about 50 of such aircraft.

Every single one of them was the flagship of the Type 5 Saint Clan members, representing their might and authority. Once Yue Zhong obtained one, Sitolius would definitely not let Xiangma Yiming off.

The alarms on the ship rang for an entire minute before it suddenly stopped. After that, the radar systems all withdrew into the ship, as a single powerful radar emerged, sending a scan outward.

Bai Yi's face on the display also regained her usual expression, revealing a smile to Yue Zhong, "It's done! Master! I've completely integrated and gained control of the mainframe!"

Yue Zhong asked, "Is there anything that can do something to the Type 5 Divine Warrior below?"

There were many powerful cannons that were able to threaten Type 4 Divine Warriors. However, against the Type 5 Divine Warriors, due to their heightened sense of danger, their speed, such projectiles would not be able to hurt them.

Bai Yi replied swiftly, "Making use of all the weapons on this ship, I'm able to force the Type 5 Divine Warrior to retreat, but the probability of killing him is only 7.7%. The only way to injure him

heavily or even kill him would require the ultimate weapon on this ship, the R32 Nuclear Bomb."

Yue Zhong's eyes widened in shock, "Nuclear bomb!! They actually have a nuclear bomb on this ship?"

Yue Zhong was extremely clear about the destruction a nuclear bomb could cause. Once utilized, the entire blast zone would be a dead region.

The speed of a Type 5 Divine Warrior might be terrifying, but it would not be enough to escape a region of at least a 100 li.

When Yue Zhong had utilized the nuclear bomb back then, it had managed to wipe out 2 intelligent evolved zombies. However, as a result, he did not dare casually use that weapon again, because while he killed his enemies, it came at a great cost: the pollution of the environment. It severely impacted the land that humans could live.

Yue Zhong asked, "How many are there?"

"5!"

Bai Yi suddenly spoke up, "Oh yes, Master, there's a huge horde of Mutant Beasts making their way over here."

At that, the main display of the mainframe showed a region a slight distance away, heavily irradiated. A number of strange Mutant Snakes were slithering out, their heads black as tar, their bodies full of scars.

Through her calculations, Bai Yi estimated, "These strange beasts would reach our location within 3 minutes."

"Oh yes! There's a large unit of soldiers currently making their way over here. I've used the doors to hold them off, but they'll likely reach within a minute!"

As she spoke, the image on the screen changed swiftly, showing the various doors shutting, sealing the numerous Type 3 Flesh-

Eaters within the corridors. However, under their violent assault, the doors were destroyed and they continued charging.

The design of the ship was to fend off external attacks after all, which could destroy even Type 4 Divine Warriors, but within, the defenses could not withstand even the attacks of Type 3 Divine Warriors.

"1 minute. We must vanquish him by then!!"

Yue Zhong turned to look at Xiangma Yiming with a chilly light, his body surging with Dark Dou Qi. He pushed his speed to the maximum and dashed towards him.

Xiangma Yiming was a powerful expert, while he was facing off Shaxi and the other 2, he was only at a slight disadvantage. If it weren't for his efforts to deal with Yue Zhong, he would not have been injured so heavily.

Xiangma Yiming stared venomously at Yue Zhong and barked, "Hmph! Despicable human, you dare steal the great Sitolius's ship, your offense would not be spared even if you die a hundred times!! Our people from the Saint Clan will arrive shortly, by then, there's only death that awaits you!!"

"What a pity, the one who is going to die is you!!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, arriving in front of Xiangma Yiming, and activated his Gravity Manipulation, causing a force to weigh down on Xiangma Yiming.

While it was not threatening to him, that sudden change in gravity threw him off balance, causing his body to shudder.

At that instant, Shaxi clawed towards Xiangma Yiming's heart.

He quickly sent a fist towards her claws, and his pure strength sent Shaxi flying back 5 meters.

At the same time, Duanmu Sheng's fist came towards his face together with Gong Chang Tian's fist, both of them hurtling at the

speed of sound.

Xiangma Yiming roared in a low voice, bringing his arms back at an insane speed, meeting their fists and the collision forced them back dozens of meters as well.

Having forcefully repelled 3 Type 4 Divine Warriors, Xiangma Yiming's was not well-off either, as blood trailed down the corner of his mouth. The earlier attempt on Yue Zhong had severely impacted his fighting ability.

Duanmu Sheng and Shaxi rebounded and flew straight at him, continuing to unleash a torrent of blows.

Gong Chang Tian spat out a mouthful of blood, his internal organs obviously injured. He gasped for breath while staying where he was. After all, his strength was only at the Type 3 Divine Warrior level. He had relied on his Dou Qi to bring himself to the realm of Type 4, but it was not his true strength. His constitution could not match.

Duanmu Sheng and Shadi were sent flying once more, when suddenly, Yue Zhong appeared behind Xiangma Yiming noiselessly, his hands wrapped with Devil Flames as he punched out.

Such a blow would be fatal to even Type 4 Divine Warriors once connected.

"Fool!! I was waiting for you!!"

Xiangma Yiming suddenly turned around, his eyes filled with hatred and sarcasm, his claws slashing towards Yue Zhong's body at the speed of sound.

Xiangma Yiming was a peak Type 4 expert, and he had no special abilities, just relying on his pure speed and strength. Among his peers, he was a terrifying existence. Otherwise, it was impossible to fend off the joint attacks from Duanmu Sheng, Shaxi, and Gong Chang Tian. A single claw of his surpassed what Yue Zhong could

handle.

Right at that moment, Yue Zhong's chest burst out with a white light, as a light shield materialized, blocking in front of him.

Xiangma Yiming's claw tore through the light shield like it was nothing, continuing towards Yue Zhong's chest without any decrease in speed.

Without any hesitation, his claws continued to pierce through the Type 4 Mutant Beast hide, Level 5 Defense Vest, even directly through his Body of Steel.

Xiangma Yiming laughed savagely, "Lowly human, time for your death!!"

Yue Zhong spat out a mouthful of blood, before revealing a forced smile, "No! The one to die is you!!"

At the same moment, a Type 4 Puppet Rune came out from Yue Zhong's head, imprinting itself unto Xiangma Yiming's forehead.

The rune shone brightly, penetrating his forehead.

Xiangma Yiming roared out loud in rage, his body channeling his Radiance of Life, pushing the rune away, "Puppet Rune!! Too bad, I might not be at my best condition, but such a rune would not be able to control me!! Break!!"

The rune shuddered before it disintegrated. If it could not invade the consciousness and soul of the other party, it would crumble apart.

Forced to utilize his Radiance of Life, Xiangma Yiming was weakened yet again.

At this time, Yue Zhong's fists wrapped in Devil Flame pierced through Xiangma Yiming's body, instantly erupting and burning him.

The Second Order Devil Flame had been enhanced thrice, its might truly fearsome, even a Type 4 Divine Warrior might be

incinerated quickly.

Xiangma Yiming was shocked, his Radiance of Life burst forth, suppressing then extinguishing the Devil Flames from his body.

Yue Zhong was sent flying back, his chest pouring with blood, and he slammed into a wall, coughing out another mouthful.

Xiangma Yiming made use of his Radiance of Life to knock Yue Zhong back, falling even weaker, as he spat out a mouthful of blood and his countenance turned pale. His constitution was weakening rapidly.

Shaxi's claw arrived silently, piercing his body, digging his heart out.

Duanmu Sheng arrived like a specter, sending a violent punch that caused Xiangma Yiming to slam into a wall.

Gong Chang Tian charged forward, his fists raining down, causing the Type 4 Divine Warrior's body to contort.

"Stop! Gong Chang Tian, don't kill him!!"

With Yue Zhong's order, Gong Chang Tian stopped somewhat reluctantly.

With a point, another Type 4 Puppet Rune landed on Xiangma Yiming's forehead, penetrating through to his brain.

A white light then radiated out from his body, swiftly regenerating from the countless injuries and soon, he stood up, and knelt before Yue Zhong, "Master! I'm your servant Xiangma Yiming!"

It was the first time Gong Chang Tian witnessed the might of the Puppet Runes, and his eyes flashed with shock, "What a treasure!!"

Chapter 762: Horde of Strange Snakes!

With a loud shatter, the last alloy door broke apart, and a dozen Type 3 Flesh-Eaters charged in.

Yue Zhong pointed at them, "Break them!!"

"Yes! Master!"

With a glint, Xiangma Yiming charged forwards, his speed pushed to the limit, and he pounced right into the group.

"Sir Xiangma!! What are you doing?!"

"Ah!!! No!!! Sir Xiangma!!"

"...."

The Type 3 Flesh-Eaters that had just charged in were instantly torn in two, screaming in agony and pain.

Even though Xiangma Yiming had been gravely injured barely moments ago, and forced to utilize his Radiance of Life, dealing with ordinary Type 3 Divine Warriors was not an issue.

Yue Zhong pointed at them, and many Type 3 Puppet Runes shot out, imprinting their foreheads, turning them into puppets.

He then summoned a number of Type 3 Puppet Runes, placing them in Xiangma Yiming's hands, "Go sniff them all out and make them my puppets!"

The Puppet Runes could be handed to the Puppets to utilize.

"Yes! Master!"

He replied respectfully, and immediately dashed out, crushing any Flesh-Eater and Vampire he came across.

When he left, Yue Zhong took a deep breath, and pulled out a pill made from Life-Saving Grass and sat down in his pool of blood.

Sima Bing came up to him, her eyes full of worry, "Yue Zhong, your injuries!!"

Gong Chang Tian also came up to him with a complicated gaze, his eyes flashing with a glint. He was an ambitious man, and was forced to swear loyalty due to the circumstances. Seeing Yue Zhong so heavily injured now, his blood began to boil with ambition again.

A killing intent arose in his heart as he stepped towards Yue Zhong, "If I can control the 2 Treasures of Hope in his hands, I can replace him!!"

At this moment, Yue Zhong lifted his head and shot him a cold look.

Duanmu Sheng also stepped to his side quietly.

Gong Chang Tian felt his heart turn cold, as though doused by a bucket of cold water. His strength might be on par with a Type 4 Divine Warrior, but against Duanmu Sheng, he had no hope of victory.

Without skipping a beat, he asked Yue Zhong, "Are you alright?"

"I won't die!"

Yue Zhong responded indifferently, whisking out a can of Type 4 Mutant Beast meat and gobbled it up. Only energy could help him recover right now.

As he ate the meat, it turned into energy that nourished his body, kicking his regeneration into action.

Under everyone's astonished gaze, his large wound quickly stopped bleeding.

He pulled out a number of clothes to put on, covering his wound, and walked up to the mainframe like nothing happened.

Currently, the screen showed what was going on below in the battles at the various directions.

Currently, the 9 Type 4 Divine Warriors and single Type 5 Divine Warrior was exhibiting their power, destroying the numerous

RH2s. Even Bai Yi's control could not help them.

The number of RH2s had to be above 200 to form a decent net under Bai Yi's control to suppress Type 4 Divine Warriors.

The RH2s in all the 4 directions did not number more than a 100 each, thus even with Bai Yi's control, it was hard to injure or kill the Type 4 Divine Warriors.

As for the Type 5 Divine Warrior, it was impossible to even touch him.

About 20 li west of the Resistance headquarters, a large fleet of carrier were preparing to land.

Once those heavy carriers got the RH2s within them off, the large fleet of them could force the Type 4 Divine Warriors away.

Bai Yi smiled sweetly, "Master, the ship is already fully under my control. I can utilize the defense system together with the RH2s below to kill a Type 4 Divine Warrior with 60% success. Do you want me to attack now?"

"Wait a minute!!" Yue Zhong's eyes brightened, as he saw an astonishing scene from the display.

Below, the horde of Mutant Snakes appeared on the battlefield.

The monstrous snakes leaped towards the numerous RH2s with their jaws wide open, snapping down and causing the metal frames of the RH2s to be crushed, with countless pieces flying apart.

Some of them slithered and coiled around other RH2s, twisting forcefully, crushing the entire robot together with their pilots into a lump.

As the firepower of the RH2s were focused on the Type 4 Flesh-Eaters, the attacks of the Mutant Snakes were too sudden, and the RH2s could not react.

Yue Zhong gazed at them and frowned, "Retreat!! Do not engage with those freaks any further!"

"Yes!"

Bai Yi controlled the RH2s to quickly make for the distance.

Bianna and Wang Bu Lu, 2 of the Type 4 Saint Clan members exchanged glances and chased after the fleeing RH2s.

Their speed was too terrifying, quickly chasing up after the RH2s and eliminating them one by one.

Yue Zhong frowned and changed his order, "Stop the retreat! Let's just let them all fight it out there!!"

Bianna and Wang Bu Lu were not zombies without intelligence, getting them to stay and fight the Mutant Beasts was very unlikely.

"Yes!"

With his order, the RH2s came to a stop, and continued to fire at the 2 Type 4 Divine Warriors. Even if they could not hurt them, their combined firepower could force them to move constantly, wearing down at the Stamina.

While the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires were evolved from the zombies, and had superhuman Stamina, they weren't limitless. As long as they were forced to engaged in a high-intensity battle, they would feel tired, and their might would plunge.

Yue Zhong then ordered coldly, "Set them to self-destruct, I want those Mutant Snakes and those 2 Type 4 Flesh-Eaters to suffer."

The speed of those Mutant Snakes were frightening as well, quickly chasing up to swallow the RH2s one by one.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!!

At the moment when one of the Mutant Snakes was about to swallow one of the RH2s, loud explosions began to ring everywhere, as the self-destruct mechanism in each and every one of these RH2s went off, blasting the Mutant Snakes apart, their blood and flesh splattering everywhere.

With their injuries, the entire horde became even more enraged,

their speed increasing suddenly.

Out of the blue, one of the strange snakes appeared in front of Bianna, its jaws opened wide as it wanted to snap down viciously at her.

"Lowly creature, fuck off!!"

Bianna eyed the huge strange snake and laughed coldly, her right hand slashing in mid-air, and a transparent psychic blade slashed through it, piercing its Type 3 scales. Its entire body was sliced up in multiple pieces, as blood, juice and parts scattered everywhere. The nuclei in its body also ended up in Bianna's hands.

There were many Mutant Beasts hiding throughout this planet, where some had mutated due to the changes in the world, while others had evolved due to overexposure to radiation.

As a Type 4 Divine Warrior, Bianna had exterminated countless Type 3 Mutant Beasts before, her experience considered abundant when it came to dealing with them.

On the other side, Wang Bu Lu leaped onto a Mutant Snake's head like a cannon, sending a violent fist pummeling into its head, causing a large hole. He then dropped through it.

The Mutant Snake then struggled, thrashing violently, but before long, Wang Bu Lu leaped right out, covered in brain juices, while the Mutant Snake slumped down lifelessly.

Bianna and Wang Bu Lu relied on their own capabilities to slaughter the Mutant Snakes, their eyes gleaming with excitement. After all, killing and slaughter was in their brutal nature.

As the 2 of them immersed in excitement while killing, all of a sudden, a black, human-like figure appeared in front of Wang Bu Lu without warning.

Being a Type 4 Divine Warrior, he caught sight of the figure in front of him, a human-shaped creature covered entirely in thick, snake scales. The strange thing was that it had a snake head and

snake tail.

The snake-head leader opened its jaws in a flash, elongating to a size larger than its own body, and bit down viciously on Wang Bu Lu. The countless rows of sharp teeth punctured his body and ripped it into pieces.

Chapter 763: The Snake Race!

Bianna watched as Wang Bu Lu was torn in pieces by that snake-head creature and her heart was instantly enveloped with a terrifying chill. She let out a shrill scream and hurriedly retreated towards Sitolius.

Wang Bu Lu was a powerful Type 4 Divine Warrior, in terms of combat, he was even stronger than Bianna by at least 30%. Such a powerful fighter was actually eaten in one bite, it caused Bianna to be extremely fearful.

The snake leader gobbled up Wang Bu Lu in a few bites and with a flash, it quickly chased after Bianna.

Bianna was currently fleeing with a pale face, pushing her limits. She would use her psychic powers to propel herself forward from time to time. Each time the snake-head creature was about to get close, she would channel her ability, and force the snake leader away.

The speed of this snake-head creature was extremely fast, however, it was always hampered by Bianna's constant usage of her psychic ability.

Unfortunately, a scene soon occurred, causing Bianna to despair. In the midst of the gigantic Mutant Snakes, a number of similar snake-head creatures appeared, rushing towards her.

Yue Zhong saw all these from the mainframe display, his heart filled with a chill, "So many of those, what in the world are they?"

The bodies of those snake-head creatures were even stronger than Type 4 Flesh-Eaters. They also had human-like features, truly it was strange and frightening. Most humanoid creatures would usually possess intelligence, and enemies like that were the most dangerous for the human race.

Bianna continued to charge forth, repelling any snake-head

creatures that got too close. After repelling them for 7 or 8 times, she suddenly seemed to have thought of something and began to leap into the air, using her power to help her step up towards the skies.

The usage of her psychic abilities was extremely broad, with powerful potential. Although she only had an initial Type 4 Divine Warrior strength, using her power, she was even stronger than most other peak Type 4 Divine Warriors.

The snake-head creatures came underneath her, looking at her with cold eyes.

"Good! What a good target! Bai Yi, send me outside of the ship!"

Yue Zhong looked at Bianna rising up higher with the support of her ability and spoke to Bai Yi in excitement.

"Right this way!"

One of the alloy doors opened up, revealing a mobile platform.

Yue Zhong stepped right in.

The mobile platform then shot towards the exterior of the floating fortress through a series of tunnels.

The ship had many functions and features but required the mainframe computer to display its full potential. Without it, the ship was only at best 30% of its normal capacity.

When he reached the exterior, Yue Zhong quickly pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun and took aim at Bianna.

His gaze locked on her, his killing intent caused her to feel a sense of dread. She turned to discover Yue Zhong aiming at her, and she instantly felt a chill in her heart. She quickly channeled her power to support herself up by another 6 meters.

Yue Zhong's cold gaze was fixed on Bianna as he pulled the trigger, and the electromagnetic beam fired straight for her.

This female demon tried her best to avoid by moving up and

down, but her usage of the psychic abilities could not compare to her own speed on the ground.

After dodging 3 of the shots forcefully, one of them managed to blast her right shoulder into oblivion.

She was sent hurtling towards the ground by that beam.

Another beam that burst through her head, blasting it apart, killing her instantly.

"Congratulations, you've gained +40 Vitality and +1 Skill Point."

With Bianna's death, her life force flowed into Yue Zhong through the God and Devil Imprint, enhancing him once again.

With that sudden increase of 40 Vitality, his wound on his chest began to heal even faster.

Since Bianna was killed, the snake-head creatures quickly rushed over to her corpse and tore it apart, gobbling her up.

At the same time, their eyes were filled with a vicious animosity as they stared at Yue Zhong while eating.

Yue Zhong stared right back for a while, before commanding, "Go back!"

The mobile platform then brought Yue Zhong back into the room where the mainframe was held.

Those snake-head creatures shrieked out in some strange noise before making their way towards Sitolius.

The large horde of Mutant Snakes soon came into Sitolius's view, as they fought to reach him faster.

Right now, all around Sitolius laid the destroyed RH2s and scattered machine parts. Initially, there had been over 90 RH2s combating him, now there was barely a dozen left.

"Mutant Beasts? A bunch of lowly creatures dare attack me? What trash!!"

Sitolius stared at the newcomers and laughed coldly. He turned his body around and pounced towards the horde of snakes and snake-creatures.

The moment he charged through their midst, the bone whip in his flew out like a raging dragon, the huge, strange snakes torn instantly rupturing at the point of contact.

As the blood mist sprayed, Sitolius walked through it, looking like a demon right out of hell.

Hua Du was also tangling with the Mutant Snakes by the side, as a Type 4 Divine Warrior, dealing with those Mutant Snakes was not as casual as Sitolius, but it was not a problem for him. As long as he neared one, he would then conjure a huge blade of air to slice the head of the Mutant Snakes.

As Sitolius was slaughtering the Mutant Snakes, the snake-head creatures suddenly charged out from the horde.

At that instant, 2 of them surrounded Hua Du.

Hua Du had just killed off one of the giant Mutant Snakes, and his heart had just relaxed at that point when one of the snake-head creatures opened its jaws to bite him.

Hua Du retreated just a little too late, and his hands were caught in the teeth of the snake-head creature.

The other snake-head creature opened its mouth and quickly latch onto Hua Du's upper body, and with a loud crunch, his entire top half was bitten off and swallowed.

After killing Hua Du in a second, the 8 snake-head creatures pounced towards Sitolius.

"Peak-Type 4? All you bastards actually have Peak-Type 4 combat ability!!" Sitolius stared hatefully at those monsters, and the bone whip in his hand lashed out, sending them flying back.

If it were just 1 of them, he could kill it easily. Facing 2 or 8 was

not a problem even. However, once the numbers exceeded 10, then his confidence in dealing with them all would start to decrease. If there were more than 20, he would even have to retreat.

"Lowly? I say you Flesh-Eaters are the lowly ones. Our Snake Race will be the masters of this world from now on. Those Flesh-Eaters there, our Snake Race is currently in need of talent. Join us, and fight for us, I can still let you live. Otherwise, there will only be death for you guys."

From the horde of snakes, an icy-cold voice sounded out. The snakes parted, forming a path, and from a distance, the numerous snake-head creatures stood with respect in two lines. Atop the crown of an enormous golden snake, sat a man and woman with human-like features. They had long snake tails, their bodies covered with a layer of silver scales.

The pair were extremely good-looking, however, their golden eyes were slits that would send a chill down anyone's spine when looked at. The person who spoke was precisely the beautiful snake woman.

Sitolius glanced at them and snorted coldly, "Preposterous!! Just 2 measly Type 5 snakes want to become the masters of the world? This time, we have barely sent out a small portion of our Saint Clan. If we were to go all-out, wiping out your pathetic race is as easy as flipping our hands. I advise you to give up and surrender. Hand over 20 Type 4 nuclei and we can forget about this. Otherwise, in a month's time, your race will be extinct."

In this world, the Saint Clan was truly the hegemony, with no other powers the slightest bit a threat to them. This led to the arrogance in Sitolius's words.

While Sitolius was not a match for the both of the Type 5 Snake Race experts, based on the might of the Saint Clan, it was not impossible to crush the Snake Race.

The snake woman pointed at Sitolius and coldly commanded,

"Very good! I want to see how you can do that! Kill him, Mangudala!!"

The handsome snake man flashed forward, darting like a specter.

"Hmph! Do you want to kill me? Go try evolving another thousand years!! Lowly beast!!" Sitolius laughed coldly and with a tap of his feet, he retreated explosively at the speed of sound.

He could tell the difference in strength between both sides. He would not sit here idly waiting for his death. As long as he got away alive, it would be enough. Although the mission this time cost him huge losses, with his Type 5 Divine Warrior status, it would be settled with an explanation.

Chapter 764: Destroying Sitolius!

The beautiful snake-woman seated on the majestic seat laughed coldly, "You want to flee? Not so easy, today will definitely be the day you die!!"

"If I want to run, other than a Type 6 expert, no one can stop me!"

Sitolius burst forth with a Mach-2 speed, seemingly unstoppable. Even the Type 5 Divine Warrior Mangudala from the Snake Race could not match his speed.

All of a sudden, from one corner, a sexy figure flashed past, appearing in front of Sitolius and sent a palm towards him.

Sitolius was currently at his maximum limit, and he had no way of dodging. He could only send a fist of his own to meet the attack.

With a powerful boom, both fists met with a resounding shockwave.

The force sent Sitolius flying back a dozen meters, his blood rushing, while his heart filled with shock.

There were 2 forms of evolution for the Saint Clan, one was to evolve a special ability, like Duanmu Sheng and Bianna. The other favored the simplicity of bodily enhancements, focusing on their Strength, Agility and the evolution of their body. Both evolutions had their advantages, allowing different forms of combat. Abilities augmented tactics, while body enhancements could crush any opposition with sheer might.

Sitolius's speed could surpass twice that of the sound barrier, and his strength was more than enough to lift an entire house. Even if his body was sliced in two, he could recover quickly. He was not afraid of most agility-based enemies, nor would he be tied down by the majority of the Spirit-based attacks. A single fist of his could crush a tank. And yet, even with his perverse constitution, he was actually sent flying, this caused him to be shocked.

Taking a look at the person, his eyes went wide as he blurted out, "How is it you? Weren't you over there?"

The woman who sent Sitolius flying was precisely that beautiful and alluring snake-woman who had just been at her seat seconds ago.

The snake-woman had a trail of blood at the corner of her mouth. It was evident that this clash with Sitolius also caused her some injuries.

Mangudala also took the opportunity to dash towards Sitolius, slashing viciously at him.

"A bunch of trash, let me show you the difference between the Saint Clan and you trash."

Sitolius laughed coldly and sent a powerful punch towards Mangudala's claws.

The snake-man's slit eyes flashed coldly, and his body twisted strangely, his claws going around Sitolius's fist before piercing his body.

After that, he began to coil his entire body into a long strip, coiling furiously around Sitolius.

In that short exchange, without any time to defend, Sitolius was at a disadvantage already. His heart was filled with shock and he hurried to exert his strength to push Mangudala away.

He pushed forcefully, separating Mangudala slowly away from his body. However, there were still some sounds from the contact of their bodies. Had Sitolius's body been weaker, he would have already been crushed.

Positively terrified by now, Sitolius began to channel his Radiance of Life to send Mangudala flying.

The eyes of the snake-woman flashed with a cold glint, as 2 golden beams shot out and landed on his head.

When he was swept by the golden beam, the forehead of Sitolius started to turn to stone.

Right at this time, his body emitted the bright Radiance of Life, blocking the golden beam, stopping the petrification effect.

At the same time, he was using the Radiance of Life to counter the golden beam, his body was still being tightened and sounds were emitting.

Sitolius would not be afraid of either the alluring snake-woman or Mangudala if they were alone. However, facing their joint attacks, he was thrown into a dangerous situation.

With his veins bulging, Sitolius's eyes turned bloodshot, "Fuck!! I need to give it my all!!"

All of a sudden, a bright, piercing electromagnetic beam shot down from the sky, piercing Sitolius's head, blasting it apart.

Both the snake-woman and Mangudala leaped back in shock from the sudden attack, lifting their heads together, only to discover Yue Zhong in the airship above, having become the oriole behind their 'mantis stalking the cicada'.

Having killed Sitolius, the massive life force of the Type 5 Divine Warrior entered Yue Zhong's body through the God and Devil Imprint.

As the enormous amount of life force entered Yue Zhong's body, it flowed in the shape of a mystical rune, strengthening his body immensely. At the same time, as the energy flowed throughout his body, it gathered all the life force nested inside him, purifying them.

As all the life force energy gathered together within his sea of knowledge, it began to form into a gold nucleus the size of a rice grain.

When the gold nucleus formed, within his sea of notification, all the runes of his skills and abilities began to fly and orbit around

the gold nucleus like satellites. Gold lines shot out from the nucleus, connecting to the runes, linking all of them together.

The moment the runes were linked together, Yue Zhong was suddenly enlightened on the origins, the cultivation techniques as well as a much deeper understanding of every single ability, reaching a new level.

"Congratulations on forming a God-Devil Nucleus. You've gained +30 in all attributes."

"Congratulations on gaining 10 Skill Points."

"Congratulations, your lifespan has increased to 300 years."

"Congratulations, all your skills below the Second Order tier has gained a +1 enhancement."

"Congratulations, your strength has now reached the equivalent of an initial-stage Type 4 Divine Warrior."

A flurry of information began to resound in Yue Zhong's mind.

After killing Sitolius, absorbing his life force through the God and Devil Imprint, he managed to form a God-Devil Nucleus in one fell swoop. Yue Zhong's power had undergone a heaven-shaking change and he was finally a Type 4 Divine Warrior. Even his lifespan had broken through to reach 300 years.

He quickly recovered from his excitement and did not hesitate in his choice. He quickly spent 3 skill points to push the Devil Flame to its Third Order stage, spending another 5 to push the Dark Dou Qi to its Third Order stage as well, and the final 4 into his Body of Steel to reach the Second Order stage.

When the Body of Steel reached the Second Order stage, even high caliber bullets would not be able to pierce Yue Zhong anymore. If he channeled the Third Order Dark Dou Qi, he could even resist the bombardment from missiles.

Once he was done, his gaze fixed upon the 2 snake-people

downstairs, his eyes flashing with a strange glint. Both parties below were Type 5 Divine Warriors. If he could kill them both, although he might not make the jump to a Type 5 Divine Warrior stage, it would definitely still bring him huge benefits.

Very quickly, he abandoned that line of thought. Although he had consolidated his foundations as an initial-stage Type 4 Divine Warrior, he was still far off from taking on 2 Type 5 Divine Warriors. They could definitely annihilate him easily.

"How do you do! I'm Yue Zhong, the leader of the human resistance. Pleased to meet you guys."

One of the helicopters flew down, at the same time, his voice sounded from the helicopter.

The beautiful snake-woman snorted coldly, grabbing a huge boulder of a few tonnes and flung it towards the helicopter, "Yue Zhong, if you want to talk to us, get down from the skies!"

The snake-woman might have powerful strength, but she obviously had not trained in boulder-throwing before. The huge rock soared about dozens of meters away from the helicopter, not even brushing the body of it.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "My apologies, I still think that it's better for both of us to communicate like this. I'm afraid that if I were to be on land, your partner will tear me apart."

There were 2 Type 5 Divine Warriors below, the moment he landed, his life would no longer be in his hands. If the snake-woman was not in a good mood, he would be eaten in a second.

"Hmph!" The alluring snake-woman snorted coldly, her gaze fixed on Yue Zhong coldly. If it were not for the fact that she could not fly, she would have pounced on him and tear him into pieces.

Biesna uttered coldly, "I'm Biesna, the 5th Princess of the glorious Snake Race! Say what you have to say!"

Yue Zhong laughed, "Your Highness Biesna, the Flesh-Eaters of

this world have too much power. In their Saint City, it's rumored that there's a Type 6 Divine Warrior. He's someone that neither of us can handle. I propose to form an alliance, joining forces to deal with them, what do you think?"

Biesna laughed sarcastically as she looked at him condescendingly, "Alliance? Join hands? Measly human, what qualifications do you have to join forces with us? Do you have any Type 5 Divine Warrior? You require the necessary strength to even propose an alliance. Why don't we do it like this, Yue Zhong, I admire you. Bring your people and become our slaves, I can confer you the title of Lord of the human race."

In her eyes, Yue Zhong and his subordinates were too weak, they were even defeated by Sitolius, they simply had no bargaining chips to form an alliance.

Yue Zhong's expression remained unchanged as he smiled, "No! I'm not interested in your Snake race. Your Highness, while our human race might be weak now, we have our strengths. This spaceship is something we invented. Your Snake race might be strong, but without aerial troops, how are you going to deal with all of the Saint City's forces? If we were to join forces, we can assist you in dealing with the Saint Clan's aerial forces!"

Chapter 765: Type 6 Giant Snake Aremando!

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Biesna immediately sunk into her thoughts.

The Snake Race was one of the newer mutant species that evolved, possessing terrifying fleshy power. However, they lacked weaponry and technology. Aerial combat was their weakest point, the moment the Saint Clan employed any aerial technology, they could only face it helplessly.

The Snake Race had some influence around these parts due to their strength, but if they wanted to face the Saint Clan, it was still far from enough.

As she was still thinking, Yue Zhong waved his hands, and a seemingly endless number of cannons emerged from the side of the spacecraft, firing madly at a building in the ruins.

Under the barrage of bullets and cannons, the entire building crumbled and came crashing down, turning into a pile of rubble.

Biesna looked at the rubble and her pupils narrowed, she could see for herself the destructive might of the airship in the skies.

If the floating fortress was to unleash all it had, even a Type 4 Divine Warrior would be killed.

Biesna was a powerful Type 5 Divine Warrior, but she could not fly, if faced with such an aerial assault, even she would be forced to flee.

She fell silent, before saying, "It's not that an alliance is impossible, but your strength is too weak. When you have a Type 5 Divine Warrior, come talk to us then."

The Snake Race valued the strong, they simply did not hold the human race in their eyes. Although they knew that it was beneficial to be in an alliance, they would not do so. Even if the Saint Clan City's airships were to arrive, they would not be

worried. After all, they could slither and hide in their underground hideouts. This was more than enough to deal with the harassment from the Saint Clan.

"Since this is the case, let us meet again in the future! I hope we can cooperate then!"

Yue Zhong replied a little wistfully, before returning to the floating fortress.

The fortress then flew towards the distance.

The rest of the fleet, helicopters, and RH2s also silently left.

On the ground, Biesna watched Yue Zhong and his subordinates leave, waving her jade-like hands, causing Sitolius's corpse to be dragged towards her hand.

"Let's go!"

With a single order, the horde of Mutant Snakes immediately slithered towards the depths of the ruins.

As they entered the runes, Biesna quickly entered a deep and dark tunnel.

"Little Sis Biesna? Have you dealt with all the intruders?"

Deep within that underground hole, there was a great beauty of about 60% resemblance to Biesna. Behind her, there were 20 snake-head creatures guarding her.

Biesna caught sight of the great beauty approaching and replied blandly, "Sis Annie! They have been dealt with. They're experts from the Saint Clan."

Annie's eyes brightened as she smiled out with an alluring charm, "Oh! The Flesh-Eater Clan? Such a huge movement, there must have been a Type 5 Divine Warrior among them right? Let me see his corpse!"

Biesna immediately rejected, "Sis Annie, no!"

This beauty in front of Biesna was the 3rd Princess Annie, although she was incredibly beautiful, she was also a terrifying Type 5 Divine Warrior. To them, to be able to consume the corpse of a Type 5 Divine Warrior would push their personal might up a couple of notches, helping them to evolve further.

As long as any biological life forms were to attain intelligence, they would start to develop tiers, and fight for the sake of power. There were a total of 9 Type 5 Divine Warriors of the Snake race, and they were all constantly fighting for power, and their relationship with one another was not good.

Annie then put on a pitiful expression, as though she was a wounded animal, "Biesna, do you not trust your sister?"

Biesna replied coldly, "That's right! Sis Annie, the moment you see a corpse of a Type 5 Divine Warrior, you will swallow it immediately."

Annie laughed lightly, and was about to say something, when suddenly, the earth trembled beneath them, and her face changed, "Father is summoning us!"

"En!"

Biesna replied and quickly brought her subordinates deeper into the caves.

Deep within the ground, there was a large space of about 200m wide. Over 200 snake-head creatures stood solemnly, every single one of them a Type 4 Divine Warrior. At the forefront of the area, 9 snake-people waited respectfully, the women beautiful, the men handsome.

These experts were all looking forward with reverence, towards a being with 6 heads. The aura of the being was extremely oppressive, every single head at least a few dozen meters tall. This incredibly gigantic behemoth could almost be considered a divine being if it appeared on the pre-apocalypse Earth, receiving the

prayers and worship of humans.

This huge snake was the single progenitor of the entire Snake Race, with a strength of a Type 6 Divine Warrior, Aremando. Biesna, Annie and the rest of the Type 5 Snake-people were all his descendants. He was the true overlord.

"Biesna, who was the invader this time?"

On the square, Aremando's voice boomed out like thunder, causing the entire square to shake.

Biesna kneeled in respect and took out Sitolius's corpse, placing on the ground, "Father, the invaders this time were from the Saint Clan City. They had come to wipe out the human race. Their deployment this time consisted of a Type 5 Divine Warrior, Sitolius. He had already been killed by me, this is his corpse."

The 6-head snake opened his mouth and sucked in the corpse into his mouth.

Aremando's voice then boomed out once more, "Not right!! This corpse's life force had already been absorbed by more than half, no longer the vibrant size of a Type 5 Divine Warrior. This sort of feeling, it feels like it had been absorbed by the God and Devil Imprint!!"

"A human!! A human with the God and Devil Imprint has finally appeared!! Finally!! After waiting centuries, a person with the God and Devil Imprint has finally appeared!! Who is it?!!! Who is that human?!!" Aremando became extremely excited as he muttered to himself, and grabbed Biesna towards himself with a gust of wind. "Tell me!!! Who was the human who killed Sitolius?!! If you don't speak the truth, I will kill you directly!!"

As a Mutant Snake with a vicious and savage personality, throughout his evolution and exposure to radiation, it only served to increase his violent outbursts and terrifying nature. Even if Biesna was his own daughter, he did not have much familial love

for her.

The moment he got excited, his enormous body started to twitch, and the entire square rocked, causing fear to arise in everybody present.

Biesna suppressed the fear in her heart, solemnly replying, "It was a man called Yue Zhong!"

"Yue Zhong!! Yue Zhong!! I want to see him!! Biesna, Annie, Mangudala, Casey! The 4 of you shall go catch Yue Zhong for me! Alive if possible! If you can't capture him alive, I want his intact corpse!!! Lie if you have to, do whatever you have to, get him in front of me!!"

Aremando's roar resounded throughout the entire space.

"Yes!"

All the snake-people did not dare to go against Aremando's orders.

A look of regret flashed in Biesna's eyes, "Damn it! I should have agreed to his alliance proposal!"

Yue Zhong did not know that he had caused such a huge commotion in the Snake Race, as he continued to gather all the scattered Resistance members, before leaving the ruins.

Since he knew that the masters of the ruins were the Snake Race, he did not dare set up the headquarters here. Otherwise, if the Snake Race were to feel like it, they could easily wipe them out as well.

Saint City was situated at the center of this world, a large city occupying about 270,000 sq km.

It was the largest region with the cleanest land, fresh air, lush greenery, clear water, not a hint of radiation at all. Throughout the entire Saint City, there were many tall skyscrapers with a hint of a modern touch, and men and women smiling on the streets.

The entire city was like heaven compared to the rest of the world. One was the epitome of clean and green living with a high quality of life, while the other was trash, ruins, and backward.

Saint City was the capital of the Saint Clan, harboring about 5 million Saint Clan members and 50 million humans. Most of the Type 4 and Type 5 existences of the Saint Clan chose to stay here, forming the most powerful force of Saint Clan's city.

At the center of the city, there was a lavish tower that seemed to come right out of a fiction movie, built entirely with alloy, its surface glaringly white. This was known as the White Tower in Saint City and was the living quarters of the highest echelons of the Saint Clan.

On this day, there was a sudden ringing of a knell.

"That was the knell!! Did a Type 5 Saint Clan member fall?" Inside a room, a naked blond man sat up, his face drained of color. He released the 2 girls beside him, their necks with bite marks. He then disappeared from the room, moving towards the White Tower.

"That was the knell!!"

A red-haired beauty was currently carrying heavy weights training within a gravity room, her forehead and body slick with perspiration. Her eyes flashed with a strange glint when she heard the kneel, and with a wave of her hands, the weights came off, and she quickly left the gravity room, making her way towards the White Tower.

Many idle Saint Clan members who were in the middle of their break moved out at the same time towards the White Tower.

Chapter 766: Saint City!

Inside the White Tower, within a magnificent, sacred-looking court, there were 2 white seats set side by side, where a young man and woman sat. Their looks were exceptional, and they had a terrifying aura to them.

These 2 youngsters were the peak Overlords of the entire Saint Race, sitting above millions of the rest of the people, both of them possessing Type 5 Divine Warrior strength.

These life forms that evolved from the zombies over thousands of years ago could live a long time without a hint of the years that had passed them by. Most of them were the survivors of the great war between the humans and zombies.

One blond, handsome, young man caught sight of another man with black hair and slightly yellow skin and greeted, "Hi! Gu Mu, where have you been all this time? I haven't had the chance to go on a Hunting Party with you in forever!"

The black-haired man had his locks in a braid, with a glass of fresh virgin blood in his hands, as he laughed, "Ventus, you always hunt those weak little girls, that's no fun at all. I'm now currently hunting human mercenaries. They have plenty of battle experience, and it's a lot hard to kill them. Now, that's what I call a thrilling hunt."

These evolved zombies were extremely brutal and bloodthirsty by nature, killing and combat were in their blood.

Even Yin Shuang under Yue Zhong was of a similar existence, numb to killing and quick to violent outbursts. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong's control over her, this girl from the Mutant Infected Womb would have been one of the deadliest killing machines back on Earth.

To these Saint Clan members, humans were equivalent to pigs

and dogs. This was a common perception. To them, killing humans posed no difference from killing chickens and livestock.

"Sick perverts!"

Just as Ventus and Gu Mu were in discussion, the cold voice of a woman sounded.

Gu Mu turned towards the voice, noticing a red-haired beauty dressed in combat uniform looking at them coldly.

Gu Mu's eyes brightened as he laughed, "So it's you, Winnie! How has your hunting of Type 5 Mutant Beasts gone? When can we go hunt them together?"

Winnie was a peak-stage Type 5 Divine Warrior, together with her extremely good looks, she was the goddess of many Saint Clan members. Even among the other experts, there were many who were chasing after her, Gu Mu was one of them.

After all, Winnie was on the same level as the 4 Saint Kings of the Saint Clan. She was one of those with the highest potential to break through to the next stage, reaching the terrifying level of a Type 6 Divine Warrior. If it wasn't for her attitude towards the humans, she would have long been conferred the title of 5th Saint King.

"No need! I'm not interested in teaming up with perverts." She coldly rejected him, before staring straight at Ventus, "I know you're currently collecting young human girls for a Hunting Party, hand them over!"

Ventus's expression turned furious as he sipped some blood, coldly retorting, "Based on what? Winnie, you're of the same rank as me, not a Saint King, nor the great Saint Emperor or Empress, why the fuck should I hand those girls over to you? They are my private property."

Winnie's gaze turned incredibly dangerous, as she threatened, "Based on the fact that my fist is bigger than yours! If you don't

hand them over, I'll challenge you constantly."

There was a combat challenge within the Saint Clan, any experts of the same tier could issue a challenge, without any means to back out. If the person who was challenged turned it down, he or she would be looked down upon.

If Ventus were to be constantly challenged by Winnie, and if he did not accept, his standing among the rest of the upper echelon would plunge. Yet, if he accepted, he would likely be beaten and pummeled. Regardless, it would be a loss of face to him. In comparison, those human girls were not worth much.

Hearing her threat, Ventus's countenance turned greened as he shot back coldly, "Winnie, for those lowly humans, you're really going against me?!"

Winnie continued forcefully, "That's right!"

Gu Mu wore a smile as he tried to mediate, "Forget it! Ventus, let me purchase those girls from you for a 100 Type 3 crystal horns, how about that?"

Ventus's expression turned slightly better when he heard that, "Fine!"

Gu Mu then chuckled, "Winnie, since you like them so much, let me gift those human girls to you. Don't keep picking on Ventus, after all, we're of the same race, and we're survivors from that Sacred War so many years ago, it's not worth falling out over these humans."

Winnie replied indifferently with an impassive face, "Mm."

The Saint Clan were life forms evolved from zombies after all, and many of them had the habit of eating humans. Winnie knew this. Although she hated it, she could not change everyone's nature. However, she hated seeing them discussing it so blatantly in front of her and despised the very nature of the Hunting Party activity.

Winnie was still a life form descended from the zombies, and her personality was brutal and bloodthirsty. However, what she liked most was to hunt her enemies, powerful Mutants and Mutant Beasts, not slaughtering those who were weak just for the fun of it. Her existence among the Saint Clan was a special case. It was similar to being a vegan among other humans.

As the many upper echelons continued in their own discussion, everyone suddenly settled down.

4 Saint Clan experts swooped in, their silver capes fluttering in the wind, seating themselves on the 4 gold seats slightly higher than everyone else in the room.

All of them looked towards the 4 of them with a gaze of respect.

These 3 men and 1 woman were the highest authority, second only to the Saint Emperor and Empress, the 4 Saint Kings. They were peak-level Type 5 Divine Warriors and were the commanders in the previous Sacred War between the humans and the zombies. Before the Saint Emperor and Empress were born, they were already peak-level experts.

One of the 4, a blond man with a muscular physique and extremely good looks spoke out softly but his voice traveled, "I've gathered everyone to announce something grave, Sitolius has died in battle!"

"Sitolius is dead?!"

"How did he die?"

"Who killed him?"

"Saint King Weylan, how did Sitolius die?"

"...."

A number of the Saint Clan members began to break out in a discussion, they had all heard the knell and knew that one of their Type 5 brethren had fallen. Even then, they were still extremely

shocked.

In this world, Type 4 Divine Warriors were powerful existences, few people could take them on. As for the Type 5 Divine Warriors, they were practically invincible, even other life forms of similar levels would find it hard to defeat them or even kill them. The Type 6 experts had stopped appearing due to some strange reason unknown to everyone. Under such circumstances, it was impossible for a Type 5 Divine Warrior to fall.

In the centuries before, the total number of deaths of the Type 5 Divine Warriors had only been 5.

Saint King Weylan spoke, "Friday, who had managed to flee back, gave his report. The one who killed Sitolius was the leader of the humans, Yue Zhong. He has gained the Treasure of Hope: Super A.O. and any electronic device would be controlled easily by him."

When they heard his words, everyone's expression turned grave, This Saint Clan-led world was extremely advanced in technology, and every weapon and equipment they had was hard-fitted with some form of computer. If they were to go against the Treasure of Hope, not only would these machines be of no use to them, instead, they would become a threat.

Saint King Weylan continued, "Based on our newest intelligence, this human is the leader of the China faction back on their world called Earth. Since he can come to our world, it's likely that he possesses the God and Devil Imprint, which puts him as a powerful threat to us!"

"The God and Devil Imprint?!"

"My goodness..."

"We cannot let him off!!"

"..."

The moment they heard that Yue Zhong had the God and Devil Imprint, their faces all fell. After all, they had obtained victory

over the humans over centuries ago, and at that time, the human leader was also someone who had the God and Devil Imprint. He was incredibly tough to deal with. Although they had obtained victory in the end, they had suffered numerous casualties on the battlefield. Anyone with the God and Devil Imprint was a huge threat.

At the same time, humans with the God and Devil Imprint represented a chance for a breakthrough, helping them to evolve to the next stage. Both sides had an interchangeable predator and prey relationship, either not letting the other off when coming into contact.

Saint King Weylan then spoke, "Very good! Let me announce then, all of the Saint Clan is to prepare for battle. Battle Protocol 23 is now in effect."

"Battle Protocol 23 is in effect!!"

"Awesome!!"

"HAHAHA! This is great!! I can finally enjoy myself!"

"...."

The moment those words were uttered, almost every Type 5 Saint Clan member revealed a sadistic and excited grin.

Only Winnie had a dark look, however, she could not change their decisions. Although she pitied the humans, she was still from the Saint Clan.

Winnie sighed, "Forget it! I'll just try my best."

Inside the deep parts of the Ancient Ruins, the barren place where clean water flowed had now become the human base. Many structures were building up, and due to their close proximity to water, there was a chance to grow agriculture, and the people were thriving. Many of them wore smiles on their faces.

Chapter 767: Returning to Earth!

In this region with water, there was no radiation nor any immediate threats. At the same time, with the rules and laws that Yue Zhong had laid down, there was finally some semblance of security and society, bringing an end to lawless behaviors and crime.

Within the community, there were no more people who went unpunished if they killed, there was no more rape, robbery or burglary. Everyone's private belongings were protected under the system that Yue Zhong had set up. The people here started to have renewed hope about the future.

Sima Bing was currently walking around, taking in the surroundings. Everywhere she went, she would see a hustle and bustle of activity, with people being busy with their own responsibilities, their eyes filled with excitement.

She took in all these and her eyes flashed with a strange glint, "This Yue Zhong truly is capable, not some slaughtering oaf!"

With everyone carrying out their duties, abiding by the rules and laws, Sima Bing could fully appreciate the sense of peace and vitality here.

Just having a place with laws and a form of society in this world was actually remarkable. After all, while the technology of this planet far surpassed Earth, the humans here were life forms of the lowest caste and had no education.

Many of the mercenaries were youths who had handled their first weapons at the age of 11 or 12. Many of them could even disassemble them with their eyes closed. However, simple mathematics and logic would be beyond their heads. It was hard for them to grasp.

Furthermore, the situation in most of the cities that were

controlled by the Saint Clan was chaotic. Without any security, only the inner citizens or regions where the Saint Clan resided in would have a system running.

To many citizens, such places of law and order were simply heaven-like. In their own hometowns, many of them would be constantly fearful of being dragged away to be raped or even end up as food for the Saint Clan. They did not even have the capacity to worry about their own belongings. That was why they were all the more appreciative of this bit of paradise. Many of them were grateful to Yue Zhong.

Having laid down the rules and plans, Yue Zhong's standing within this base reached a high level. Adding on to the allure of the prophecy, Yue Zhong became even more mystifying and grand in the eyes of the people.

Sima Bing came up to 2 soldiers standing guard in front of a structure and asked, "Where's Leader?"

One of the soldiers replied, "Chief Sima, the Leader is over at the training grounds."

Sima Bing then turned and made her way towards the training grounds swiftly."

She arrived not long after.

The training ground was a vast expanse of ruins, the natural terrain and complicated structure of the various dilapidated buildings made it easier for Yue Zhong to conduct his rigorous training.

At one side, hundreds of soldiers were currently going through a series of training, including off-road tactics, pushups, scaling of high-rise buildings.

20 RH2s were engaged in intense battles in the middle of the ruins.

Bai Yi could control multiple RH2s, to even thousands of them,

but there was a disadvantage.

If subjected to a large-scale jamming attempt or interference, it would be hard for Bai Yi to control those robots smoothly, hence, it was important for the pilots in control to be well-versed.

Furthermore, Yue Zhong was well aware of a fact, that while Bai Yi might be a Super A.I., it was not improbable for the enemy to have their own super A.I. as well. If he were to just rely on her for everything, he might have to pay a painful price in the future.

Sima Bing observed the entire place and discovered Yue Zhong on a hilltop after a while.

Currently, he was sitting with Floxenia, Xiangma Yiming, Duanmu Sheng and Qi Qing'er. His eyes were both shut, his right hand releasing a golden radiance.

Sima Bing hurried over.

Floxenia took one look at her and immediately barked out coldly, "Brother Yue Zhong is currently at a crucial stage of his training, hold your tongue on your matters first!"

Sima Bing halted, her gaze on Floxenia while a chill crept up her heart.

Floxenia's mind-reading abilities were no longer a secret among the upper management, towards her, few dared to get close. After all, who would be willing to have their secrets revealed?

Currently, Floxenia was conferred the director of the central intelligence, with authority over a hundred intelligence officers. Few could escape her supervision.

When she took on the mantle, she was extremely efficient, quickly weeding out dozens of spies and traitors. At the same time, she sourced out all the greedy, unscrupulous people, rapists and even murderers among the newly formed Crusade Group.

After she pointed them all out, other than Yue Zhong and a few

others, everyone in the Crusade Group was filled with fear towards this young girl. No one dared to stay too long with her, even her own subordinates were filled with fear and respect.

If it wasn't for the good treatment of the central intelligence, no one would dare work alongside Floxenia for long.

Within the Crusade Group, people were more afraid of Floxenia than Yue Zhong.

Of course, to protect her, Yue Zhong had assigned the Type 4 Anya to guard her personally.

With a Type 4 Divine Warrior as a personal guard, no one dared to have any thoughts towards Floxenia.

Sima Bing had a similar heart-crawling fear towards her, but she still proceeded over.

Floxenia continued to stare coldly at Sima Bing but did not say anything else, turning to look at Yue Zhong, full of reliance.

Within the Crusade Group, her only friend was the pure and innocent Qi Qing'er, and the only person she could count on and respect were Yue Zhong who had accepted and treasured her greatly.

As Yue Zhong's God and Devil Imprint continued to glow, his consciousness was in the Evolving Temple.

The Evolving Temple was currently filled with people who were intending to get their Job Change.

Yue Zhong had set up a decent foundation back on Earth, and with the various powerful leaders and their guidance, the Evolving Temple was utilized efficiently. Every day, there would be ordinary people becoming Enhancers, coming over to do their Job Change.

With a thought, the Evolving Temple began to radiate, revealing Yue Zhong's hologram.

"Who are you?"

"What's going on?"

"..."

The Enhancers inside the Evolving Temple caught sight of Yue Zhong, and their hearts turned cold, as their bodies tensed for battle.

Yue Zhong might be the biggest leader over at Guang Xi, but many still did not recognize him.

"Leader!! You are Leader Yue Zhong!!"

At this moment, one fully-equipped soldier came up to Yue Zhong and let out an excited cheer.

"Yue Zhong!!"

"This is Leader Yue Zhong??"

"...."

The moment they heard his name, the entire place was rocked. After all, Yue Zhong's fame had spread far and wide.

Many of these Enhancers that could get a Job Change in this Evolving Temple had been reinforcement soldiers that were trained up and assigned here to become stronger. Many of them were filled with respect and veneration towards Yue Zhong. This man was the person who had conquered the capital with his people. If nothing went wrong, it was possible that he would reunite the entire country, and reestablish order.

Many of the soldiers who had already undergone the Job Change quickly came over, their gazes filled with idolization as they looked at him, awaiting instructions.

Yue Zhong glanced at that soldier who recognized him, "I'm back! Go get Hu Yi, Zheng Ming He, Zhang Xue Wang, tell them all to come!"

"Yes! Leader!"

The soldier replied and swiftly left.

Soon after, a number of elite soldiers quickly arrived, ushering the other reinforcements and supplementary soldiers out.

These soldiers could only wait helplessly outside the Evolving Temple.

After a few hours, many assault helicopters descended from the skies, as a number of big shots walked out.

"That was Regiment Commander Hu!! Regiment Commander Zhang!! Mayor Zheng!! Oh my goodness, that man truly is Leader Yue Zhong!!"

"..."

The soldiers watched the characters alighting from the helicopters and sucked in a breath of cold air.

Hu Yi, Zheng Ming He and Zhang Xue Wang were all people with high authority. Each time they appeared, the entire Guang Xi would be sent into excitement, and yet these people actually gathered at a single person's order, they could not help but be shocked.

All the important people within Yue Zhong's administration appeared, entering the Evolving Temple to see their Leader.

"Leader!!"

"Boss!!"

"Leader, how are you!!"

"..."

Seeing his holographic image, many of them were emotional. This was the man that had led them to conquer the capital, creating miracles one after another.

Many of those who still had some ambitious thoughts saw Yue

Zhong and reined in their ambitions. His influence and control were expanding at a crazy pace, even if they tried to stage something, there would not be much room for success, instead, failure would definitely be a consequence they could not bear.

"Everyone has gathered, very good. I'm now in the 2nd World on the other side of the Gates of Hell. Let me introduce the current situation. This time, what I'm about to say has to remain a classified secret. Anyone beneath the rank of Major-General is not to be made privy to this information."

He then proceeded to update them on the situation of the other planet.

Upon hearing his words, everyone was beyond shocked.

After all, before entering the 2nd World, Yue Zhong's might was already terrifying, and yet, he was only comparable to a Type 3 Divine Warrior over there.

In comparison, the Saint Clan had over 100,000 Type 3 Divine Warrior, which was equivalent to 100,000 Yue Zhongs that had not yet entered the 2nd Stage. They even had more terrifying existences beyond that, like the Type 4 and Type 5 freaks. If they were to act, none of them knew how to deal with it.

Chapter 768: Fury!

"The situation now is extremely dangerous, we only have about 10 months to prepare. I have obtained data on a few things here, quickly manufacture them."

He then sent over the information and blueprints of the items he obtained from the 2nd World.

When those in the research fields received his items, they were filled with excitement.

This time, the reason Yue Zhong made his presence known was to ensure the stability of his people and to bring them up to speed. When the Gates of Hell opened, the battleground would be on Earth, not the 2nd World.

After finishing his delegation, Yue Zhong retracted his consciousness and returned to the 2nd World. He opened his eyes and immediately saw Sima Bing, and he asked, "Chief Sima, what's the matter?"

Florenia was a pretty loli, but with her mind-reading ability, she was truly a terrifying existence within the Crusade Group. Sima Bing would not come close if she could help it.

She replied, "Leader! Right now, the Saint Clan has launched a widespread massacre of the human race everywhere!! Please advise on our next step!"

Yue Zhong was taken aback, "Slaughter?! A widespread slaughter? Is this for real?"

Those from the Saint Clan were evolved from zombies, and while they might view humans as livestock, treating them as food, hunting them from time to time through their Hunting Parties, there had never been a large-scale slaughter. After all, while humans were livestock to them, they were also some form of personal belonging of theirs. Killing the humans like this would

just deprive them of their future pleasures.

Sima Bing continued in anguish, "Yes! Other than Saint City, all the other cities are currently participating in their own Hunting Parties, as countless Flesh-Eaters and Vampires have begun to slaughter the humans within the cities without constraint! Those who have been spared are already taken in as slaves and sent to the quarries and factories to be worked to death. All cities have already become hell for humans!!"

In the past, although the Saint Clan had been unbridled, they had never been this cruel. This time, their actions caused a chill in everyone's hearts.

"What's the current death toll?" Yue Zhong asked.

"It is estimated to be over a 100 million already!!"

When Yue Zhong heard this, he sucked in a breath of cold air. This was $\frac{1}{3}$ of the world's human population. Just like that, they had already been killed by the Saint Clan.

He had finally understood just how cruel and sadistic the Saint Clan was. He had initially hoped to make use of the humans under the Flesh-Eaters to grow his Crusade Group. Now that they had carried out a large-scale slaughter, he was thoroughly shocked and enraged.

Unable to suppress his anger, he lost his mind and roared, "100 million humans had been slaughtered! And we didn't get any inkling of what was happening before? What is your department doing?!"

There were 2 branches within the intelligence department of the Crusade Group, one was the central intelligence headed by Floxenia, the other was made up of the original web of ears and eyes on the ground from the Resistance.

After Yue Zhong had reorganized the entire thing, he had left the web of intelligence and sentry officers on the ground alone, using

the same people, while the chief of the division was Sima Bing.

To Yue Zhong, the value of the Resistance had been their network of intelligence. Only by continuing to use the old people, was it possible to maximise their efficiency. Had Yue Zhong tried to reorganize them and deploy some other people, he might have caused the entire network to crumble.

The central intelligence that Yue Zhong setup for Floxenia was a newly-established one, and in the future, once things were stabilized, he would then take over the previous network. However, as for now, they operated separately.

Sima Bing lowered her head when shouted at by Yue Zhong, gritting her teeth while holding back her tears, "There was no prior warning. They had started killing last night. All the cities had sealed their gates, and almost none of our eyes and ears out there made it out alive. This news was brought by the lucky few who managed to escape through the water tunnels to bring to us."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his fury subsided slightly, as he calmed down and apologized, "I'm sorry! I lost my head there for a second! I was too agitated."

10 million people were killed mercilessly, each time he thought about this, his heart would boil with rage. He had seen his fair share of slaughter and massacre, and even the slaughter of a hundred or thousands was enough to send him into a rage. This time, on this planet, the Saint Clan had actually culled the lives of 10 million in one go. He was beyond infuriated at this point.

At the same time, he felt an immense pressure. He definitely could not allow the Saint Clan to conquer Earth. Should that happen, then the fate of these people here would be repeated back on Earth.

Sima Bing wiped her eyes and faced Yue Zhong resolutely, "Leader, you don't have to apologize. It was my mistake not discovering their decision to act sooner. I will not shirk my

responsibilities. From now on, I swear that there will not be a second time!"

Her heart ached as well at the thought of having lost 10 million fellow humans.

She looked at him and asked, "Leader! What do we do now?"

Yue Zhong suppressed the boiling fury in his heart and spat out coldly, "For now, let us go teach those beasts a lesson!!"

Red Rock City was initially a bustling city, with a clean water source within its area, attracting countless merchants and vagabonds. Currently, it was littered with human corpses, as numerous human heads were pierced through and stuck on the wall.

Every single one of those victims had fear and despair at the point of death, the entire thing looking extremely grim.

Within the city, there was death everywhere.

The streets were empty, save for the corpses on the ground.

Compared to the outer parts, the inner city was a lot less desolate, although the humans there felt nervous, afraid that they would be next.

Inside the castle of Red Rock City, 10 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters were gathered in a room, sipping virgin blood out of boredom while chatting.

One of them, a black man, laughed at the city lord Annette, "Annette, when are you going to open your inner city to us and let us have some fun?"

Annette laughed back, "In another 2 days. We just finished our Hunting Party in the outer parts, those lowly humans aren't feeling too good now. If we act now, most of them will just escape."

Within Red Rock City, many strong humans had been bought over by Annette to serve as guards. This was one of the measures

the Flesh-Eaters employed to divide the humans, causing them to fight among themselves.

One blond Flesh-Eater licked his lips while smiling cruelly, "I heard that Qiang Wei Girls' School contains the best quality girls you have; when the Hunting Party starts, I want to have a good taste of those delicious humans. Annette, you won't feel reluctant, will you?"

Annette laughed casually, "Honestly, it does hurt a little. However, I've already kept 20 exceptional stock. The rest of the goods in Qiang Wei Girls' School are yours to enjoy, gentlemen. Since the Sacred War is about to begin again, I do not know if everyone will survive. So let's just enjoy ourselves. If we make it out alive, rebuilding the school is no issue."

One short and fat Flesh-Eater praised, "Well-said!! Those that have not reached 12 years old belong to me, Koizumi Shizaburo! No one is to fight me for them!"

"Haha!"

"..."

Within the manor, the sounds of laughter rang out.

Hong! Hong! Hong!!

At this moment, loud explosions rang out in Red Rock City, causing the manor to shake as well.

The moment they heard the explosions, the 10 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters got up explosively and punched through one of the walls.

Although they had powerful flesh bodies, they would be unable to defend against cannons and missile. Thus, they would not stay idly at one place to be bombarded to death.

"Spaceship!! It's the spaceship, isn't that from the higher-ups? How come it's here?"

Annette and the rest looked up and surveyed their surroundings,

their hearts feeling a chill.

They discovered that there was a single spaceship which they knew only the Type 5 Divine Warriors could pilot, and on the ground, 100 RH2s were currently marching towards them in an orderly fashion.

Seeing such a terrifying scene, Annette and the other Type 3 Flesh-Eaters suddenly felt fear and despair.

"Scramble!! We can't hold on here anymore!!"

Annette was also a decisive man, as he quickly gave the order.

"Still thinking of leaving? You beasts can go to hell!!"

Following a cold voice, 2 electromagnetic beams shot out, blasting the heads of 2 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters to the sides of Annette.

Annette and the remaining Flesh-Eaters turned around to see Yue Zhong holding his Electromagnetic Gun, alone.

Annette frowned as he fixed his gaze on Yue Zhong, "Who the hell are you?!"

The black Flesh-Eater beside Annette scrutinized Yue Zhong carefully and became agitated, yelling, "Yue Zhong! He's the leader of the human resistance, Yue Zhong!! He has the God and Devil Imprint!! Kill him!! And we'll be elevated to the upper echelons of the Saint Clan!!"

Chapter 769: Consecutively Destroying 11 Cities!

Upon hearing that it was Yue Zhong, the remaining 8 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters immediately got excited. If they could hunt this man in front of them, they would elevate in status, position, and even their own bottleneck, reaching the Type 4 Divine Warrior level.

In the entire thousand-year history of the Flesh-Eaters, only one person had relied on radiation to break through to reach the Type 5 Divine Warrior level. Many had contributed to the cause of the Saint Clan and had been elevated to the Type 4 Divine Warrior level.

"Hahaha, you are my prey!! Give me your heart!"

Following a piercing laughter, a gust of wind blew past as one of the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters appeared in front of Yue Zhong sending a powerful fist towards him.

Yue Zhong raised his right hand to block, as the fist of the Flesh-Eater slammed into him, it caused him to be knocked back a dozen meters.

"Strong, these Type 3 Flesh-Eaters are not weak at all."

Yue Zhong felt his hand go numb, had he not enhanced his Body of Steel to reach the Second Order, his hand might have been shattered by that single impact.

"Haha!"

Seeing Yue Zhong being forced back, the rest of the Flesh-Eaters laughed savagely and gained more confidence to charge right at him, their claws stretched out to tear into his heart.

"In terms of body constitution, as a human, I'm still incomparable to these freaks!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and a powerful

Devil Flame dragon soared into the air, enveloping all the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters around him.

"Ah!!!!"

The Devil Flame Dragon coiled once, wrapping around the Type 3 Flesh-Eaters near Yue Zhong, causing them to scream out in misery, as they hurried to channel their Radiance of Life to withstand the burning.

However, the Type 3 Devil Flame was like a leech that stuck to them, no matter how much they struggled, they could not shake it off. Within 2 minutes, 5 of them had been burnt into ashes, their life force absorbed by Yue Zhong through the God and Devil Imprint.

"What a fearsome flame!!"

Annette and the remaining 3 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters stared at Yue Zhong with fear.

Currently, dense sounds of gunshots were ringing throughout Red Rock City, as the soldiers and Flesh-Eaters of the city took up arms to meet the invading robots.

At the same time, hundreds of soldiers were grabbing their laser guns and rushing towards Yue Zhong in the manor.

"Retreat!!"

Annette and the other 3 exchanged looks and hurried to flee towards the center of the city. They had come to the conclusion that they could not face Yue Zhong, and wanted to preserve their lives. There was only retreat, as for Red Rock City, they couldn't care less.

Humans were at a constant disadvantage in this world, even if they had conquered a city, they would not be able to hold on to it for long. The Flesh-Eaters would usually send an army to reclaim it. Furthermore, out in the wilderness, there was no clean water nor enough food. It was hard to fight a battle of attrition using

guerilla warfare, which relied on sufficient resources.

"You want to flee? Today will be the day you die!"

Yue Zhong watched the 3 fleeing Flesh-Eaters, and his body was immediately shrouded by his Dark Dou Qi. Under the enhancement of the Third Order Dark Dou Qi, his body had reached the Type 4 Divine Warrior's level.

With a tap of his foot, the roof he was on split apart, at the same moment, he appeared beside Annette.

"Impossible!! How did your speed become so fast?! Your speed should not be above mine!!" Annette could not help but scream in shock when he saw Yue Zhong. He had ascertained that Yue Zhong's speed could not have been this fast from the earlier exchange.

Yue Zhong laughed coldly in response, whisking out his Flame Blade and directly sliced this City Lord in half. Fresh blood sprayed everywhere, and this demon who had killed millions of people had finally died at Yue Zhong's hands.

The other 2 had terrifying speeds, and in a blink, they had escaped out of Yue Zhong's vision. Suddenly, 2 bursts of blood-colored light shot through the skies, and the 2 of them were directly slain by Duanmu Sheng and Shaxi.

The 10 Type 3 Flesh-Eaters might have been killed by Yue Zhong and the experts he brought, but the rest of the Flesh-Eaters were still as vicious and cruel. Knowing that they were losing, they quickly began to slaughter the rest of the humans in the city.

Those humans barely had time to defend themselves, and many were instantly killed or heavily injured. At the same time, some of the human experts had been wary of the madness of the Flesh-Eaters, and begun to engage them in battle.

Yue Zhong brought his experts and quickly joined the fray, slaughtering the low-level Flesh-Eaters. They were simply no

match for Yue Zhong and his subordinates.

When the army of RH2s joined the battle, they quickly suppressed all the chaos.

When everything had settled down, the once-bustling and radiant Red Rock City had been largely damaged, with plenty of broken buildings and dead bodies everywhere. It resembled a ruin, with casualties of both humans and Flesh-Eaters.

The original number of humans had been 80,000, after the slaughter and crazy battle in Red Rock City, there were only 4,000 left.

Having conquered Red Rock City, Yue Zhong swiftly mobilized his people to gather all the resources and working equipment out of the city.

He had gained a large number of resources and a few thousand people in this attack.

At first, most of those people in the inner city had been staunch supporters of the Flesh-Eaters, but after the massacres carried out, witnessing many of their friends and families killed, they were filled with hatred towards the Flesh-Eaters, and many took the initiative to join Yue Zhong's Crusade Group.

At the same time when Yue Zhong invaded Red Rock City, at another side, Gong Chang Tian had led a large fleet to attack Black Crow City, a city also under the control of the Flesh-Eaters. Jess was also leading another force to crush yet another city elsewhere, gaining resources.

Having successfully concluded the assault on Red Rock City, Yue Zhong handed the cleanup to Luo Chen, before he led his own elite troops towards the next city.

With Bai Yi in control, Yue Zhong had 3 troops all attacking simultaneously, bringing 11 cities down, saving about 100,000 humans, and gaining a large number of resources.

"Retreat? Why??" Gong Chang Tian stared at Yue Zhong's image in the display, asking unhappily.

Currently, Gong Chang Tian had just taken down 3 cities and was feeling invincible, he had not expected Yue Zhong to call for a retreat at this moment.

Yue Zhong replied solemnly, "We have already brought down 11 cities of the Flesh-Eater Clan. They're likely to respond any time now. If I'm not wrong, they've gathered a large army to deal with us. If we don't retreat now, it'll be too late."

Gong Chang Tian fell silent, before replying, "I got it, Leader! Let me get White Maple City first, and I'll retreat then!"

Yue Zhong felt a sense of unease and he barked, "No! I'm ordering you to retreat now!!"

Gong Chang Tian looked at Yue Zhong resolutely, "Apologies, Leader. We're now only about 10 li away from White Maple City. There're 30,000 of our brethren waiting for us to save them. Bai Yi's net has not yet discovered any Saint Clan members nearby. With such circumstances, I definitely have to go to White Maple City to save our fellow humans."

After that, he cut off the communication.

Yue Zhong's army had been split into 3 to take down 11 cities in one fell swoop. Of which, Yue Zhong took 4, Jess also took 4, only Gong Chang Tian had managed to take 3. He truly wanted to continue, otherwise, it felt like he could not even compare with Jess.

"Fucking bastard!" Gong Chang Tian's forceful cut of the communication caused Yue Zhong to frown and curse.

As of now, while Yue Zhong was considered the highest leader, Gong Chang Tian's authority was not any lesser than before. He had plenty of loyal subordinates and good buddies.

In order to utilize the entire force as a whole, Yue Zhong had no

choice but to use Gong Chang Tian, as long as he did not think of betraying Yue Zhong. However, he did not expect that Gong Chang Tian was so stubborn as to try and rack up merit, that he overstepped his authority.

Gong Chang Tian quickly ordered, "Convey my command, everyone is to march forth, the target is White Maple City!!"

Under his orders, the armored fleet began to move forth swiftly towards White Maple City.

Soon, they arrived.

With over a hundred RH2s marching in formation, they quickly charged right through into the city.

After breaching the walls, they began to sweep out anyone who took up arms against them. Be it Flesh-Eaters or humans, whoever fought back would be killed on the spot.

Chapter 770: Gong Chang Tian's Death!

"We took down another city!!"

Gong Chang Tian looked as the RH2s tore through the city with little resistance, the corners of his mouth arched in a satisfied smile.

Every time he attacked a city, he would use the RH2s to charge right in, quickly ending half the battle. The leftover would usually be dealing with those Flesh-Eaters on the streets who were unwilling.

One RH2 was patrolling the streets of White Maple City, its guns and cannons extended out, sweeping the area for enemies. Suddenly, it twisted and with a loud roar, the cannons and guns fired madly at one shop, directly killing a Type 2 Flesh-Eater hiding within.

At this moment, a shadow charged over from afar. Under Bai Yi's control, the RH2 swiftly adjusted its weapons to aim at the new enemy.

However, it was too late, the shadow appeared right in front of the RH2, a long 6m laser blade in his arm that came slashing through the RH2 right down the middle, separating it in two.

The man was dressed in black, tight clothes looked at the 2 halves and laughed coldly, "What presumptuous humans. Do you think our Saint Clan is for decoration purposes?"

At the same time, a number of shadows charged out from the various dark alleys at the speed of sound, employing all sorts of means to attack and destroy the RH2s.

Bai Yi's clone in the handheld display of Gong Chang Tian began to warn loudly, "Warning!! Warning!! There is an indeterminate number of experts attack the RH2s. Preliminary investigations suggest that there might be at least 10 Type 4 Divine Warriors.

There's also the possibility of a Type 5 Divine Warrior. 36 RH2s have already been destroyed, please pass an order!"

Bai Yi had sent her clones to be controlled by Jess and Gong Chang Tian for the sake of the 3-prong attack. Without her help, they would not have been able to take down so many cities in such a short time.

Yue Zhong would not intervene with their command as well. After all, he was not God, he could not be omnipresent, and thus could only trust their judgment. A poor command would just send their elites to their death.

"What?! How did it become like this?" Gong Chang Tian turned pale when he heard this, and could not help but shout, "What have you been doing? How come so many high-level Saint Clan members appear without you know? You're a Super A.I. for goodness sake!!"

Facing his outburst, Bai Yi spoke quietly, "I might be a Super A.I., there are many things beyond my control and supervision. As long as the enemy is not employing any tools or equipment with computer mainframes, I am unable to hack and obtain intelligence. I'm not an invincible existence!"

Bai Yi's ability was extremely overpowered, as long as there was a computer-based machine, she could hack into it and bring it under her control. However, there were limitations as well, as she would be helpless towards anything that does not require a computer.

Gong Chang Tian had fought beside Yue Zhong before and watched how Bai Yi had brought so many types of equipment and weapons under her control, together with the RH2s, to defeat the Type 4 Flesh-Eaters. This caused him to have a misconception about Bai Yi's power. In fact, while Bai Yi might be extremely powerful, there were ways to counter her.

He roared out anxiously, "Retreat! Retreat!!"

The RH2s in White Maple City were part of the Crusade Group's main combat force. Currently, they had no way of manufacturing these powerful robots. If lost, they would suffer a drop in their might.

"Yes!"

Under his order, many RH2s began to swiftly retreat out from White Maple City. As they fled, they would fire madly at the Type 4 Flesh-Eaters with the help of Bai Yi.

However, the Type 4 Flesh-Eaters exploded out with their terrifying strength, chasing after the RH2s relentlessly, destroying one after the other.

Even with Bai Yi's control, the combination of a hundred RH2s could at most suppress one Type 4. Now there were over 15 of them, such a force was not something the RH2s could handle.

"The number of RH2s lost is now 45."

"The number of RH2s lost is now 51."

"...."

Bai Yi continued to report the current status of the RH2s, almost every second, there would be an RH2 being decimated.

Gong Chang Tian was not an inexperienced fighter, he quickly recovered from the shock and issued a flurry of orders, "Heed my command, Team 6 and Team 7 is to rush and kill all low-level Flesh-Eaters and city guards. Team 8, go find a way to slow down the enemy's advance. Team 9 and 10, quickly flee from this place!"

With his orders, the RH2s that had all been fleeing quickly changed formation, some attacking, some fleeing, while the others focusing on the slaughtering of the low-level Flesh-Eaters and human soldiers.

Like this, the speed of the Type 4 Flesh-Eaters slowed down drastically, with no choice but to send some to go and take on

those going on a rampage within the city.

Gong Chang Tian led the remaining 20 RH2s to flee towards the distance. He was beginning to regret not listening to Yue Zhong, although he was now focused on getting away.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

After a round of explosions, a number of RH2s were destroyed, as a handsome man stepped through the destruction, his hands holding a whip. Had this person been placed anywhere on Earth prior to the apocalypse, he would be chased by plenty of girls.

This handsome man walked towards Gong Chang Tian while smiling, "How do you do, I'm Gu Mu from the Saint Clan, am pleased to make your acquaintance!"

On the display of the central computer in the command center, Bai Yi warned, "Warning! Warning! Based on the scans of the life form in front, there is an 80% possibility of the person to be a Type 5 Ancestor-type, a survivor of the Sacred War."

"Type 5 Ancestor!!"

Hearing this, everyone in the vehicle command center, everyone's face fell. The Type 5 Ancient were experts who had survived the war centuries ago and had an unimaginable power. At the same time, their battle experience was practically unmatched. There were no games to be played before such existences.

The remaining RH2s began to fire their lasers and cannons at Gu Mu.

He remained impassive, dodging within the rain of firepower, some of them barely brushing him by, as though they were all purposely avoiding him.

Gu Mu continued walking forward while smiling, while the RH2s exploded mysteriously, turning into balls of flame.

Seeing this, everyone turned ashen.

"Attack! Do not cease attacking!!"

One Resistance soldier had despair written across his face, as he roared out and began to fire madly at Gu Mu.

He had just stood up when his brain split open mysteriously.

Gu Mu chuckled, "You guys aren't being nice. Stop the fire. You guys aren't my match. If you continue, only death awaits. I'm not interested in killing you. Where's your leader? I want to meet him."

Hong! Hong! Hong!

At the same time, the last 4 RH2s combusted in balls of fire, and the RH2s that had successfully conquered a few cities under Gong Chang Tian were all wiped out. All of them eyed Gu Mu with pale expressions, many of them trembling.

The disparity in strength was too vast. Even though they had 60 soldiers in this fleet, facing Gu Mu, they were no different from ants. Their lives could be snuffed out just like that.

"I'm the highest in command here, Gong Chang Tian!"

Gong Chang Tian walked out from the command center, speaking brightly in a tone that was neither submissive nor arrogant.

Gu Mu continued to smile warmly, "Very good. Gong Chang Tian, I admire you. Let's become friends. I'm sick of the war between the humans and our Saint Clan. I do wish for peace. Are you willing to become my friend? Let's work together for peace between the humans and Saint Clan, alright?"

"Living in peace?! That's impossible, you bunch of sadistic freaks, are not worthy of living on this planet! I, Gong Chang Tian, would never live alongside you! Brothers, everyone, charge onward! Let's kill this motherfucker! Even if we can't, we must at least bite a chunk of meat!! We humans will never bend our heads!!"

With a roar, his Dou Qi enveloped his body, pushing himself to the state of a Type 4 Divine Warrior. His eyes turning bloodshot, with a tap of his foot, he shot towards Gu Mu.

Lance also activated his ability, as bright light radiated from his body, shining like the sun, causing everyone to be blinded temporarily.

Even Gu Mu had to shield his eyes from the intensity of it.

"Chance!" Gong Chang Tian's eyes flashed with a glint, as he sent a fist towards Gu Mu's head

Peng!

Just as his fist was about to connect with Gu Mu, his head exploded mysteriously.

At the same time, Lance, as well as the soldiers beside him, suffered the same fate.

"At least you've got some backbone."

Gu Mu opened his eyes coldly and muttered as he stared at the corpses, before turning around to leave.

Chapter 771: Type 5 Mutant Beasts' Battle!

The wipeout of Gong Chang Tian's 3rd Unit by Gu Mu and his 15 Type 4 Flesh-Eaters caused a huge wave among the Crusade Group's soldiers. The force was an elite troop of the Resistance, most of them of Type 2 Divine Warrior strength.

After they were killed, for a period of time, everyone was nervous, and Yue Zhong had no choice but to remain in the base to keep them settled.

The moment those Flesh-Eaters acted, they had demonstrated their overwhelming power. After the 3rd Unit was destroyed, no one dared to go against Yue Zhong's opinions anymore, insisting on killing all the Flesh-Eaters in one go.

Although it was possible for Yue Zhong to harass them with Bai Yi's ability, it was far from really causing any substantial damage. The advantages still belonged to the Saint Clan after all.

Within a meeting hall in the Ancient Ruins, Yue Zhong and his subordinates of this world gathered together.

Yue Zhong asked, "Bai Yi, according to Radis's information, there should be stronger equipment and weapons of war compared to the RH2s. We have taken down 11 cities but we haven't discovered anything. Where would those equipment be?"

Bai Yi had previously experienced the First Sacred War and was clearer about the combat than Yue Zhong.

Bai Yi swiftly replied, "The Saint City. Based on the analysis, it is likely that most of the human weapons had been sealed within Saint City. The air fortress that you possess now was one of the strongest weapons utilized by the human forces back then. The Saint Clan had decided to use these as well in order to take down cities."

Yue Zhong eyed everyone present and asked, "Saint City! Who

has been there before, can you please fill me in."

Everyone fell silent, their expressions falling.

Hearing this phrase, Yan's mouth curled, as though he was reminded of some unpleasant memories. He hesitated for a long time before slowly speaking, "I've been there!"

"Saint City, that place is the sacred grounds for those of the Flesh-Eater race. At the same time, it is a paradise where most ignorant humans wish to reside in. Saint City has an inner and outer city, where the inner parts are only exclusive to the Flesh-Eaters. The outer city contains humans and other Flesh-Eaters."

"In Saint City, there's a tough law, even Flesh-Eaters cannot kill humans indiscriminately. All those who do so would be heavily punished. At the same time, there is technology that is way beyond our world within the inner city, and any illnesses or ailments can be cured by some of the machines."

"If you want to enter Saint City, you have to be the elite of the human race, and willing to become a loyal dog of the Saint Clan. Most of the humans in Saint City are no longer considered as our fellow humans, but the hunting dogs of the Flesh-Eaters. They do not view other humans as equals, instead, as long as they receive orders, they would take up their weapons to slaughter other humans."

"There's also a strict household record system, all humans have to leave their fingerprints and iris features with the Bureau. When entering Saint City, they are subjected to fingerprint and iris scans, metal detectors and radiation checks. Without an identity, it is impossible to enter."

Yan seemed to have guessed everyone's thoughts and curiosity as he continued, "Although it seems like Saint City is a secure and stable place with laws and regulations, in truth, humans are truly the lowest of lowest there. My parents and older brother had been captured secretly to become their food."

When they heard this, everyone's eyes were filled with sympathy.

Yue Zhong turned to Sima Bing and asked, "In Saint City, do we have any eyes or ears?"

She shook her head, "Nope. It is impossible to extend our reach within. All those soldiers who had tried to infiltrate had sacrificed their lives to no avail."

"It truly is tough to carry this out!" Yue Zhong frowned and thought.

After that, he continued to ask everyone but did not manage to get any further information.

After the meeting was dismissed, Yue Zhong went back to his room, when suddenly he got an inspiration and summoned Xiangma Yiming to his room.

Yue Zhong asked, "Xiangma Yiming, have you been to Saint City?"

He replied obediently, "Yes, Master!"

Yue Zhong became excited and continued asking, gaining more knowledge from Xiangma Yiming.

Security in Saint City was as tight as what Yan had described, it was impossible for ordinary people to infiltrate. Even for someone like Xiangma Yiming, a Type 4 Divine Warrior, if he wanted to bring a human in, they would have to bring the person to the nearby city for a round of tests, after 2 years, then it was possible for the human to enter.

As for Type 3 Divine Warriors, it was impossible for them to try and recommend humans in. They would have to report in and Saint City would send someone to conduct an evaluation. If there were no problems, there would be further steps along the way, by the time an elite human got in, he or she would be 60 years old.

Yue Zhong took in all this information, considering them carefully and came up with a decision after 3 days.

He brought Xiangma Yiming and Duanmu Sheng in an assault helicopter towards Saint City.

If Yue Zhong were to stay in the resistance, after 9 months, he would at most expand their size by one or two times. Against the forces of Saint Clan, it would still be insignificant. He had to take the initiative.

Deathly silence, barren, bleak, with no trace of life. As Yue Zhong looked out the window in the helicopter, all he saw were abandoned cities.

All of a sudden, the pilot of the helicopter shouted out with a pale expression, "Not good!! Leader!! There's a strange life form flying over here!!"

Yue Zhong's face fell as he barked out, "Descend immediately!"

In this world, not even the skies were safe, as there were plenty of Mutant Beasts in the air. If one's luck was bad, they would meet high-level Mutant Beasts. Even a fighter jet would be destroyed. Emergency landings were one of the tactics to avoid them.

The helicopter quickly descended with Yue Zhong's order.

A huge beast wrapped in flames, its wingspan easily over a hundred meters and its body covered entirely in red scales came swooping over. It had a crocodile head.

Behind that crocodile-head beast, there was a green scaled-pterosaur of hundreds of meters in length chasing after the former.

The two mythical beasts clashed together in a mad frenzy, one utilizing flames, the other utilizing the storm and winds, pushing their innate abilities to attack each other.

"Type 5 Mutant Beasts!"

Yue Zhong activated his Eye of Perception and immediately received the notifications.

On Earth, he could use the skill to tell the name and level of any Mutant Beast. However, on this planet, the usage of the skill was severely limited.

The 2 Mutant Beasts were engaged in a slugfest, when suddenly, a huge wind blade descended from the skies, striking the assault helicopter.

The assault helicopter was sliced through like butter, as countless metal parts scattered everywhere. The pilot was sliced in two as well.

Yue Zhong lost his right arm due to that sudden attack, while Duanmu Sheng and Xiangma Yiming were fortunate enough to dodge that.

As the both of them had no ability to float, they plunged down towards the ground.

Yue Zhong's back began to shine with his Dark Wind Wings, and he shot down like a beam of light towards his dismembered arm.

After grabbing it, he placed it back on the wound and channeled his Dark Dou Qi to gather at the injury. Enhanced by the Dark Dou Qi, his cells were invigorated and began to recover, automatically connecting with the stump, and soon, his arm was back to normal.

Having reconnected his arm, he flew down. The clash between those 2 Type 5 Mutant Beasts was too shocking, he would be caught in the crossfire, and could easily be killed.

The moment he landed on a hill, he quickly hid behind a huge boulder, observing the battle in the skies.

A number of flaming fireballs descended, blasting the ground in various places. The flames continued to burn, as though inextinguishable.

Numerous wind blades slashed all over the ground, causing new rifts in the earth, their depths unimaginable.

The attacks of the 2 Type 5 Mutant Beasts were truly devastating and ferocious, as large amount of blood continued to fall towards the ground.

Yue Zhong stared at the blood, his eyes almost bursting with desire.

Every part of a Type 5 Beast was a precious treasure, their blood could be used to research new Evolving Liquids, and could nourish energy. Such a treasure was being wasted on the ground. His heart ached, and he pulled out his powerful Electromagnetic Gun, waiting for a chance.

The 2 Type 5 Mutant Beasts had terrifying regenerative abilities. Even if they were hurt, their wounds would heal at a visible rate. After battling for 2 whole hours, the crocodile-head beast was finally grabbed by the pterosaur in the head, and the sharp claws tore a huge chunk out of its skull.

Chapter 772: Velociraptors appears!

The crocodile-head beast stretched out its claws and pierced the pterosaur viciously in the chest as well, tearing a large chunk of flesh and some inner organs out.

Right at this time, Yue Zhong who was hiding at one corner fired his weapon, and an electromagnetic beam shot out, penetrating through the head of the Type 5 Pterosaur.

The Electromagnetic Gun, that had always been able to conquer anything, finally failed for the first time.

When the beam blasted the forehead of the Type 5 Pterosaur, it caused the scales to blast open, causing a 5 cm deep wound. Such an injury was nothing to the Type 5 Pterosaur.

Failing to achieve anything with one hit, Yue Zhong maintained calm, his Dark Dou Qi channeling and enhancing his body, pushing it to the next level, and he fired another 3 times while maintaining his steadiness.

The 3 electromagnetic beam fired out one after another, landing on the wound within milliseconds of each other.

Those beams managed to blast through and prick the brain of the Type 5 Mutant Beast, injuring it like a needle piercing into a person's brain.

The Type 5 Pterosaur shrieked out in alarm and quickly flapped its wings to flee. A huge tornado blew past, as it shot towards the distance like a meteor.

Yue Zhong eyed the fleeing monster and he heaved a sigh of relief.

The Type 5 Pterosaur and the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast had gone all out in mutual destruction, both suffering heavy injuries. Even so, Yue Zhong lacked the ability to finish it off, forcing it to flee was already something impressive.

As the Type 5 Pterosaur fled, the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast descended from the skies, directly entering a small valley.

Yue Zhong observed the location it was heading to, his eyes flashing with greed, and he quickly burst forwards, chasing after it.

That was a Type 5 Mutant Beast, its entire body a moving treasure trove. Its scales could be used to produce the best combat armor, its blood could be used to develop Evolving Liquids, its flesh a powerful source of nutrients and its nuclei even more precious as an energy source.

"Warning! Warning! The region in front has a radiation of Level 4, classified as a mid-radiation zone. Without anti-radiation drugs, your body might possibly undergo mutation."

Yue Zhong moved around the valley for a period of time, when the radiation device at his waist suddenly beeped out the warning.

Without any hesitation, he quickly pulled out the anti-radiation medicine he obtained in Red Rock City and swallowed it, delving deeper into the valley.

"Warning! Warning!! The region in front has a radiation of Level 5, classified as a mid-radiation zone..."

"Warning! Warning! The region in front has a radiation of Level 6..."

Each time Yue Zhong ventured a certain distance in, the device would squeak out to warn him of the increasing levels of radiation.

"Warning! Warning! The region in front has a radiation of Level 7, classified as a high-radiation zone. Even with anti-radiation drugs, your body might suffer and possibly undergo mutation!"

Yue Zhong arrived at the entrance of the valley and heard the urgent warnings of the device. He finally came to a stop and retreated 2 steps.

A high-radiation zone was extremely dangerous, even Type 5 Flesh-Eaters would be enveloped and consumed by the radiation in such places, their cells mutating, turning into Irradiated Devils.

In this world, the strongest Irradiated Devils were not due to the mutations in humans, but those in Flesh-Eaters.

Such a zone was basically no man's land, few would dare to venture in without reason.

Yue Zhong stood there right at the border, his expression ugly as he gazed deep into the valley, his thoughts fleeting.

"Fuck it!! I must at least get a Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei!!"

After hesitating for a while, a look of resolution finally passed his face, as he gobbled down 10 vials of anti-radiation drugs, pulling his Level 5 Defense Vest to cover his head. This precious item that he got from conquering the capital on Earth could withstand radiation. However, he was not too confident in its ability to withstand high levels of radiation.

He then channeled his Bone Encompassing Armor, and put on the scanning helmet he got from Qing Zhang City, wrapping his body in Dark Dou Qi. With his Shadow Steps activated, his entire being flashed towards the valley at a speed faster than sound.

In merely 3 seconds, he had reached a deep part of the valley, noticing that there were no signs of the Crocodile-head Beast, instead, there was the mysterious Gates of Hell.

"Gates of Hell!! There's actually one here. The Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast must have escaped somewhere else through this door. Should I follow?"

Yue Zhong stared at the Gates of Hell and he thought to himself, before coming to a decision, "That Crocodile-head Beast is still not dead; if I follow it, it's possible to deal the killing blow. I can then absorb its life force. This is truly a once-in-a-blue-moon chance. If I were to miss it, it'd be hard to encounter one again!"

He immediately charged through the gate.

With a bright flash, Yue Zhong appeared in another world.

The moment he appeared, he quickly activated his Second Order Stealth, observing his surroundings.

He discovered that he was in a place where huge trees towered and reached for the skies, every one of them dozens of meters tall. The grass was lush and everywhere, there were strange plants and flowers.

The Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast was slumped at one area, its blood flowing without stop, its breath ragged.

"It's not dead yet! Who knows, I might be able to tame it and make it into a Puppet!!" Such a thought arose in his heart, before his eyes flashed with pity, "Damn, I don't have any Type 5 Puppet Rune!'

A single Type 4 Puppet Rune required 50 Type 3 nuclei to form. A Type 5 Puppet Rune required 100 Type 4 nuclei.

The Type 4 nuclei were truly rare and precious, even after conquering 11 cities, his total Type 4 nuclei only reached 36. It was not enough to form a Type 5 Puppet Rune.

Yue Zhong threw that notion out of his mind and appeared on top of the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast.

"Strong! Truly worthy to be called a Type 5 Mutant Beast!!"

Yue Zhong stood on top and could tell that the wounds of the Crocodile-head Beast were already healing at a speed visible to the naked eye. If no one disturbed it, the Type 5 Mutant Beast would easily recover within a short period of time.

He took out his Electromagnetic Gun and fired a few shots into the injured head of the beast. The beams tore apart the brain, further blasting it into pieces.

The Crocodile-head Beast trashed and twisted about for a while,

before dying.

As it died, a large amount of life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body through the God and Devil Imprint, entering his gold God-Devil Nucleus, enlarging it by a little.

"Congratulations on gaining +20 in all attributes, as well as an additional +20 in Strength. All skills below Second Order have gained an extra level. You have also gained 6 skill points."

After killing the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast, Yue Zhong gained another terrifying jump in enhancement, pushing his body constitution as well as obtaining 6 precious skill points.

With the 6 skill points, he could help his Third Order Devil Flame and Third Order Dark Dou Qi to be enhanced once more.

The Dark Dou Qi could push his body constitution, while the Devil Flame granted him terrifying, destructive might. He relied heavily on them, thus he would naturally choose to strengthen them first.

After killing the beast, he pulled out his Flame Blade to slice apart the monster. He worked his way from the head down, obtaining the Type 5 nuclei, then the blood, its hide, its meat and quickly filled up his Storage Ring.

As he was filling up his ring happily, there was a sudden movement in the grass nearby. All of a sudden, a number of beasts bolted out of the blue, charging right for him.

"What?!"

Having undergone so many enhancements, even without utilizing his skills, his full speed had already exceeded the sound barrier. He leaped back forcefully.

However, the speed of the beasts dashing through the tall grass was truly terrifying, exceeding even Yue Zhong.

"Velociraptors!! Aren't they extinct? Even if they are, how is their

speed this disgusting?"

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and he caught sight of the 6 monsters that were dashing towards him, discovering that they were the ferocious velociraptors that were supposed to be extinct a long time ago. Their speed surpassed the speed of sound, and although they had the same appearance as the dinosaurs of yesteryear, their power seemed to be much more than that.

6 of them opened their jaws wide, catching up to Yue Zhong, biting down viciously.

Chapter 773: Level 10 Treasure!

Yue Zhong's Third Order Dark Dou Qi surged, as he pushed himself with his Shadow Steps. His body twisted and he dodged to the side.

4 of the velociraptors bit down on air, while the other 2 managed to land a bite on Yue Zhong's body.

The sharp teeth of the 2 velociraptors tore through the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake hide, the Level 5 Defense Vest, tearing into his body. The force of the bites caused a few of his bones in the right shoulder to shatter, as fresh blood flowed.

"Fast!!"

Shock flashed in his eyes, the speed of these velociraptors could already surpass Type 4 Divine Warriors.

Facing these vicious beasts, Yue Zhong dared not stay any longer, with a thought, he channeled his Devil Flame, blasting towards the velociraptors.

In an instant, the 6 velociraptors were engulfed by the roaring Devil Flames.

A bright white light flashed from the bodies of the velociraptors, resisting the burning of the Devil Flames.

Yue Zhong was taken aback when he saw the light, "Radiance of Light!!"

However, in just 3 seconds, the 6 Velociraptors were incinerated, leaving 6 nuclei. The strands of life force flowed towards Yue Zhong.

After burning them to death, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief.

"Congratulations, you have crossed a hidden Gates of Hell to enter the Third World. You have 2 choices right now, go back to the 2nd World, or close this Gates of Hell, staying in the Third

World to survive, until the day where the 1st and 2nd Worlds collide."

"If you choose to close this gate, you will gain a reward of a random treasure on your body being upgraded to Level 10. At the same time, you will have to complete a mission to open up this gate, to return to the 2nd World."

"Level 10 Treasure?"

He was excited when he heard this. The strongest treasure he had on hand was only Level 7. Even so, it was a great boon to him, and he had never even heard of the existence of a Level 10 Treasure.

Yue Zhong thought for a moment, and pulled up his handheld monitor, speaking firmly, "I choose to stay here. Close the Gates of Hell!"

He had initially intended to stay in the 3rd World to steal the technology from the Saint Clan. However, the mission was risky, and chances of success were low.

In Saint City, there were about 10 Type 5 Divine Warriors, and even the rumored Type 6 Divine Warrior holding the fort. He had initially hoped to infiltrate and make use of Bai Yi to obtain the technology. However, it was unlikely that he would succeed. Since that was the case, he decided to try his luck in the 3rd World. Even more importantly, the allure of the Level 10 Treasure was too great.

The moment he made his choice, the huge Gates of Hell closed shut.

From the skies, a beam of light almost invisible to the naked eye fell on Yue Zhong's ring, causing it to glow.

After the light faded, the ring turned gray as a notification appeared in Yue Zhong's mind.

"Level 10 Mid-Grade Storage Ring, upon equipping, Spirit +60. Storage space has increased to 81 cubic meters."

"Why was it this?!"

Yue Zhong stared at his Storage Ring, his eyes filled with a complicated look. While the space increment after it reached Level 10 was extremely large, he was happy, but what he needed was something to boost his fighting capabilities.

"Your mission has been decided, you have to kill a mid-grade dinosaur general by your own hands. The Gates of Hell would then reopen."

A simple notification rang in his mind, and there were no further words.

"Mid-grade dinosaur general, what's that?"

He frowned, not knowing how and where to start. However, he was certain that it was likely not something easy to deal with.

Yue Zhong turned around to eye the corpse of the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast, and he felt better, "Thankfully, the ring has been expanded. This mountain of meat won't be wasted."

At this time, there was sonorous and terrifying roar from a distance. The earth started to tremble, and Yue Zhong felt a strong sense of unease. He quickly used his Devil Flame to wrap his Flame Blade and sliced the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast into two, keeping one half into his ring and ran.

Not long after, sabretooth tigers, microraptors, velociraptors and as other ancient extinct beasts charged out from the jungle in a dense horde.

Yue Zhong looked at the horde, his expression falling. He did not dare stay for a moment longer than necessary, just 6 Velociraptors were enough to injure him earlier. He could not deal with them even at his best condition, not to mention when he was injured.

Behind that horde of fleeing dinosaurs, there was a huge tyrannosaurus rex with powerful hind legs, its height of over 30m chasing after them.

The speed of the tyrannosaurus rex was incredibly fast, easily chasing up to a velociraptor. It opened its huge jaws and snap down on the unfortunate velociraptor, enveloping it entirely. As its teeth came crushing down, there were the sickening sounds of crushed bones and blood splattered out.

Yue Zhong watched the scene with a chill in his heart. Had it been him, it was definitely impossible to evade that bite.

The running speed of the tyrannosaurus rex was faster than the velociraptor, but the speed of the bite was even more fearsome. There was no way the velociraptor could even react in time.

The tyrannosaurus rex seemed to have a black hole for its appetite. After swallowing that velociraptor, it quickly dashed forwards, opening its jaws once again to bite at a megaraptor this time. Blood covered its jaw red.

There did not seem to be any dinosaur that could defend itself against the tyrannosaurus rex. The monstrous beast charged up to the remaining corpse of the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast and started to devour it voraciously.

Yue Zhong activated his Second Order Stealth, running madly. He did not want to face that fearsome beast right now. He managed to escape to a slightly safer and wider area before he gasped for breath.

All of a sudden, there was a bright flash of light as some humans in strange clothing appeared in front of Yue Zhong.

"Is this random teleportation?"

Yue Zhong saw the sudden transfer of humans and understood, these must be the survivors selected randomly by the System to be sent over.

"Where is this?"

"Who are you people?"

"...."

Seeing themselves appear in a foreign land, the newcomers were thrown into panic.

Yue Zhong stood one side, observing them quietly.

This time, of those who were sent here, there were 6 who looked like young hooligans. 2 of them were doctors dressed in hospital garbs. 7 ladies were in cool, seductive clothing, their looks exquisite and attractive. There were 3 men with weapons, their expressions fierce. 8 men were in prison uniform. 4 black people, 6 white people. 13 naked youths, some of them still joined with one another. One fat man who looked to be in a high position or status, with a sexy and beautiful secretary beside him, as well as 2 bodyguards.

"Holy shit! It's the Rose Group!! They're the idols of Rose Group!!"

One of the hooligans caught sight of the 7 ladies in cool clothing and shouted out excitedly.

"Liu Ying Bing! I'm your fan! Help me sign an autograph please!"

The 6 hooligans immediately clamored over towards the 7 beautiful ladies.

The 8 prisoners, as well as the weapon-wielding men, segregated themselves according to their own groups, exchanging cold looks while eyeing the rest warily.

The bodyguards of the fatso quickly arrived by his side, pulling out their weapons to keep an eye on their surroundings.

The 4 black and 6 white people also observed for a while before heading towards the forest.

"Rose Group? On Earth, there should not have been such an idol group!"

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard this. Although he was not

familiar with the entertainment circle, he was certain he had never heard of the Rose Group. Furthermore, based on the reaction of the 6 hooligans, it seemed like the Rose Group was extremely popular.

Yue Zhong came up to the 7 ladies who were being harassed by the 6 hooligans and asked, "Are you people from Earth?"

One of the hooligan with piercings, his fashion sense heavy with jeans, and his expression wild and fierce shot a dirty look at Yue Zhong and shouted, "Earth? Are you fucking daft? Scram! Can't you see this senior trying to hook up?! I'll beat your fucking ass!"

Another ordinary-looking hooligan with a face full of pimples grabbed a big-breasted lady and tried pulling her towards the forest, while cursing, "Fuck! What the fuck are you acting pure for!! Stinking bitch, you must have been screwed countless times by those producers and directors, this senior wants you for one time, yet you don't want to give me face?! Fucking bitch!! Everyone, let's take turns screwing her!!"

The young lady, with light makeup, her hair in a single ponytail, and her figure truly explosive, started to scream, "No!! Save me!! Save me!!"

"Shun!! This is Sun Lan Lan!! Your father I have had a crush on her for a long time!! I want to be her first!"

Following some wolf-calls, the 6 of them pounced over.

As Sun Lan Lan was being dragged away, the rest of the 6 beauties had fear in their eyes, not daring to say anything.

Only one of them, whose looks were the most striking out of them, with a pure yet valiant aura about her, stepped forward to shout, "Let go of her!! Let go of Lan Lan!! You guys are breaking the law!! I'll call the cops!"

Chapter 774: Prehistoric Giant Mosquitoes!

One hooligan laughed with lust as he grabbed the girl's hands, pulling her towards the forest, "Han Qiang! Just nice! You're the one I like! You guys aren't allowed to snatch her from me!!"

Han Qiang immediately screamed shrilly, "Let go!! Save me!! Save me!!"

The 2 doctors exchanged a look of hesitation before running forward.

2 of the hooligans pulled out knives from their waists and threatened, "Fuck off!! Your seniors are here conducting business, don't butt in!! Otherwise, we'll leave you with some 'presents'!"

The 2 doctors came to halt, their bodies shivering slightly, before lowering their head in shame. Although they had their conscience, under the threat of death, they chose to maintain silence.

The rest watched coldly, no one intended to help.

"Help!! Help!!"

The voices of Han Qiang and Sun Lan Lan rang out throughout the compound.

One prisoner stepped forward with a savage grin, walking towards the other 5 members, "Damn! This senior has been cooped up so long, and have not touched any woman for so long!! Today, I'll enjoy myself properly!!"

"Seriously, what a bunch of trash!"

Yue Zhong saw this and frowned, pulling out his silencer pistol, pointing it at the hooligan who had grabbed onto Han Qiang and fired once.

A bullet hole appeared in between his head, as the dead youth slumped to the ground with a look of disbelief.

"AH!!!"

"Gun!! He has a gun!!"

"Everyone, attack!!"

"..."

Seeing that Yue Zhong used a gun to kill their own friend, the other 6 hooligans felt fear. They screamed out and 3 of them charged over, while 2 escaped towards the forest, and the last held Sun Lan Lan as hostage.

Following a few clear gunshots, the 6 of them were shot dead.

As their dead corpses slumped to the ground, the rest of the people were filled with shock.

Han Qiang and Sun Lan Lang were pale, not knowing what to do.

The convict who had wanted to enjoy himself felt his back break out in cold sweat, as he edged away silently.

The fatso, his secretary, and bodyguards all looked at Yue Zhong with alarm and respect.

Yue Zhong came up to Han Qiong and asked, "I'm asking you, did you guys come from Earth?"

Han Qiong looked at this man who had just killed 7 men without batting an eyelid, trembling in fear. However, she replied resolutely, "What is Earth? I don't understand! Our Rose Group come from Duran Country! We're just an idol group from Duran Country!"

Yue Zhong was sure they were not from Earth, and immediately changed his question, "Duran? Which planet are you guys from?"

"Our planet is called Saturn!" She finally understood Yue Zhong's question, and her face turned pale, as she continued to ask in disbelief, "Mister, are we not on Saturn right now?!"

Yue Zhong replied, "Nope! This is not Saturn!"

He calculated silently, "Seems like it's not only our Earth that

had been sucked into this cruel world. Other planets are likely within the palms of that existence."

Han Qiong saw Yue Zhong's wound from the bite of the velociraptors and could not help but remind him, "Your injuries are serious! You should go to the hospital!"

She was good-hearted, and although Yue Zhong had killed the 7 hooligans mercilessly, and she was filled with fear towards him, she still reminded him.

The fatso clapped his hands lightly to attract everyone's attention. He smiled and introduced, "Hi! I'm Luo Sheng! The CEO of Tiandu Group. Seems like everyone had been transported here by some mysterious power. I suggest that everyone join hands and look for a way home, how about that?"

"Help!!! Help!!"

Before he could finish speaking, screams of fear sounded from the forest.

3 black men and 5 white men ran out from the forests, behind them, a sabertooth tiger chased. With a single leap, it pounced onto one of the black men, ripping his throat with a single bite.

"Run!!"

The moment the tiger appeared, everyone started to run in all directions. Only Yue Zhong stood still to observe the tiger.

Han Qiong ran a few steps before she saw Yue Zhong remaining where he was, and screamed, "Run!! You're going to be eaten if you stay there!!"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, looking at the Sabertooth Tiger, "No worries! I'm just in need of a good tiger pelt!"

The beast looked towards Yue Zhong warily, and instantly abandoned the corpse of the black man in its jaws. With its limbs tensing up, it quickly pounced towards Yue Zhong with a speed

surpassing Type 2 Lightning.

‘Fool!’

Han Qiong watched as the Sabertooth Tiger leaped towards Yue Zhong and cursed. Although she was afraid of this man who had killed those hooligans, she was grateful to him, and could not bear to see him eaten up.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Flame Blade and slashed down.

With a flash of his blade, the head of the Sabertooth Tiger soared into the sky, fresh blood pouring out of its body as it slumped to the ground.

"Amazing!!" Han Qiong saw how easily Yue Zhong had slaughtered the Sabertooth Tiger and her heart was full of shock.

After killing it, he immediately pulled out a small gas stove, pot, clean water as well as seasoning to prepare the Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast.

Han Qiong shot Yue Zhong a look and quickly chased her companions.

"Help! Help!! Save me!!"

Han Qiong had just run a few steps when she saw the other idols of the Rose Group fleeing towards another direction. Behind them, there was a huge mosquito with a wingspan of 6m, its sucker pierced through the chest of one of the girls. She was screaming out in terror and pain.

Han Qiong saw this and screamed out while crying, "Wen Wen!!! Hold on!! I'll get someone to save you!!"

Before she finished, the body of Wen Wen convulsed violently, and her entire body seemed to be suddenly drained of all fluids. There was no chance of survival at all.

The rest of the girls screamed when they saw it, fleeing as far as they could like headless flies.

Han Qiong continued to scream while running back towards Yue Zhong, "Over here!! Here!!! There's an expert here, he can protect us!!"

Only Sun Lan Lan, a petite girl, as well as another tall one with chestnut hair quickly ran over. The remaining 2 seemed to be oblivious as they fled towards the forest.

When the huge mosquito had finished sucking Wen Wen's corpse dry, it flapped its wings and flew towards Han Qiong.

When the 4 of them saw this, their souls almost left their bodies as they quickened their pace.

The petite girl was fleeing hastily when she tripped over a stone and fell to the ground. Despair was written all over her face as she screamed in a shrill voice, "Save me!! Qiong Qiong!! Save me!!! Lan Lan!!! Don't leave me behind!! Chen Chen!!"

Hearing her screams, Sun Lan Lan came to a halt, hesitating for a while. The chestnut-hair Chen Chen continued to flee with big strides.

Han Qiong came to a stop, gritting her teeth, throwing a huge stone towards the giant prehistoric mosquito, screaming, "The mister from Earth!! Please save us!!"

She lacked strength and had no prior training, thus the stone missed the mosquito.

The prehistoric mosquito was about to pierce the body of the petite girl.

The girl's face was written with despair, tears flowing out her eyes, and there was even a sliver of yellow urine coming out from her pants.

Peng! Peng!

Just as it was about to finish off the girl, 2 Stinger bullets slammed squarely into its head, bursting it, and the mosquito was

dead.

Blood sprayed all over the girl below, as the lifeless mosquito plunged down and fell on top of the petite girl.

"Wuwuwu!!"

She was shocked, as she quickly scrambled from under the body of the mosquito, without a care for her image.

Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan, and Zhang Chen Chen turned to look at Yue Zhong, as well as the Stinger in his hands.

The 4 of them quickly ran to his side, finally feeling a sense of security.

Han Qiong thanked Yue Zhong with gratitude, "Many thanks! I'm Han Qiong, this is Sun Lan Lan, Zhang Chen Chen and Qian Wei Wei! How do we address you?"

"It's Yue Zhong!"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, before whisking out the meat of the Type 5 Beast and began to devour it. The meat was tender and bouncy, full of flavor and extremely delicious. The moment it entered Yue Zhong's abdomen, it transformed into energy to nourish his body, pushing his recovery.

Qian Wei Wei began to sob at one corner.

Zhang Chen Chen looked at Yue Zhong, a strange glint in her eyes.

Sun Lan Lan hesitated for a moment before stepping forward, "I'm Sun Lan Lan, thank you for saving me earlier."

He replied indifferently, "Don't mention it."

It was merely a wave of his hand, Yue Zhong was also sick of seeing scums bullying women.

After that, he went back to his meal quietly, and the atmosphere turned quiet.

Chapter 775: Dino Slave-Hunting Team!

"What's going on"

As Yue Zhong gobbled up 10 pieces of the meat, the Type 5 meat managed to nourish his body, pushing his healing to recover from the wounds of the velociraptor. However, as his muscles began to heal, there were sharp stabs of pain from his wounds, as a numbing sensation began to travel throughout his body.

Yue Zhong's face turned ugly and had a bad feeling.

"Help!! Help!!"

At this moment, there were the sounds of screams from the forest. The fatso, his secretary as well as his bodyguards turned to look, as those youths who were engaged in an orgy ran out of the forest, their faces full of shock and fear.

Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan and the other 2 immediately got behind Yue Zhong.

The fatso and his entourage were running with all his might, when suddenly, a long spear came hurtling out of the forest, piercing one of the bodyguards beside him, pinning him to a tree. The bodyguard wailed in agony while he struggled.

The sultry secretary despaired as she gritted her teeth and pushed the fatso in front of her, causing him to fall.

Multiple spears then shot out suddenly, piercing the fatso full of holes, causing him to squeal and scream like a pig being slaughtered.

The secretary had fear in her eyes as she ran towards Yue Zhong and pleaded, "Save me!! Save me!! As long as you save me, once we're back, I'll give you 50 million credit points! I'll give you anything, please, please save me!"

However, Yue Zhong was in a tight spot and could not afford to

deal with the lady. A strange numb sensation traveled throughout his entire body from the wound of his right shoulder. Everywhere the sensation spread, he felt his control over his body cut off, as though he had lost that body part.

"Shit!!"

Yue Zhong's expression turned ugly, he had never experienced such an abnormal thing. With his Regeneration skill, no matter how many times his chest had been pierced, he had always healed properly. It was the first time he was facing such a strange phenomenon.

If it were during a peaceful period, it would have been fine. However, they were in the middle of nowhere with danger beseeching them on all sides. He had not even gotten a clear picture of how dangerous the Third World was, if he was not careful, he might die at the jaws of those strange prehistoric beasts.

The secretary had barely managed a few yards when a long spear shot out from the forest, piercing her left leg, blasting it to pieces. She screamed out and tumbled to the ground, moaning in agony.

The tall grass shook, as 10 humanoid creatures riding atop a velociraptor each, with spears in their hands, appeared. They were over 3 meters tall and had green skin, and the most fearsome thing was that they had dinosaur heads.

The 10 dinosaur-head hunters nudged their mounts forward towards the escaping nude young men and women, and they reached them easily, opening their jaws to snap down on them.

"Help!! Save me!!"

One naked man screamed out as one of the velociraptors chomped down on his body. With a sickening crunch, the man was torn in half.

A naked young woman ran and suddenly tripped, tumbling to the

ground. She turned to look fearfully at the approaching dino-head, her eyes filled with horror as urine began to flow uncontrollably. She cried and pleaded, "Ah!! Don't kill me!! Please don't kill me!!"

Yue Zhong stared at the 10 dino-head hunters who had suddenly appeared and stood right up, channeling his Dark Dou Qi, enveloping his entire body.

However, just as the Dark Dou Qi started to flow, his entire body was buffeted by a numbing sensation, and he crumpled to the floor.

"Fuck! What's going on?"

Yue Zhong was thoroughly shaken, as he tried to struggle and stand. However, his entire body seared in temperature, and he felt dizzy, falling into a semi-conscious state.

The 10 dino-heads charged out from the forest, ignoring those who were on the ground, instead, chasing after those who were fleeing, throwing spears to nail them to the ground.

Sun Lan Lan trembled uncontrollably, not daring to move, asking Han Qiong, "What should we do?"

As Yue Zhong suddenly crumpled to the ground, they felt helpless, having lost their pillar of support. These dino-head hunters did not seem to be friendly.

Yue Zhong had fallen down suddenly, and while Han Qiong was similarly frightened, she maintained her wits to observe, "Wait, they seem to be chasing those running. Let's wait."

Those who were running seemed to have noticed this as well, and many quickly got down on the ground and begged for their lives.

One of the dino-people gazed down at his prey, revealing a satisfied expression, "Very good! Seems like our Slave Hunting Team has gotten a good haul of humans. We can have a good drink when we're back!"

These dino-people actually could speak, although it was in some different language. However, for some weird reason, everyone could understand them clearly.

One of them threw a large rope over to a naked man and barked, "You, come over here, tie them up!!"

The naked man grabbed the rope and nodded profusely, tying the rest of the humans, "Yes!! Yes!!"

Yue Zhong, the naked woman with one missing leg, and the rest of those who had been pierced by spears were all tied together and tied to the tail of one of the velociraptors.

The human corpses were all tied together on another velociraptor.

Yue Zhong sunk into a semi-conscious state and watched helplessly as he was dragged along like trash.

The squad of dino-people re-gathered and left the area.

Many squads appeared within the forest, behind them, they dragged many human corpses or their own velociraptor corpses. Some of them even had dinosaur eggs.

The total number of hunters were about 200, as they regrouped and quickly left.

While in his semi-conscious state, Yue Zhong could feel his entire body suffering from a tingling sensation, when suddenly, a hot surge of energy charged everywhere, causing him to lose control over his body.

At this moment, the golden God-Devil Nuclei in his sea of knowledge began to glow, and the gold radiance continued to shine brightly, pulling forth all the life force that had been absorbed into his cells, transforming them into the purest energy to nourish his body.

"Congratulations on becoming a Strength, Stamina and Agility

Triple-Attribute Evolver."

"Congratulations on achieving the perfect attribute evolution, all skills below Second Order will gain a level of enhancement! You've also gained the Level 5 Skill, Summon Tamed Beasts."

"Level 5 Skill: Summon Tamed Beasts. Regardless of your position, casting this skill can summon the beasts that you have tamed to your side."

When Yue Zhong woke up, a constant flow of notifications resounded in his mind.

"Perfect Attributes! I actually became a 6-Attribute Evolver? I didn't die?!"

His eyelids fluttered open and discovered that he was in a dark and smelly cell, with almost no light.

'You're awake!!'

At this moment, the excited squeal of a girl sounded nearby.

Yue Zhong turned around and noticed Han Qiong grabbing a wet towel, looking at him with joy. Evidently, this pretty girl had been taking care of him all this while. It caused him to feel touched and warm, despite his hardened heart.

He asked, "How many days was I out for?"

Han Qiong sat beside him, "2 days!"

"Where is this?"

"This is the Underground jail of Temron City. We were captured by a hunting squad from Temron City, becoming their slaves! This is where they keep us!"

Yue Zhong assessed his plight, turning his head to take in information, noting that there were 31 people within the cell, everyone almost handicapped from having lost a limb. The secretary whose left leg had been destroyed was curled up in a corner, her face dirty, and her appearance looked like a ghost, with

none of her initial allure and charm.

Yue Zhong asked, "Where are your friends?"

Han Qiong pointed to the next cell, "They're over there!"

He swept a gaze across, noticing that Sun Lan Lan and the other 2 were huddled together in a corner of the other cell, their faces pale and weak.

"Why are you here?"

Han Qiong looked straight at him with her clear eyes, and smiled brightly, "In order to take care of you, silly! You saved our lives since you're in trouble now, I'll naturally help you! This is my way of life!"

"Thank you!"

Yue Zhong looked at her and smiled lightly. Maybe he might still have been fine without her care, but this girl was actually willing to go out of her way to take care of him even in such a situation. It was truly hard to come by.

"No problem!"

She smiled back, revealing a bright expression. In this dark and dank place, it was as though her smile lit up the entire room.

At this moment, one dino-person pulled 3 velociraptors along.

When he entered the cell, his eyes swept across the room, before pointing at Han Qiong, "You! Come out!!"

Han Qiong stood up, "I'm going! Be careful!"

She did not dare to disobey their orders.

Yue Zhong nodded, "Yep!"

Chapter 776: Prison Break!

The dino-person laughed grimly, releasing some ropes, "Time for your meal! Go! My darlings!"

3 velociraptors immediately pounced towards the disabled people.

"Help!! Help!! Save me!!"

The sexy secretary cried, as tears and snot flowed down her face. She struggled towards one corner of the prison. However, she had just managed a few steps when a powerful jaw clamped down on her, tearing her in half. Blood and bone spurted out of the jaws of the dinosaur, causing the velociraptor to look even more savage.

"No!!"

"Don't eat me!!"

"Save me!!"

"..."

Seeing the terrible scene, the rest of the disabled people began to run frantically for their lives within the cell.

The speed of the 3 velociraptors exceeded even that of Type 4 Divine Warriors, and ordinary people had no way of escaping such beasts. Many of them lost their lives to the velociraptors, filling the cell with screams, blood, and the sickening sounds of crunching bones.

As the velociraptors preyed on the humans, the humans continued to flee. They knew they could not outrun the velociraptors, but they just needed to be ahead of their peers, waiting for the velociraptors to eat their fill.

The people in the other cells watched this and they trembled in fear, their eyes filled with terror. They crept back in their own cells, afraid of their own fate.

"Damn beasts, seems like they treat us as food for these velociraptors!!"

Yue Zhong felt a boiling rage in him as he watched. These dino-people obviously did not treat the humans as humans, instead, as food to feed these velociraptors.

In one cell, Han Qiong's scream sounded out, "Watch out!!"

After tearing apart one unfortunate person in two, a velociraptor turned towards Yue Zhong and charged at him with a flash in its eyes.

"Ah! How did its speed become slow? No, that's not right, I've become faster!!"

Yue Zhong stared in wonder when he saw the velociraptor pouncing towards him, he suddenly burst forth and leaped onto its back, sending a fist towards its head.

After going through a metamorphosis this time, possessing the evolved-Strength attribute, he suddenly had 38 times Strength, and when that force exploded out, the velociraptor immediately buckled.

Yue Zhong sent fist after fist pummeling the head of the velociraptor, its skull caving in.

In a breath of a time, the velociraptor died with its brain juices flowing out.

"Might as well go all the way, let's break out of this goddamn place!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong flipped his hands and brought out his Flame Blade. He burst forth with his full speed, instantly appearing in front of the dino-person, his blade slashing down, chopping him in half. There was not even enough time for the dino-person to react.

At this time, the 2 remaining velociraptors charged over, and

their speed was still a threat to Yue Zhong. Furthermore, their fangs had some obvious bacteria, he did not want to be bitten by them again.

He activated his Shadow Steps, his speed exceeding a peak Type 4 Divine Warrior, reaching 1.3 Mach. He lightly leaped onto one of them and sent another powerful fist towards its head, sending it crashing to the ground.

The other velociraptor opened its jaws, forcing Yue Zhong to retreat a step, and the velociraptor closed its jaws on empty air. He then sent a kick towards its head, and the beast, which weighed a ton, to fly a dozen meters.

The single hit caused the velociraptor to concuss. Yue Zhong pointed with a finger, and a Type 3 Puppet Rune flew out, entering the head of the beast.

Yue Zhong eyed the other velociraptor still on the ground and also pointed, sending another rune towards it.

When the rest of the humans saw Yue Zhong easily disposing of the dino-person and 3 velociraptors, their eyes were filled with shock. They knew how terrifying these creatures were, and no one had been able to withstand a single strike from them. The velociraptors were more powerful than any beasts that any of them had seen.

In one of the cell, one young man who had thinning hair screamed out, "What are you doing? You bastard, you actually killed the esteemed dino-people. Do you know what that means? All of us will die because of you!!"

"Fuck!! You actually killed him?"

"Bastard!! Why did you kill the dino-person?! Are you trying to get us in trouble?!"

"Beast!! What were you thinking?! You're going to drag us all with you!!"

"...."

A number of curses were directed at him, as the other people all could not help but become frantic.

He shot them all a glare and barked, "Shut the fuck up! Bunch of trash! My temper is not good, if any of you wants to spout more bullshit, I can send you to meet the dinosaurs in hell!"

At that, everyone's hearts trembled in fear, and they fell silent. They saw how casually and ruthlessly he had finished the dinosaurs off. They did not dare to wage their own lives on his temper.

"I want to make my way out of this prison, those who want to stay, stay, those who want to leave, leave!"

He pulled out his Flame Blade and tore his way into Han Qiong's cell, "Are you coming with me, or staying?"

Han Qiong looked at Sun Lan Lan and the rest, "Can I bring my friends along?"

"Sure! Let me make myself clear first, if there're any battles, later on, I might not be able to ensure their safety."

Han Qiong turned to look at the rest and asked, "Did you guys hear that? Are you coming? I'm leaving! I don't want to become food like the rest here."

Sun Lan Lan and the rest exchanged looks, hesitating. They had seen how terrifying the dinosaurs were. Inside this Temron City, there were dinosaurs and dino-people everywhere. Yue Zhong might be strong enough to deal with one or 2, however, it would be a tough mission to lead them out safely. The moment they were caught, they would definitely face unimaginable consequences.

Yue Zhong barked coldly, "3 more seconds to consider!"

To these beautiful idols, Yue Zhong did not have too much of a favorable impression. He only felt better about Han Qiong because

she knew how to repay kindness.

Sun Lan Lan gritted her teeth and stood up, "I'm coming!!"

Zhang Chen Cheng and Qian Wei Wei lowered their head and apologized softly, "Sorry! Qiong Qiong!"

"Let's go!!"

Since they had made their decision, he quickly led Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan towards one of the Velociraptors. He had intended to save only Han Qiong, that was why he prepared a stead. The other was for convenience.

"Grab onto me!"

Yue Zhong leaped onto the velociraptor, hugging Han Qiong in his arms while commanding Sun Lan Lan.

Sun Lan Lan looked at Han Qiong with envy, before getting up and hugging Yue Zhong from behind.

Yue Zhong grabbed on the ropes and urged the 2 velociraptors out.

"Save me!! Save me!!"

"Let me out!! Let me out!!"

"Open this up!! Let me out!!"

"Let me kill my way out together with you!!"

"...."

Many of the humans began to scream and holler in frenzy within their cells. While some were willing to stay and wait for their deaths, many wanted to fight for their lives.

Yue Zhong rode the velociraptor and swung his Black Tooth Blade, causing all the cells to be broken, releasing the human captives.

"Warning!! Warning!! The human slaves are revolting!"

An alarm began to ring, as a number of dino-warriors charged out.

3 of them stood in front of Yue Zhong, barking, "Hold it!"

"Go to hell!!"

He then whisked out his Stinger, firing 3 shots, killing them with a blast to their heads.

"Tough bodies!!"

He looked at their corpses, and his heart chilled. Their bodies were truly tough, already reaching Type 3 Divine Warriors. These were just ordinary dino-people, who knew what else was out there.

Yue Zhong kept his Stinger, and pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, killing his way out.

Various dino-people were charging over, but their heads were blasted apart by the beams from Yue Zhong's Electromagnetic Gun.

Having evolved to a Perfect-Attribute Evolver, his strength had undergone a heaven-and-earth transformation. Just his body constitution was already on par with a Type 4 Divine Warrior. Adding on to his skills, the ordinary dino-people were not his match.

Chapter 777: Icy Hell!

The entire underground prison became chaotic as droves of human captives began to flee.

Yue Zhong sent out a few slashes, turning the steel bars of a cell into chopped up parts, before turning around to leave.

"Wait a moment, this little brother, are you intending to break out of the prison? If so, allow me to lend you a hand."

Right at this time, a voice sounded from behind.

Yue Zhong turned around, only to discover a burly man with a pair of fierce eyes. This man would have been assumed to be a convict among humans, furthermore, he had 6 other inmates behind him, just like a little ring.

The man with muscles introduced himself in a boomy voice, "I'm Niu Meng! These are my brothers!"

Yue Zhong gazed at them and asked them without standing on ceremony, "What ability do you have?"

Niu Meng replied, "I've been held in a cell for a year, and I'm extremely familiar with the place. This little brother, you're truly strong, however, it's not enough to break out of this Temron Prison! There's a certain dino-lord over here as the head guard. His strength is no less than ten times that of the normal dino-people. Furthermore, his mount is a Violent Raptor. They all have the strength of Type 4 Divine Warriors, with the Violent Raptor at the peak of Type 4 Divine Strength. Many experts had been torn apart by their teamwork.

"Do you know how to ride?" Yue Zhong asked.

"Yes!"

Yue Zhong then pointed to another velociraptor, "You and your brothers can ride that!"

"Great!"

Niu Meng was considered a straightforward person and immediately got on to the velociraptor.

Niu Meng asked, "How do we address you?"

"Yue Zhong!"

Niu Meng then continued, "Brother Yue Zhong, the lowest level of this underground prison is an icy hell. They keep many of our human experts there as punishment. If you want to break out of here, you need to release those prisoners. That way, it's possible to charge out of Temron with everyone's combined efforts."

Yue Zhong asked, "Are there any experts guarding the icy hell?"

Niu Meng swiftly replied, "There aren't too many experts there, the strongest is maybe a Type 3 Divine Warrior and some of their mounts. However, we have to be fast, as the Dino-lords of the town would quickly come over to deal with the situation."

"Alright! Let's head there!" Yue Zhong swiftly made a decision. Since he was not yet familiar with this place, he needed the locals to help.

The dino-people were obviously hostile to the humans, thus Yue Zhong could only cooperate with their enemies.

Yue Zhong swiftly changed his direction, heading deeper into the prison.

"Icy Hell!! Their target is the icy hell!! Stop them!! They cannot be allowed to make it there!"

"Damn it! Their targets are the precious beasts!! Quick, stop them!!"

"..."

Following some roars and shrieks, a number of dino-people charged over on their various velociraptor mounts. Space was vast in this underground prison, allowing those mounts to run

unbridled.

Within a few minutes, more guards were appearing and rushing at Yue Zhong.

If it were before his evolution to a Perfect-Attribute Evolver, Yue Zhong would have definitely been forced back by those dino-people, and he would only be able to strike a strategic retreat. However, now, he controlled his Electromagnetic Gun with ease, firing multiple beams out, claiming the lives of the dino-people with every single shot.

The velociraptors continued to snarl and attack Yue Zhong even after their riders were killed.

With a steely glint, Yue Zhong slashed out continuously with his gigantic Black Tooth Blade, empowered by his Dark Dou Qi, slicing off the heads of the velociraptors.

As he killed them, he was still secretly surprised in his heart, "The defense of this Temron Prison is truly tight. If I hadn't evolved, I wouldn't have been able to last this long."

After entering the 3rd World, Yue Zhong had undergone an evolution, yet he still needed to push his limits and channel his Dark Dou Qi to maintain an absolute advantage.

Had it been before, dealing with a single Type 3 dino-rider would not have been an issue. 6 simultaneous attacks could force him back. 20 of them would be able to kill him. After all, before the evolution, he was also capable of unleashing a might close to an initial-stage Type 4 Divine Warrior, this showed how powerful the dino-riders were.

He continued to slaughter them as they come, while his Stamina and Spirit was being whittled away quickly.

Finally, at the deepest recess of the prison, there was a huge door that had engravings of a T-Rex, Tanystropheus, Brontosaurus, Cetiosaurus, Stegosaurus, Triceratops and other magnificent

prehistoric beasts.

Niu Meng stared at the door with a complicated gaze, "This is the Icy Hell!! Beyond the door, there are our strongest human experts, frozen.

The Icy Hell was known as the forbidden area of Temron City, where many powerful human experts were sealed in ice. It was the deepest of prisons, and it was rumored that every single human kept there had never been able to come out.

"Open!!"

Yue Zhong swung his 2m-long Black Tooth Blade with his 38-times Strength onto the huge door.

Dang!!

Following a loud resounding sound, Yue Zhong's Black Tooth Blade was sent flying, while the knockback caused his entire right arm to go numb. However, there was not a single scratch on the huge door.

"What a tough door!"

With his eyes full of shock, Yue Zhong saw that there was no mark left by the weapon that could even split apart an entire tank. The door was truly resilient.

Niu Meng looked at the door and gritted his teeth, "Damn it! It's rumored that the door requires the key of the Governor, Uribi Taichi. I didn't expect it to be real!"

Niu Meng had only heard about the legends of the Icy Hell and had never been here before.

Those who had seen this door were either the humans who were sealed within or the dino-people that brought them here.

With a thought, Yue Zhong brought out his sharpest blade, the Flame Blade, wrapping it in Dark Dou Qi, and slashed down once more.

Dang!

Another resounding clash, the Flame Blade managed to slice through slightly, even with Yue Zhong's channeling of the Dark Dou Qi, it only caused the Flame Blade to enter little by little.

He quickly retrieved his blade with a dark look, "No! If this goes on, by the time I cut through, my Stamina will be gone!"

Niu Meng's face had an apologetic look, "Brother Yue Zhong, I'm sorry! I really did not know that this door was so tough! Let's leave, otherwise, it'll be too late by the time the dino-people come!"

"I'll try once more!"

Yue Zhong gazed at the door, stretching out his right hand. A pillar of Devil Flame soared upwards as it quickly condensed in a searing manner and congealed a powerful Devil Flame blade.

"Open for me!!!"

When the Devil Flame blade came in contact with the door, it continued to shrink while the intensity of it grew hotter, and it finally sliced through the door like butter.

"It's opened!! Holy shit!!"

"He sliced through the Icy Hell's door!!"

"..."

Niu Meng and his brother watched in shock. They had heard that the doors were impenetrable, and he had brought Yue Zhong here merely to try his luck. He had not much expectation towards breaking the door. However, Yue Zhong had performed the impossible, causing him to be in disbelief.

The moment the doors were sliced open, a powerful wind of cold air blew out from within, causing everyone to be doused with a layer of ice almost instantly.

"Cold!!"

Sun Lan Lan began to tremble uncontrollably, hugging Yue Zhong tighter, hoping to get more warmth from him.

Han Qiong was slightly stronger, however, her lips were turning purple, and her body shivered uncontrollably.

Niu Meng and his men were suffering the same.

"All of you back up, I'll go in to save them!"

Yue Zhong quickly summoned White Bones, giving it an order, "Protect these 2 women!"

White Bones' fiery demonic eyes flashed as it nodded.

With a thought, a layer of Devil Flame shrouded Yue Zhong, and he took his first step in.

The moment he entered, he felt the cold plummeting to 20 times worse than before, dousing the Devil Flames on his body. The intensity of it caused his body temperature to plunge, as a layer of ice formed around him.

"What a terrifying Icy Hell!! This is fearsome!"

He was taken aback and quickly channeled his Devil Flames to shroud himself again, pushing his limits to resist the biting cold threatening to envelop him.

"5 minutes, seems like I can hang on here for another 5 minutes, tops. I would then be sealed by the cold!" Yue Zhong could feel the whittling of his Stamina and Spirit and came to a conclusion.

"However, 5 minutes is more than enough!"

Yue Zhong's gaze swept through the inner parts of this Icy Hell.

Within the mighty cavern, there were a total of 320 ice cages of varying sizes, of which 300 were humans in smaller cages. Of the 20 larger ones, 6 were ice statues, containing humans within each of them.

Chapter 778: Dino-General!

"Such a terrifying freezing force, there must be some secret to this chamber!"

Yue Zhong took a look around at the humans sealed in ice and swept his gaze around.

Inside the Icy Hell, there was a small, mysterious altar, and the frosty air was billowing out of it, enveloping the entire chamber.

He quickly came up to it, noticing that there were many strange runes engraved on it. In the middle, there was a white nucleus.

"This is a Type 5 Mutant Beast nucleus! What extravagance, they actually used this to create this Icy Hell!"

Yue Zhong felt a wave of shock when he saw the nucleus, recognizing it as a Type 5 Mutant Beast nucleus.

Every single Type 5 Beast possessed an overwhelming strength, their nuclei would definitely be precious. On his journey, Yue Zhong had been lucky to chance upon one. In this Icy Hell, there was actually one powering the frost-producing altar, which showed that the dino-people race did not view it as particularly precious.

Yue Zhong raised his hands and grabbed the Type 5 Nucleus, extracting it from the altar, and kept it in his storage ring.

The moment he took it away, the source of the frost energy in the cavern disappeared, and although it was still cold, it became manageable.

Soon, the rest of the small ice cages also began to melt away at a strange speed. However, the 6 prominent ice statues did not seem to have any change.

"Apologies! I will need to be a little forceful!"

With a wave of his hands, 6 fiery lights flew towards the ice

statues, and they began to melt, forming large puddles of water.

Kacha!!

"Finally!! I'm out!!! I thought I would have to be in there for the rest of my life!" When there was little of the ice left, one of the statues broke apart in a shower of ice shards, as a burly man with a sword-like gaze stepped out, breathing deeply.

He stretched, before revealing a bright smile towards Yue Zhong, "Kid! Was it you who released me? Thanks! My name is Lei Yong Feng, and I can slaughter dinosaurs with my bare hands!"

"Hahaha! This senior is finally free from this goddamn place!! Hahaha!!!" Another ice statue broke apart, revealing an ordinary-looking man who smiled as he walked out.

He turned to Yue Zhong and grinned, "Kid, I, Lei Bao, owe you one!"

"I'm Yue Zhong! Seniors, I'll leave this place to you. I'm heading off first! May fate allow us to meet again!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, before turning around to leave. He opened the Icy Hell in order to release the captives here. It would throw Temron Prison into further chaos, and he could make use of the chance to flee. Since he had accomplished his objective, he naturally would not stay here.

Lei Yong Feng looked at Yue Zhong's retreating back and laughed lightly, "Interesting fellow!"

Just as Yue Zhong stepped out from the Icy Hell, a corpse flew towards him. He twisted his body abruptly, causing the corpse to slam into the gate of Icy Hell. It was crushed into meat paste by the impact, as though slammed and squashed by a huge truck.

A rider appeared, his body in a silver armor, his head that of a dinosaur. His eyes were cold, and in his hands, there was a 3m-long lance. He rode on top of a velociraptor that was all red in color, larger than ordinary velociraptors by half, and it had a single horn

on its forehead.

This rider rode his mount quietly, slowly entering the space, emitting an oppressive, invincible aura, causing one to lose all fighting will.

"Governor Uribi Taichi!! He's here!! We're finished!! This time, we're surely dead!!" Niu Meng saw the rider and muttered in horror.

The rest of the captives beside Niu Meng had fear in their eyes as they gazed at this Dino-General level leader.

Dino-General Uribi Taichi was the strongest and most feared existence in Temron City. he had killed countless humans who had tried to break out of prison. He could single-handedly suppress most revolts and chaos, and his hands had been dyed in countless humans' blood.

He eyed Yue Zhong coldly.

"This fellow is strong! He definitely is above Type 4!!"

As Uribi Taichi glared at Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong felt a sense of danger arise in his heart and had a guess about the level of this expert.

Right at this time, from the Icy Hell, 10 experts who had been sealed within charged out, and the moment they saw Uribi Taichi, they roared out in fury, "Damn dinosaur, I'll tear you apart!"

One naked man with a head of silver hair tapped his foot and charged at the Dino-General with the speed of an initial-stage Type 4 Divine Warrior.

One black man waved his right hand, causing a spatial blade that could kill Type 4 Divine Warriors to form and slashed towards the Uribi Taichi.

Another yellow-skinned man slammed the ground hard and channeled multiple earthen spikes to burst out of the ground.

One woman swung her hair wildly, causing some strands to shoot towards the dino-general like cannon balls.

Every one of those captives had a strange ability, none of them even showing the strength of a Type 3 Divine Warrior. They all were even stronger than Yue Zhong was when he first entered the 2nd World.

In the Icy Hell, there were humans who possessed freak-like strength.

"Great!! There's hope!! As long as the experts in the Icy Hell work together, even Uribi Taichi would not be their match!! We finally have a hope of escaping!!"

Niu Meng looked at the dozens of escaped captives exhibiting their abilities at Uribi Taichi, and his eyes flashed with hope. Based on his knowledge, such attacks were beyond what humans could deal with.

"Bunch of trash! If you want to escape from the Icy Hell, dream on!! Let me crush that hope of yours!" Uribi Taichi snorted as he shot them a cold glance. He urged the velociraptor beneath him and suddenly disappeared from his location.

A lance shot out from the nether void and pierced through the head of a silver-haired convict easily.

A huge jaw clamped down on the black man and bit off the entire top half of his body.

Uribi Taichi's body appeared and he brought his lance down like a death god, reaping lives easily. The velociraptor under him also lashed out with its sharp teeth and tore its unfortunate victims into two.

In a breath's time, there were 13 more corpses of the escaped captives, 9 of them had holes in their heads, while the other 4 had their bodies crushed with teeth marks.

Uribi Taichi stood quietly at his original position, blood dripping

constantly off his lance. The velociraptor was still chewing, as the sounds of bone-crushing rang out, giving them a truly terrifying visage.

Niu Meng and his bunch of brothers, Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan had ashen expressions, their eyes full of fear.

Sun Lan Lan looked at Uribi Taichi and shuddered, regret filled her mind, "I should not have tried to escape!!"

Uribi Taichi continued to gaze down condescendingly at the people, "Lowly humans, you dare to incite chaos and rebel, it's truly a crime that deserves death. However, I'm easy-going, as long as you crawl over here, and lick my lance clean, crawl back to your cages, I can spare your lives!! If you dare to resist, I will crush you guys just like crushing ants."

"Crawl your fucking....!!"

One of the little brothers roared out in fury, but before he could finish, a lance burst out from a void in the sky, piercing his head.

Uribi Taichi continued to laugh coldly, "You pieces of trash have no right to talk. Crawl over, or die!!"

"Niu Pi Tang!!"

One of the captives beside Niu Meng roared out in anguish, and in a flash, his head was also sent flying.

Niu Meng and the other 2 captives had steely expressions, their eyes full of grief, but they did not dare to make any sounds. Their lives were in the hands of this terrifying existence.

Right at this time, more captives came rushing out from the Icy Hell.

"Charge!! Everyone!! Kill those two monsters!!"

One captive roared out loud, however, just as he finished talking, a lance flashed out and his brains were splattered all over the ground.

In a second, all the captives halted, their faces full of fear, as they gazed at Uribi Taichi with apprehension.

At this moment, a person sauntered out, it was Lei Yong Feng, "Uribi Taichi! Let me take you on!"

Uribi Taichi shot Lei Yong Feng a disdainful look, "Lei Yong Feng, you're not my match originally. Being sealed in there for so long, you've fallen even further behind. You better get in there obediently, or death awaits you."

Lei Yong Feng's gaze narrowed as he boomed, "That's right! I might not be your match. However, I've comrades with me. 6 of us, against you! If you let us go now, things can still be discussed. Otherwise, don't blame us for bullying you with our numbers!"

5 more stepped out from within the Icy Hell, it was precisely the other 4 men and 1 women sealed in those huge ice cages. They were all Type 4 experts.

Uribi Taichi snorted coldly, "Hmph! If you all were at your peak, there might be a possibility of winning me. However, you've been sealed for so long. Give it up! Your only choice is to return quietly and await our orders!"

Chapter 779: Suppressing Uribi Taichi!

Lei Bao roared out in fury and charged towards Uribi Taichi, "Why the fuck are you wasting your breath on him? Everyone, fucking do him in!"

The rest of the captives also roared out and charged towards Uribi Taichi.

Facing such a fierce onslaught, the Dino-General had no choice but to urge his velociraptor back.

There were over 300 people sealed within the Icy Hell. Every single one of them was fierce, powerful human experts, possessing at least Type 3 Divine Warrior strength. Combined, together with Lei Bao and the other 5 Type 4 Divine Warriors, even Uribi Taichi would not be able to handle it.

"Kill! Kill our way out!!"

Lei Bao took the vanguard position and charged out.

The arrogant Uribi Taichi continued to retreat while striking out with its lance.

A number of lance beams pierced out, killing the human captives.

He was extremely crafty, choosing to target only those weaker ones, who were not his match.

Yue Zhong continued to rush out quietly with the rest.

After paying the price of a dozen people, they finally managed to make it out of the vicinity of the Icy Hell and arrived at a vast field.

Out on the field, there was a hundred velociraptors lined up neatly, their riders wielding lances.

"Kill!"

Uribi Taichi stopped retreating and quickly led his cavalry towards the captives.

"Freak! Give us your life!"

Lei Bao wielded only a single huge spear, looking like a bear, exerting the pressure of Mount Tai as he charged towards Uribi Taichi. By exploding out at his maximum speed, he reached 1.5 Mach.

Uribi Taichi's eyes narrowed coldly as he aimed the sharp point of Lei Bao's spear. He struck out with his own lance and met the assault head-on, as a powerful tremor traveled up Lei Bao's right shoulder. Following that, Lei Bao was sent flying a dozen meters, slamming forcefully into a wall.

In just a strike, Uribi Taichi had caused heavy injuries to Lei Bao, showcasing its terrifying combat might.

"Strong!"

Yue Zhong looked at Uribi Taichi and his eyes could not help but flash with shock as well.

Right at this moment, Lei Yong Feng and the other 4 peak human experts arrived.

They joined hands and met Uribi Taichi, forcing him back.

Even so, they were only enough to hold him, not defeat him. With their combined strength, they were still weaker, as each time they clashed, they would cough out blood. Obviously, it was still impossible to contend with this monster.

The rest of the dino-people also engaged the other captives in slaughter, both sides unleashing all their might. At every second, there would a dino-person pummeled to death by the humans, likewise, there would be humans killed by the dino-riders or their velociraptor mounts.

Yue Zhong rode his velociraptor and waved his Black Tooth Blade around, his blade flashing out and killing a number of riders.

Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan watched the unfolding slaughter, their

faces white. It was the first time they witnessed such a terrifying scene.

After some time, another 20 riders appeared from other locations, joining the fray to suppress the humans.

At the same moment, there were screeches of Pterosaurs coming from above. Yue Zhong looked up, using his enhanced eyes to sweep through the air, and noticed that there was a flock of them flying over from about 10 li away. On top of them, there were many dino-people with bows.

"Not good, we need to take out Uribi Taichi soon, otherwise, we'll all die here."

With this thought, he quickly urged the Velociraptor beneath him towards the Dino-General.

Uribi Taichi's body twisted slightly, evading an air blade that could slice even a Type 5 expert. The lance in his hand jerked upwards, sending Lei Yong Feng soaring back.

It was at this time that Yue Zhong charged over like an arrow.

"Fool!"

Uribi Taichi's eye flashed with disdain, and he used his lance to pierce towards Yue Zhong's heart like a poison dragon, intending to penetrate even Han Qiong together.

With a flip of his hand, Yue Zhong summoned out 6 light shields, blocking in front of him.

The lance sprang out and immediately destroyed the 6 shields. However, he was met by a powerful fiery tornado that threatened to envelop him. If he wanted to follow through with his lance, he would be swallowed by that Devil Flame.

"Not bad! You have some skills, but sadly, it's not enough!!" Uribi Taichi pulled back on his rope, and the velociraptor below him spat out a powerful but stinky breath, blowing the Devil Flames

away.

As the Devil Flames scattered, a velociraptor charged out from behind, opening its jaws wide to bite down viciously on Uribi Taichi.

His own mount shot the other beast a fierce glare and opened its own jaws, biting down on the velociraptor beneath Yue Zhong on its neck, breaking it with a loud crack.

As it slumped to the floor, Yue Zhong burst forth with a combat spear, thrusting towards Uribi Taichi.

"Such tricks would not work on me!!" Uribi Taichi laughed coldly, piercing through Yue Zhong's brain with his lance, as the body dispersed into thin air.

"Illusion?!"

Uribi Taichi was taken aback, at this moment, a powerful wind blade slashed down at him. He quickly urged the velociraptor to dodge one side, evading the assault.

Lei Yong Feng once again lifted his own weapon to pierce towards Uribi Taichi's heart with the speed of sound, while another male used the Air Lock skill to hold Uribi Taichi down. Another 2 men also wielded their own combat spears to attack the Dino-General.

A powerful light flashed out from the lance in Uribi Taichi's hands, forcefully breaking the Air Lock, at the same time knocking Lei Yong Feng and the other 2 Type 4 Divine Warriors away.

As Lei Yong Feng was sent flying, a powerful beam of electromagnetic force shot out from behind him towards the Violent Velociraptor.

Since Uribi Taichi's attention was entirely on Lei Yong Feng, he had not enough time to react, and the electromagnetic beam burst through the beast's head, causing it to explode.

Uribi Taichi soared up, his eyes fixed on the rubble where the shot came from, noticing Yue Zhong and the Electromagnetic Gun in his arms.

"Fucking shit!! I'll kill you!!"

Uribi Taichi immediately exploded in rage, the Violent Velociraptor had been his closest companion, battling alongside him in countless fights, and evolved to its stage with much difficulty.

With a tap of his foot, his entire frame shot towards Yue Zhong like a cannonball.

All of a sudden, a shadow charged out from below him, wielding a long spear and charging towards him.

"Another illusion! Break for me!!"

Uribi Taichi shot the figure a look and casually struck out with his lance.

Yue Zhong, who had suddenly burst out from the ground, channeled his Dark Dou Qi, his speed increasing by more than two times, and he sent a Gravity Manipulation to disrupt Uribi Taichi, whose body sunk slightly due to the increase in gravity.

A void hole appeared as countless bone blades shot out, slashing towards Uribi Taichi.

The strength of the Dino-General was too insane, even the bone blades from White Bones were shattered the moment the lance swept out, however, they managed to cause him some injuries.

The lance might have been knocked awry just a little bit, but it still entered Yue Zhong's left shoulder with extreme force, coupled with the powerful strength, it was enough to destroy his shoulder.

Yue Zhong forcefully suppressed the pain, appearing in front of Uribi Taichi and leaped up, his right fist covered with Devil Flame, slamming into the Dino-General's face.

The flames that could easily incinerate a Type 3 Divine Warrior combusted, burning Uribi Taichi's face.

His reaction was equally fearsome, raising his left hand to smash Yue Zhong's head.

In response, Yue Zhong quickly channeled his Dark Dou Qi around his right arm and raised it to block.

Uribi Taichi's fist slammed into Yue Zhong's right shoulder, the immense force exploding out, sending Yue Zhong flying over a dozen of meters. Even after the enhancement and protection of the Dark Dou Qi, his right arm nearly shattered.

"Fuck! This monster is strong!!"

As he struggled up, his heart was filled with shock. He was already a Type 4 Divine Warrior and was not considered weak, but even so, he was still struggling to kill this opponent. Uribi Taichi's strength was far out of his expectations.

The Third Order Devil Flame had reached a level where it was almost able to incinerate anything that it came in contact with. Even Uribi Taichi could not fully extinguish it. His body burst out with the Radiance of Life, however, it was turned into smoke by the burning Devil Flames.

Uribi Taichi flashed and dodged while bellowing in rage. He forced out an even stronger Radiance of Life, forcefully extinguishing the terrifying Devil Flames.

After dealing with it, his breath came in pants, having exerted much of his strength. He had dropped to a level of an initial-stage Type 4 Divine Warrior. At this time, Yue Zhong suddenly appeared, a fist flying into the Dino-General's face, sending him flying.

Yue Zhong continued to rain over 20 blows on Uribi Taichi's body, forcing his state to be weakened, before he pointed out and sent a Type 4 Puppet Rune into his forehead.

Chapter 780: Mid-Grade Dinosaur General Ku Misaki!

When Lei Yong Feng and the rest saw Yue Zhong sending the Type 4 Puppet Rune into Uribi Taichi's forehead, they heaved a sigh of relief. His strength had truly been too much, even if they were peak experts of the human race, having been sealed for many years in the Icy Hell had taken a toll on their powers. Even after joining hands, 5 of them were no match for him. Now that Yue Zhong had finally subdued him, they felt relieved.

"Those who break out of prison will die!"

In the skies, there was a sudden thundering roar, as an arrow swooped down in a flash of life, directly piercing the head of one Type 4 Divine Warrior, killing him instantly!

"Mid-Grade Dinosaur General!!" Lei Yong Feng caught sight of one Dino-General who was riding on a Pterosaur, his face falling as he muttered, "Brother Yue Zhong, the Mid-Grade Dino-General Ku Misaki has appeared. We are all not his match, and can only flee for our lives. We'll be making a move first!"

After which, Lei Yong Feng disappeared from his location, making his escape towards the distance with utmost speed.

At almost the same time, all the captives all rushed to escape in various directions.

"Mid-Grade Dino-General, Type 5 Divine Warrior?"

Yue Zhong took a look and channeled his Summon Tamed Beast skill, immediately, a large hole appeared in the air, and Greenie, which had already evolved to the Type 4 Stage, flapped its wings and descended.

Yue Zhong grabbed Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan and leaped onto Greenie's back, while Uribi Taichi followed.

"Go! Fly with all your might!!" Yue Zhong barked.

Greenie could feel the urgent tone in Yue Zhong's words and immediately spread its wings, channeling its innate ability. A powerful gust of wind congealed beneath its wings as it flapped out forcefully, shooting across the skies at a Mach 2 speed.

With this sudden acceleration, Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan would not have been able to handle the G-force. However, Yue Zhong had already activated his Dark Dou Qi to wrap around them, protecting them.

About a dozen kilometers away, a silver-horned pterosaur soared in the air, a rider dressed entirely in silver-alloy armor on its back. The rider had a bow and his countenance was grim, as he eyed Yue Zhong's party escaping into the distance.

This was precisely the Mid-Grade Dino-General Ku Misaki who had killed the Type 4 Divine Warrior with a single arrow!

Ku Misaki sighed, pulling out a red arrow from behind, and kept his gaze fixed on Yue Zhong. His eyes opened wide as he drew the arrow extremely taut.

A sense of danger arose in Yue Zhong's heart, and he bent down to urge Greenie, "Damn it!! Dodge it!! Greenie!! Fly in an irregular manner!"

With his order, Greenie began to soar about haphazardly, trying to throw off the aim on it.

After 2 seconds, there was a bright glow of Radiance of Life on Ku Misaki, his eyes narrowed, and the powerful life force entered his red bow. He let go of the arrow, and the arrow shot towards Greenie like a shooting star.

The arrow reached Greenie within an instant, directly piercing its body and exploding.

A huge, bloody hole appeared in its back, as fresh blood poured out.

The arrow was incredibly vicious, although it did not penetrate Greenie's brain, it was enough to shatter its spine. Greenie slumped and moaned in agony as it plummeted towards the ground.

With a single arrow destroying Greenie's back, Ku Misaki's countenance was also pale. Although he was strong, that shot over a dozen kilometers had overdrawn his strength.

He kept his bow and gave an order to a Low-Grade Dino-General beside him, "Ku Yuufuu! Go bring 20 soldiers to get those 3 humans, dead or alive!! Temron Prison definitely will not let anyone escape alive. They can only become our slaves or toys! This is the iron-clad rule of our city!"

"Yes! Lord Ku Misaki! I will go capture them, please rest assured!"

The Low-Grade Dino-General Ku Yuufuu replied with respect, before leading a unit of 20 pterosaur-riders as they made for Yue Zhong's team.

As he left, Ku Misaki turned to look at Temron Prison, his gaze turning dark, "This time, I'll definitely be in big trouble."

"What to do?"

Yue Zhong looked at Greenie, his expression ugly. He had the Dark Wind Wings and could glide effortlessly in the sky, but once Greenie slammed into the ground, it would definitely die.

Even as a Type 4 with a powerful body, its body was too heavy, and dropping from such a height would cause even a Type 5 Mutant Beast to perish.

"Help! I don't want to die!! I have not even been in love!! I don't want to die!!"

Right at this moment, Sun Lan Lan's cries sounded from Yue Zhong's right.

Although Sun Lan Lan was an idol, she was vain, selfish, and

even afraid of death. Now that she was falling to her death, she began to just cry her heart out.

Han Qiong's face was also pale, she bit her lips hard, trembling with fear. She might be a strong and resolute person, but in the face of death, she was likewise overcome with fear. In fact, there were few people who were truly unafraid of death.

Yue Zhong was vexed, and he yelled, "Shut up!! Just keep quiet!! As long as I'm here, you won't die!!"

Scolded by Yue Zhong, Sun Lan Lan immediately covered her mouth, but her tears continued to flow out. She stared fixedly at him, hoping for another miracle.

With a thought, the Dark Wind Wings burst open, supporting the 4 of them in mid-air.

The moment they floated, the fear disappeared from Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong's eyes, instead, they were filled with excitement; there was hope after all.

Yue Zhong charged down towards Greenie, applying the Gravity Manipulation to envelop its body and lower it by 5 times.

Even so, that could only help to cushion the fall, he had no means to help it recover.

As a gigantic beast, Greenie had a terrifying strength, a speed that exceeded most others, sharp claws, and a shocking weight. Even with the 5 times decrease, its speed of descent was still fierce.

As Greenie landed and was about to smash into the ground, it channeled its innate ability again, summoning a strong wind to support itself down.

As the winds disappeared, it fell down, causing a large amount of blood to splatter all over the trees nearby.

Yue Zhong grabbed the 2 girls as he descended beside Greenie.

As a Type 4 Mutant Beast, Greenie had a strong regenerative

physique. Its wound had already closed and was starting to repair at a speed visible to the naked eye. Even its bleeding had stopped.

"What a strong recovery rate. However, it would still require at least a day to fully heal."

Yue Zhong felt slightly better when he saw Greenie healing, however, he knew it was impossible for it to recover that fast.

With a shattered spine, such an injury was still serious to a Type 4 Mutant Beast. It would take at least a day to recover properly. There was no need to mention combat, even moving would cause it tremendous pain.

Yue Zhong came up to Greenie's head and patted it with an apologetic smile, "Sorry! I've brought this upon you!"

Greenie was his first Tamed beast and had followed him throughout countless battles. He had come to view Greenie as his trusted mount. Now that it was heavily injured, he could not help but feel heartache as well.

Greenie rubbed its head against Yue Zhong like a little kid, letting out low moans, as though complaining about the pain.

Yue Zhong then pulled out the Type 5 Nucleus he obtained from the Icy Hell, placing it in front of Greenie.

The beast immediately opened its eyes and beak in joy, gobbling up the precious nourishment.

The moment it entered Greenie's body, its eyes closed and it fell into a deep sleep. The Type 5 Nucleus was providing it with powerful evolving nourishments. The best way to absorb and digest such energy was to sleep.

Yue Zhong activated his Summon Tamed Beast ability again, as a huge hole appeared. This time, Turtle appeared, crawling out quickly.

The last time Yue Zhong tamed Turtle, it had been at a peak Type

2 stage. Now, after some time, it had evolved into a Type 3 Mutant Beast as well.

Of the 4 Mutant Beasts he had tamed, only Turtle had the strength to move Greenie.

"Take it, let's go!"

With a thought, Turtle grabbed Greenie and placed it on its back as it swiftly climbed deeper into the forest.

Yue Zhong and the rest also followed.

Soon after, a number of pterosaurs appeared in the air, as their riders leaped down.

As they observed the environment, the leader, Ku Yuufuu declared, "They're that way! Give chase!!"

Chapter 781: Flee!

A number of dino-people chased, led by Ku Yuufuu, hot on Yue Zhong's tail.

One of them was running when suddenly, there was a loud boom as a landmine buried in the ground got triggered and exploded. The resulting explosion instantly consumed the dino-person.

At the same time, a few remote-controlled explosives that were hidden nearby went off, blasting the entire area, quickly enveloping all of the dino-riders.

Yue Zhong was in his Second Order Stealth, hidden among the trees, watching the scene unfold quietly.

Before the dust even settled, a number of the dino-riders ran out of the dust cloud, other than the one who got decimated by the landmine, the rest only suffered minor injuries.

While these dino-riders were not as strong as Type 3 Mutant Beasts, their body makeup was still tenacious. Even a heavy caliber bullet might not be able to penetrate their skin.

"Shit! Seems like normal bullets can't do anything to them. I need something stronger!"

Yue Zhong eyed the seemingly unharmed dino-riders with an ugly expression. Currently, the human race back on Earth only used rifles. Against zombies, they were effective, however, against the Flesh-Eaters and now these Dino-riders, the rifles were far from enough. They had to rely on something else. Otherwise, they would be overrun and killed.

Yue Zhong threw all thoughts to the back of his head and brought out his Electromagnetic Gun to fire a single shot at Ku Yuufuu.

As a Type 4 Dino-General, the moment Yue Zhong emitted his killing intent, Ku Yuufuu reacted and managed to evade the shot.

"Over there!"

After dodging that dangerous shot, Ku Yuufuu turned around and located Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong fired out a few more shots, before tapping his foot and leaping up a tree, quickly making his escape through the trees.

The 3 electromagnetic beams penetrated 3 dino-riders in their heads, blasting them apart. His strength had already reached the intermediate Type 4 level, even without an arm, he could casually kill Type 3 Dino-people.

"Chase!!"

Ku Yuufuu's eyes flashed with a vicious glint, charging after Yue Zhong in a swift manner.

The other 7 dino-riders also followed suit.

After Ku Misaki destroyed Yue Zhong's right arm, adding on to the huge expenditure of Spirit and Stamina in Temron Prison, Yue Zhong was feeling weak right now. If he were to take on Ku Yuufuu, he would definitely be killed in a single exchange. Hence, he could only flee, making his way deeper into the forest.

The distance between the two drew closer, and soon, the forest was left far behind. A grassy plain appeared in front of them.

"Bye! I'm done toying with you!"

Yue Zhong had purposely drawn them away from Turtle and the rest. He quickly leaped up a tree and lunged off forcefully, his Dark Wind Wings opening and sending him soaring into the skies.

"Ku Soraichi!! Seal down the airspace!!"

Ku Yuufuu eyed Yue Zhong in the sky, his eyes flashing with a chill as he barked.

One of the riders stepped forward, his back had wings like a pterosaur, even his head looking 70% similar to one. He eyed Yue Zhong and let out a strange, shrill scream.

A powerful shockwave traveled upwards, sweeping past Yue Zhong. Under that force, the Dark Wind Wings suddenly dimmed, as though they had lost the connection to Yue Zhong, causing his body to plunge down quickly.

"Fuck! What was that?!"

Facing such a sudden anomaly, Yue Zhong was shocked as well. The sealing of airspace seemed to be a certain skill of some races of the dino-people. Some of them had the ability to increase their speed explosively, others, the ability to command the wind. Some had tough skins. This particular dino-person whose progenitor must have been the pterosaurs could unleash some shockwave to knock out all airborne objects, living or otherwise. The moment one was struck by it, even a Type 6 Overlord-class Mutant Beast would plunge.

Even so, Yue Zhong did not panic, he quickly pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, aiming at Ku Soraichi before firing once.

Ku Yuufuu struck out with his lance, blocking the beam.

Following a loud bang, Ku Yuufuu was sent flying a few meters back, slamming into a tree. However, the Electromagnetic Beam was stopped by him.

"Damn freak!!"

It was the first time Yue Zhong saw someone forcefully taking his Electromagnetic Gun head-on with a melee weapon. It seemed that only these Type 4 monsters could do so without worry about their bodies.

"Seems like my sneak attack on the Type 5 Sitolius was a lucky one, if he had not been distracted by the Snake-woman, I think even if it hit him, he would have been fine." Thinking back to how he managed to kill Sitolius, he could not help but celebrate that his luck had been good.

Yue Zhong swiftly adjusted his aim and continued to fire at the

group of dino-people.

They hurried to retreat, dodging behind cover.

As Yue Zhong was nearing the ground, he quickly channeled his Gravity Manipulation, lessening his weight to $\frac{1}{5}$ of its original. When he landed, the rebound was much lesser, and he made use of the opportunity to escape.

"Chase!!"

Ku Yuufuu only needed to rest for merely 5 seconds, and his erratic blood flow had stabilized. With a tap of its foot, he transformed into a shooting star towards Yue Zhong.

Out here on the plains, Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps and pushed his Dark Dou Qi, his speed increasing to its maximum. However, the distance between him and Ku Yuufuu continued to shrink. His Stamina and Spirit was being consumed at a terrifying rate, yet he did not dare slack off.

This Ku Yuufuu was definitely a Type 4 expert that was even stronger than Uribi Taichi, even if Yue Zhong was at his peak, it was difficult to say who could win. As long as Yue Zhong became careless now, he would definitely be killed.

Both of them continued to run at a speed of Mach 1.5, soon passing through the huge plains.

At the edge of the vast plains, there were plenty of cliffs, below them, it was a huge, boundless sea.

The moment he charged out of the plains, he leaped down towards the sea without hesitating.

The moment he plunged into the water, Ku Yuufuu already appeared at the edge of the cliff.

Ku Yuufuu stood there, not intending to jump down. Instead, he laughed coldly and roared out, "Sea of Mutant Beasts! What a way to seek death. Human, if you surrender now and become my slave,

I can still spare you. Otherwise, you'll surely die a horrid death!"

The loud roar resounded throughout the entire area.

All of a sudden, the waves broke apart, as a huge tentacle swung out from beneath the surface of the sea, slamming towards Ku Yuufuu.

The tentacle had appeared without warning, and its speed was insanely fast. Even with Ku Yuufuu's heightened sense of danger, he was struck violently by the tentacle. His entire body shot through the air, spitting out blood.

The moment he landed, he retreated explosively beyond a thousand meters. As he looked up, his countenance was pale and filled with dread.

The blue waves continue to churn, as dozens of small creatures with wings and dinosaur heads flew up onto the cliff, landing near where Ku Yuufuu had spat out his blood and some inner organs. They began devouring it without any care.

When they were done, they swiftly reentered the sea.

Ku Yuufuu saw this and was reminded of his clan memoirs, retreating a few steps unconsciously, not daring to go near the sea at all.

As for Yue Zhong, he had quickly put on his Sea Mask and started swimming deeper.

He had just descended about a dozen meters when a sudden tingling came down his spine and his scalp turned numb. In this dark waters, where nothing could be seen, it felt like there were countless monsters waiting to rip him apart. His entire body froze.

Right at this time, a bunch of creatures the size of a palm, as dense as a colony of ants came swimming over. They had wings, sharp teeth, and were obviously fish but had dinosaur heads.

He felt a sense of danger the moment he saw them and adjusted

his direction, swimming away frantically.

The winged fish continued to swim towards him.

As he fled, another dozen Type 2 Mutant Sharks seemed to have discovered Yue Zhong, and they adjusted their positions to swim towards him.

In the sea, Yue Zhong's speed could not compare to when he was on land. The dozens of Mutant Sharks caught up to him easily.

Left with no choice, Yue Zhong channeled his Summon Tamed Beast technique, calling Type 2 Sharkie over. He waved his sword, and sliced one of the Type 2 Mutant Sharks, before grabbing on to Sharkie as they fled.

The creepy winged fishes came up to the Type 2 Mutant Shark and pounced on it. The waters churned for 2 seconds, and when they left, a bunch of bones sank towards the bed of the sea.

Chapter 782: Sea of Mutant Beasts!

When the Type 2 Sharks caught sight of those smaller creatures, it was as if they had seen their greatest fear, and they hurriedly scattered.

The seemingly harmless dino-fishes suddenly picked up speed, swimming towards the various Type 2 Sharks. When they burst forth with their speed, they were more than twice as fast as the sharks and caught up easily. Using their razor-sharp teeth, they reduced the Type 2 Sharks to nothing more than bones.

Those ferocious sea sharks that had been chasing Yue Zhong earlier now sunk to their graves.

After consuming those dozens of sharks which were larger than normal whales, the school of dino-fish seemed to have been satiated, and they quietly floated in the sea, going with the flow, not chasing after Yue Zhong anymore.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief. In the sea, he could not even exhibit more than 10% of his ability. Even a Type 3 Mutant Sea Beast might gain an advantage over him. If he had been surrounded by those creepy dino-fishes, he would likely have been consumed in a matter of seconds.

Because of the reduction in combat ability, even Ku Yuufuu did not dare enter the waters, much more so since this particular ocean was known as the Sea of Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong had just heaved a sigh of relief when a figure suddenly slammed into him with a terrifying speed without any warning.

He spat out a mouth of blood from that impact, while Sharkie was also slapped to one side.

When the monstrous figure rose up, Yue Zhong grabbed onto its back, and could not help but suck in a breath of cold air.

It was a gargantuan sea snake, its entire body black with a

metallic luster. The entire length of the snake was easily over a thousand meters. When comparing the Type 5 Mutant Sea Snake back on Earth against this behemoth, it was practically a small loach.

Yue Zhong could not resist and activated his Eye of Perception to scan it.

"Type 7 Mutant Sea Snake Emperor, an Emperor-level Ferocious Beast of the Sea."

"Type 7 Mutant Sea Snake Emperor!!"

He sucked in a deep breath, his entire body trembling. This was a Type 7 monster, as long as it was hostile towards Yue Zhong, a single slap could flatten him.

After all, the Type 5 Divine Warriors that he had come across on his journey could easily kill him, not to mention this Type 7 Mutant Beast. Most Mutant Beasts were stronger than a Divine Warrior of the same tier. In comparing combat strength, a Type 7 Mutant Beast would likely be more fearsome than a Type 7 Divine Warrior.

The Mutant Sea Snake Emperor seemed not to have noticed the speck-like Yue Zhong, continually slithering and twisting through the sea, causing huge waves to arise.

The sea was boundless, and as the monstrous beast continued to swim out, soon, there was no land that can be seen anywhere.

It was only in this wide and vast sea, that such a huge Type 7 Mutant Sea Snake Emperor could be born.

The beast came to a stop after a while.

The surface of the water started to churn, as numerous Type 6 Sea Dragons, mountain-like Type 5 Thorny Crabs, Type 5 Dragon-Snapping Turtles the size of islands, Type 5 Swordfishes, ferocious Type 5 Ichthyosaurus, other monstrous Type 5 Sea Snakes appeared. All of these mighty beasts all swam and surrounded the

Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor with respect.

Yue Zhong was thoroughly shaken as he looked at all of these beasts, not daring to move. At a quick glance, there seemed to be at least 30 Type 5 Mutant Beasts, and 4 Type 6 Mutant Beasts. If such a horde of monsters were to roam free on Earth, the moment they went on land, who knew how many nuclear bombs it would take to deal with these beasts. Even Godzilla would be flattened in one second if it existed.

Yue Zhong continued to hug his body close to the Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor, knowing that the other sea Overlords were sweeping their gazes over him. If it were not for the fact that he was on the Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor's body, they would have all torn him into pieces. He did not dare to move.

After summoning the subordinates, the Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor continued to swim out, this time, followed by its underlings.

Yue Zhong saw this and cried bitterly in his heart. He was getting further and further away from land, it would be extremely difficult for him to return.

After an entire day, the horde seemed to have reached a different territory.

Following a huge wave, a Type 7 Ichthyosaurus appeared from beneath the sea, not any less eye-catching than the Sea Snake Emperor.

Behind it, there were countless other Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts.

The moment the Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor caught sight of the Type 7 Ichthyosaurus, its eyes turned crimson red and it quickly charged at it.

The Type 7 Ichthyosaurus also swam over with an imposing aura.

Both parties clashed, and the Type 7 Ichthyosaurus bit down viciously on the body of the Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor, drawing blood as its sharp teeth punctured the hard scales. Precious blood flowed out.

The Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor also bit down on the Type 7 Ichthyosaurus, tearing into its body and drawing blood.

The 2 mighty beasts engaged in the most basic of brawls, biting and clashing against each other, struggling in the sea.

Yue Zhong was easily flung off, thrown towards a few hundred meters, his body once again jolted and he spat out a mouthful of blood. There was no way he could do anything in this battle of such scale.

The 2 Type 7 Mutant Beasts were truly ferocious, causing waves to ripple out, the highest over hundreds of meters tall.

Yue Zhong had just come up to the surface, and was faced with one such wave, sending a few hundred meters away again.

"That's... the blood of the Type 7 Mutant Beasts!!"

One blood-red wave swept towards Yue Zhong, and his eyes brightened. He opened his mouth to take in as much seawater as he could.

The blood and seawater entered his body, turning into a warm energy that spread throughout his limbs, revitalizing his cells and pushing the broken shoulders as well as his other injuries to recover.

Such blood was extremely nourishing to humans, the stronger the Mutant Beast, the more benefits the blood and essence brought.

Thus, the blood of this Type 7 Mutant Beast was a precious gift to Yue Zhong.

The warmth flowed throughout his body, ending up in his sea of

knowledge, covering his Regeneration Rune, causing a few more engravings to appear.

"Congratulations, having absorbed the blood of a Type 7 Mutant Beast, your Regeneration skill has gained +1 Enhancement."

Yue Zhong immediately felt overjoyed. The Regeneration skill was incredibly useful, aiding him in escaping the clutches of death on several occasions. Now that it was enhanced, he could not be happier.

At this moment, a water cannon shot from afar, slamming into him, causing him to soar into the sky and cough out blood once again.

Yue Zhong looked towards the source and noticed a Type 5 Ichthyosaurus and a Type 5 Copper-Hammer Shrimp engaged in a ferocious clash. The water cannon had been the innate ability of the Copper Hammer Shrimp, and Yue Zhong had been unlucky to be in the way.

Water Cannons, Ice Shards, Ice Blades, Water Blades, Thunder strikes, Bone Spikes, all sorts of abilities were being channeled and utilized by the Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts as they clashed with their enemies.

Inside this large sea, there would be a new corpse floating to the surface at every second, all of these bodies casualties from the exchanges between the Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts.

Among those bodies, there would be a few Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts, which had been caught in the crossfire.

Yue Zhong immediately activated his Second Order Stealth, moving carefully through the sea, watching out for the clashes. None of the beasts actually paid any attention to him due to the Stealth.

"That's a Type 4 Mutant Beast!! Time to risk it!!"

Yue Zhong suddenly saw a Type 4 Sea Snake corpse floating, his

eyes brightened and he gritted his teeth to swim over. He arrived quickly and burrowed into its head, retrieving its brain matter, blood, and nucleus.

"Another one!! This time, I've struck it rich!!"

The moment he came out of the Type 4 Sea Snake, he saw another corpse floating nearby. He could not control his excitement and immediately swam over, retrieving all that he could.

While the main characters of this territorial war were the 2 Type 7 behemoths and the other Type 6 and Type 5 monsters, there were numerous Type 4 and Type 3 Mutant Beasts around as well.

In this place, the Type 4 Mutant Beasts were the most plentiful. It would be rare to catch sight of one on Earth, but here, they were common everywhere.

Yue Zhong got himself busy, digging through the carcasses of the various Type 4 Mutant Beasts and kept the precious loot into his Storage Ring.

There were plenty of Type 3 Mutant Beast corpses as well, however, he could not be bothered with those.

Chapter 783: Type 6 Cetiosaurus!

At the center of the battlefield in the sea, a huge number of Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts were quickly gobbling up and devouring the corpses of the other Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

At the same time, the intensity of the clash between the 2 Emperor-level behemoths had infected the rest of the Mutant Beasts, causing them to go all-out in a mad slaughter as well.

Yue Zhong had already evolved to a Type 4 stage, although he could easily be flattened by a Type 6, Type 7 Mutant Beast, against a Type 4 Mutant Beast, he had his means. Even for a Type 5 Mutant Beast, as long as it did not especially target him, he could find ways to evade.

Just as he was scrambling to collect as many Type 4 nuclei as possible, all of a sudden, the Type 7 Mutant Sea Snake Emperor swung its tail forcefully, causing a large wave to sweep out. Yue Zhong and dozens of other Type 4 Mutant Beasts were sent up into the air at a height of 2,000 meters.

As the wave receded, they descended back towards the sea like meteors.

"This is bad!!" Yue Zhong's face fell, if he landed in the water, the powerful impact would cause him a certain degree of hurt, even if he was a Type 4 expert. If it were any other ordinary person, they would definitely die.

While in mid-air, the Dark Wind Wings flapped open, but its radiance dimmed, obviously, it was still affected by that soundwave attack from the Dino-riders earlier.

Yue Zhong hurried to channel his Gravity Manipulation, lightening his weight by 5 times. Even so, it would not reduce the impact.

"Oh right! There's still that thing!"

As he descended, his gaze swept through his Storage Ring, and his eyes brightened. With a flip of his hand, a bone umbrella appeared.

It swiftly opened, and his falling speed was reduced even further.

An ordinary umbrella would not be able to support a human during a plunge. However, this bone umbrella was made out of Mutant Beast bones, and its main material was the scales and a Type 3 Mutant Beast. With the powerful tendons used to tighten and secure all the joints, even a heavy-caliber gun might not necessarily pierce through it. Thus, it could naturally support his weight.

The dozens of Type 4 Mutant Beasts slammed down into the water from the skies.

One Type 5 Ichthyosaurus of more than a 1,000-meters in length was unlucky. It had slammed into a Type 4 Crocodile Turtle, another Type 4 Ichthyosaurus as well as a Type 4 Tyrant Shellfish, and its entire body was twisted beyond hope. It died immediately.

The other Type 4 Mutant Beasts also died upon impact the moment they slammed into the water, their brains rocked and shattering.

When those mountain-like beasts slammed into the water, they caused further waves that spread out, inciting a ripple effect that caused other Type 4 Mutant Beasts to slam into each other and die.

As the various Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts caught the scent of the blood, they began to swim in a frenzy towards the corpses of the higher-stage Beasts.

In order to snatch the corpses of those Beasts, the Mutant Beasts began to bite each other furiously, and the entire sea was churning with writhing bodies.

Yue Zhong landed on the Type 5 Ichthyosaurus body,

immediately running towards its head.

As he was running, a pair of thick and coarse tentacles suddenly grabbed hold of the corpse from below, dragging it down into the depths of the sea.

"Fuck!!"

Yue Zhong's gaze flashed, as he grabbed tight onto the body, climbing towards the head.

The nucleus of a Type 5 Mutant Beast was simply too valuable to Yue Zhong. If used well, he could turn a Type 5 expert into a puppet for him, or raise a Type 3 Mutant Beast directly into the Type 4 stage.

The corpse sunk deeper into the ocean.

A Type 4 Sea Snake and a Type 4 Cetiosaurus quickly swam over.

As they got closer, some other tentacles shot out explosively, slapping the 2 Type 4 Mutant Beasts viciously, causing them to be sent back about 6 or 7 meters.

They became agitated and quickly got into a tangle with the tentacles, biting down viciously, breaking them apart as blood flowed.

The Type 4 Mutant Beasts became embroiled in a cruel clash, while some other smaller Mutant Beasts quickly swam over.

Yue Zhong caught sight of these unknown variants of Mutant Crabs reaching out with their claws and tearing the scales of the Type 5 Ichthyosaurus inch by inch. They then burrowed in and began consuming the Type 5 behemoth's flesh.

Numerous other small Mutant Beasts came swarming around the corpses, each of them tearing off the scales and meat of the Type 5 Ichthyosaurus.

On top of that, other Mutant Beasts of relatively normal size came swimming over, trying to bite into the corpse of the Type 5

Ichthyosaurus, but to their dismay, they could not tear into those scales.

Of the various species that were trying to consume the Type 5 Ichthyosaurus, only the mini Mutant Crabs and Mutant Sea Centipedes were successful in tearing the scales off. Even so, their speed was extremely slow.

Yue Zhong continued to climb upwards, while the body of the monstrous beast continued to be drag deeper and deeper.

After goodness knows how long, Yue Zhong finally made it on top of the head. He pulled out his Flame Blade and thrust right down with his immense strength, creating a small hole. With joy in his heart, he quickly dug the hole out and burrowed in.

After plowing through a huge amount of flesh, he finally found the Type 5 nucleus, keeping it together with a large amount of brain matter, fresh blood, and flesh into his Storage Ring, before swiftly climbing out.

Right as he got out, he suddenly felt his entire body sinking, a huge pressure weighing on him. If it had been an ordinary person, the person would have been crushed instantly.

"Where is this?"

Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings, noticing that there was no light, while countless deep-sea mountains of more than hundreds and thousands of meters surrounded him.

The huge carcass of the Type 5 Ichthyosaurus was still being dragged by the huge tentacle towards one of the peaks.

All of a sudden, a huge claw shot out, grabbing one Type 4 Overlord Octopus and crushed it easily.

A swirl then appeared, sucking the Type 5 Ichthyosaurus corpse towards it.

Yue Zhong looked towards that direction, only to see a pair of

savage, green eyes. The entire peak seemed to be enveloped by a strange power, even with his Night Vision, he could not see past the peak.

A chill came over Yue Zhong, he turned around to look at the other peaks, noting that there was nothing there. However, it felt like upon closer inspection, there were terrifying creatures lying in slumber.

"It's too dangerous here!!"

Yue Zhong felt a grave sense of danger and quickly made his way for the surface.

At this moment, a huge whirlpool appeared, sucking Yue Zhong towards one of the peaks.

"Shit!!!"

His heart turned cold as he paddled furiously, trying to escape. However, due to the forces of the whirlpool, his efforts were futile, and his body slowly inched towards the peak.

In a few breaths, he was sent soaring through a thick fog towards the peak of the mountain. A monstrous Type 6 Cetiosaurus had its huge mouth open, drawing Yue Zhong towards it!

In front of that behemoth, Yue Zhong was just like a grain of rice, together with it, other fishes, prawns, Type 2 and Type 3 Mutant Beasts flew in.

Without any chance to resist, Yue Zhong was swallowed.

The Cetiosaurus had sharp rows of teeth, the moment its jaws closed, the teeth came piercing down, tearing the numerous Type 3 Mutant Beasts into shreds, before swallowing them all in a mess of blood and flesh.

Its appetite was insane, and it was impossible for Yue Zhong to try and remain at its throat, hence he was washed down together towards a lake full of a rancid stench.

The moment he plunged into it, he realized his clothes were melting, as smoke rose up. Every part of his body was sending him pain signals, as though he was bathing in acid.

"Shit!! I definitely cannot stay here!!"

In his pain, Yue Zhong quickly summoned White Bones. A void appeared, and a bone spike pierced through the red, fleshy wall.

Chapter 784: Face-off of the 3 Clans!

Yue Zhong reached out his hand that was being corroded away to grab the bone spike. It retracted, and pulled him up towards one side of the wall. It temporarily helped him to avoid the fate of being digested.

"Those are nuclei!! Mutant Beasts' nuclei!!"

He had just taken a breath when he caught sight of a pile of nuclei at one part of the lake of digestive juices. There were more than thousands of them, forming a small hill.

"White Bones! Go grab them!"

Yue Zhong became excited and his eyes shone with greed as he looked at the mountain.

White Bones extended its right arm, grabbing the pile of nuclei and brought it to Yue Zhong.

With a thought, the entire pile entered his Storage Ring.

Once it disappeared, the red stomach linings began to secrete out green digestive juices again, covering the fleshy walls.

In a single breath, the Type 6 Cetiosaurus could easily consume over thousands of smaller living creatures. Of which, the Mutant Beasts with stronger life forces would still struggle. However, under the constant corroding of the stomach acid, the Mutant Beasts began to dissolve with time.

At that moment, Yue Zhong channeled his Devil Flames, surrounding him, burning the stomach acid that got too close to him.

"Damn it! Break for me!!"

Yue Zhong pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun and aimed at one part of the stomach lining. The beam smashed viciously into the flesh, resulting in a huge bloody hole, as the precious Type 6

Mutant Beast blood flowed out.

The Storage Ring flashed, and he began to store the blood in a huge tank.

Suffering such an injury, the Type 6 Cetiosaurus felt the pain and unease. It opened its jaws and tried to throw up.

With the hurling of the stomach, a powerful force began to expel Yue Zhong together with the contents of the stomach out.

Yue Zhong was sprayed out in a water jet, soaring for goodness knows how far, before he landed up in a misty area, on cold, hard ground.

"Wait a minute? What's going on? There's no water here!"

When he landed, he immediately noticed that there was no seawater. He looked around and found that he was in a separate area, while the 'skies' were still the deep blue sea, seemingly held back by something.

"What is that? A spaceship?"

After ascertaining his position, he swept a glance across his surroundings again, immediately noticing a silver spacecraft. It was over 200m in height, and on it, there were numerous cannons facing out, each of them larger than any cannons on Earth.

When Yue Zhong saw that, his eyes flashed with a strange glint, and he quickly dashed over.

As he came up to it, he noticed that the spacecraft was shrouded in a layer of blue light. He pulled out his shape Flame Blade to try slicing through it, to no avail.

He then tried various methods to break through, however, not a single one of them worked. Even his strongest move of congealing his Devil Flames into a Devil Flame Sword was not able to penetrate it.

"Damn it, what should I do?"

Yue Zhong looked at it, helpless and frustrated, as he sunk into thoughts. Based on his instinct, he could tell that this spaceship would be incredibly helpful to him, even the entire human race. However, he had no means of accessing it.

Suddenly, a number of small shuttles descended from the blue layer.

Yue Zhong took a look at them and quickly activated his Second Order Stealth, hiding behind a huge boulder.

The shuttles opened up, and a number of humanoid experts walked out.

"Humans?" Yue Zhong hid behind the boulder and completely retracted his aura. He stared at those experts and wondered.

Although there was no light in this region, the shuttles were releasing a faint blue radiance. While ordinary people might not be able to see beyond 10 meters, Yue Zhong knew that there were some who were able to see well in the dark, even up to a thousand meters. He did not dare be careless.

Among those that stepped out, there was a blond man with a fit body. As he stepped out, he looked at the huge spacecraft with a hint of desire, "Radiant Battleship! It truly is here. As long as our Saint Clan controls this, the Saint War this time will be ours! No!! We might even ascend to become even stronger and compete with those experts from the higher realms!!"

One of the Type 4 Flesh Eaters asked, "Great Ancient Holf, what is this Radiant Battleship? Is it really so important to our Saint Clan? It just looks bigger than ours."

Holf eyed the ship with desire while reprimanding the person who asked, "What do you know? We're just toys of God, our lives and deaths are under his control. He created us, and can even destroy us. As for this ship, this is something not of his creation! In other words, this was something another god, or gods, created!! It

is truly a symbol of hope for our Saint Clan. By obtaining this, we can escape the clutches of God, and maybe even become Gods ourselves!"

"New Gods!!"

When they heard this, all the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires sucked in a breath of cold air. They were extremely clear that they came out of the entity known as God, and had conquered humans to become the overlords. However, God was still an invincible entity to them, and even the highest of them had admitted that he was no match for God. To think that there would be an item that could help them transcend, this rocked them to their cores.

Another blond woman, with a voluptuous figure decked in tight leather clothes, asked, "Great Ancient Holf, since this is so important, why didn't the Saint Emperor come personally? If he were to come, this battleship would definitely be ours."

This time, the Saint Clan had deployed 6 Type 5 warriors, and 100 Type 4 Warriors to this world. However, those that managed to successfully survive till now were those present. The rest had been eaten by the countless terrifying beasts in the Sea of Mutant Beasts. If the Type 6 Divine Warrior had made a move, they would definitely not have suffered such losses.

Holf replied solemnly, "No! This Radiant Battleship only allows those Type 4 and below. If a Type 6 existence were to get close, it would trigger the self-defense mechanism and kill the intruder. Sibica, I am not able to get close to it as well, thus, the responsibility of gaining it falls on you guys. This is the hope for our Saint Clan, once you guys obtain it, when we summon the rest of the clan, we will help you reach the Type 5 stage!!"

The beautiful Type 4 blond woman Sibica immediately responded with a serious expression, "Understood! Great Ancient Holf, Sibica will definitely deliver the control to your hands!"

"The Radiant Battleship is our Dino race's treasure! Bunch of

stinking Flesh-Eaters, get out now! Otherwise, I'll tear you apart!!"

Right at this time, a number of Ichthyosaurus came appearing from the blue film enveloping the mini-pocket of a world, with riders on them. These were the dino-riders dressed in silver armor and held lances.

One of them was a Mid-Grade Dino-General, who swept a cold gaze over Holf and his men, barking, "Scram!!"

The hundreds of low-level Dino-Generals and 2 other Mid-Grade Dino-General surrounded them, forming a huge circle.

Holf looked at them with an ugly expression, they had a total of 3 Type 5 Divine Warriors, while his Saint Clan only had him. If they were to clash, their Saint Clan would definitely suffer greatly.

"Overbearing!! Your Dino-race is truly overboard. This is the seabed, our Sea Clan's territory. I think you guys had better listen to the lord of the seas - Our Sea Clan!"

Following the sounds of a contemptuous laughter, a Type 5 mermaid appeared, with blue hair and shells covering her private parts.

Behind her, there were 6 other Type 5 warriors, on top of that, they had 200 Type 4 Whale Shark-men, Killer Whale-men, Lobster-men and various other intelligent sea-creatures.

The 3 species faced off in this deep part of the ocean. The Saint Clan members might be the overlords back in the 2nd World, but here, they held the most disadvantaged position.

The atmosphere grew tense as time flowed.

Chapter 785: Radiant Battleship!

The extremely beautiful and sensual mermaid revealed an alluring smile towards Holf, "I'm Sidopeia from the Sea Clan. People from the Saint Clan, how about joining hands to kill these dinosaurs, and we can explore the Radiant Battleship together?"

When her words came out, the Dino-riders immediately became on guard, their lances readied, and their bodies tense. The moment the Sea Clan made any sudden movements, they would launch an attack against them.

Holf smiled slightly, "Beautiful Sidopeia, I feel that we can all explore this Radiant Battleship. After all, slaughtering among ourselves will not achieve anything, instead, it will just wear us down. If in the event of our clash, we are unable to gain anything out of it, I'm sure no one wants to see this outcome."

Among the 3 parties, Holf's side was the weakest. Even if they joined hands with the Sea Clan to eradicate the Dino-race, they would then take care of him. Under such circumstances, he had no choice but to try and leave a way out for himself.

Sidopeia turned to look at the Dino-General, laughing coyly, "What are your thoughts, Mr. Dino-man?"

The leader of the Dino-riders laughed coldly, "There's no compromise in our dictionary, kill them all!!"

The Mid-Grade Dino-General flashed, his lance bursting forth with an incredible killing intent, charging towards Holf.

Holf did not expect the Mid-Grade Dino-General to be so decisive, and he immediately raised his hands to defend himself.

That single lance thrust managed to penetrate Holf's right hand, all the way through to his right shoulder, shattering the bones with his pure strength.

In terms of capabilities, Holf was similar to the Mid-Grade Dino-

General in that both were Type 5 experts, and he should not have been injured so easily in a single exchange. However, he had underestimated the viciousness of the opponent and had suffered a disadvantage for it.

Right as the Dino-General was about to pierce Holf's head, a number of Ice Blades shot out from the side, slicing down at the Dino-General.

In response, he jerked his lance up, meeting the ice blades and shattering them.

Holf took the chance to retreat explosively.

Sidopeia laughed lightly, "Mr. Holf, my proposal still stands, are you done considering?"

Holf snarled and replied, "I agree!! Do it!! Eradicate these bunch of rabid dogs!"

The Saint Clan instantly charged out and unleashed their abilities, clashing with the low-grade Dino-Generals, while the Sea Clan members also charged out and engaged in slaughter with the Dino-Generals.

The 3 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals were fearsome, even against the 7 Type 5 Sea Clan members as well as Holf, they could still hold the upper hand.

The Sea Clan were exceptional in sea-battles, if the battle had been in the waters, they would have easily killed the 3 Dino-Generals.

However, now that they were on dry land, their combat strength was diminished severely, and could not match the 3 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals.

If it weren't for Sidopeia handling 1 herself, the Sea Clan and Saint Clan would have long been slaughtered by the 3 Dino-Generals.

Yue Zhong hid in the dark, watching them silently, not daring to move. In this battle, each party was stronger than him.

He laid prone on the ground, retrieving the Type 6 Cetiosaurus blood to drink. Once he absorbed it, it became a warm energy that flowed throughout his body, regenerating his right shoulder.

As the 3 species were still fighting it out, the Radiant Battleship suddenly glowed, and shot out a silver beam of light, sweeping through everyone present within this bubble world. When touched by it, all Type 4 warriors disappeared.

Yue Zhong's sight became faded as he appeared within the ship. At that instant, he channeled his Dark Dou Qi and Devil Flames to envelop his fist as he struck out towards the right.

The Vampire on Yue Zhong's right barely had the time to react and was struck viciously. The Devil Flames immediately threatened to consume him.

As he screamed, the innate Radiance of Life burst out, forcefully pushing the Devil Flames away.

Even so, Yue Zhong took the opportunity to strike once more at his body, and the weakened Saint Clan member spat out a few mouthfuls of blood, crumpling to the floor.

Yue Zhong pointed out and a Type 4 Puppet Rune entered the Vampire's forehead.

After struggling a while, he stood up and bowed, "Bolius greets Master!!"

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, and assess his surroundings.

It was an ordinary room, with 4 beds of different heights, and 2 strange optical devices on the table.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed and he dashed over, grabbing the electrical source of the optical device, and pulled out a handheld tablet to connect them.

The moment the handheld tablet was turned on, Bai Yi appeared with a smile, "Master, is there anything I can help you with?"

Yue Zhong immediately replied, "Scan this battleship, and try to gain control over it!!"

"Yes!"

Bai Yi smiled brightly, and her eyes started to flicker with data, as she sent out her probing signals throughout this Radiant Battleship.

Soon, she returned to her normal status, looking at Yue Zhong apologetically, "Sorry, Master, the mainframe of this computer exceeds my computation ability. If I were to force my way in, there's a chance that this clone of mine will be destroyed. Even if my main body was here, it would be impossible to do so. As of now, I can only control a small part of the ship as well as its map, and the place where the inheritance can be passed on. Only by entering the inheritance room yourself, then you would gain full control of the ship."

Yue Zhong was somewhat disappointed when he heard that, but soon, he recovered. If this Radiant Battleship was like what Holf said, allowing for mortals to transcend into gods, he would do whatever it takes.

"Let's go then! Immediately plot a route to the room, Bai Yi, choose the fastest and avoid all combat if possible!!"

The interior of the ship was crawling with other Type 4 experts. While he was somewhat confident of dealing with them, if he had to face them continuously, he did not know how he could keep up.

"Yes! Based on the analysis, there are 2 paths suitable. Based on Route 1, you will just have to face 2 enemies. For Route 2, you don't have to face any enemies, but it would take about 5 minutes to reach there. Based on my estimates, the 2 enemies from Route 1 have a 90% probability of reaching the inheritance room faster

than you if you choose Route 2."

Bai Yi placed the options in front of Yue Zhong, showcasing the short distance of the 1st, versus the long, windy path of the 2nd.

"Alright, I choose 1, let's go!"

He grabbed the handheld tablet and swiftly made his way towards the inheritance room.

There were many alloy electronic doors, most of them closed. However, the moment Yue Zhong came to them, they would automatically open, evident of Bai Yi's doing.

As they passed by a number of corridors, Bai Yi suddenly warned, "Master, be careful, there are enemies right in front, and they're fighting!"

Yue Zhong's heart ran cold, and he immediately activated his Second Order Stealth, completely retracting his aura. The display in his hand flashed and Bai Yi disappeared, instead, a blond woman with an incredible body was battling a Dino-General.

The woman was precisely Sibica, one of the more outstanding Type 4 Divine Warriors of the Saint Clan.

The other was just an ordinary Dino-General, but he also had the combat strength of a peak Type 4 Divine Warrior. The lance in his hand struck out in mysterious ways, forcing Sibica to dodge constantly.

Sibica was a Vampire of the Saint Clan, her strength might not be comparable to other similar ranking warriors. However, her speed was comparable, if not faster, to an initial Type 5 Divine Warrior. She made use of her superhuman speed to dodge around the Dino-General, looking for an opportunity.

Both parties continued to maintain a stalemate, everytime they clashed, there would be loud sounds. In just a minute, they had exchanged over a hundred moves, but the victor was still hard to determine.

If both sides were of equal strength, and no one wanted to go all out, it would be difficult to ascertain the winner.

Yue Zhong hid there waiting for the victor to emerge. Although it seemed like they were in a stalemate, he was clear that sooner or later, there would be a victor. This was because, between the both of them, Sibica could not afford to waste time.

The number of Dino-Generals inside this Radiant Battleship was more than the Saint Clan. Their combat ability surpassed those Saint Clan members as well. If Sibica did not deal with this one quicker, by the time 2 others appeared, she would be forced to flee.

Chapter 786: God-Devil Nucleus!

Both parties were still clashing with each other, when all of a sudden, Sibica gritted her teeth and charged towards the Low-grade Dino-General.

The Dino-General's eyes congealed, the lance in his hands lifting up. At that instant, as he burst out with an incredible aura, he sent multiple piercing thrusts towards Sibica.

If she forced her attack, she would definitely be turned into a sieve. Before she even got to the Low-grade Dino-General, she would be heavily injured or even killed.

At that moment, Sibica shone with her own Radiance of Life, her speed increased by another 30%. Her body twisted at a strange angle, dodging the danger.

Even so, 3 of the lance lights pierced her body, resulting in 3 bloody holes.

Suppressing her pain, she swept out with her right claw, piercing through the Dino-General's heart and crushing it within her palms.

When the Dino-General felt his heart crushed, he spat out a mouthful of blood, as the light in his eyes dimmed. He crumpled to the floor lifelessly.

Sibica looked at the body and breathed out in relief. Although she had killed this Low-grade Dino-General, her own injuries were not light. Furthermore, the usage of her Radiance of Life had weakened her considerably.

"Sibica, are you alright?!"

At this moment, Bolius came through the hall.

The tense Sibica saw her own comrade and relaxed even more, "I'm injured, but it doesn't seem too bad."

Bolius walked over, "Sibica, I've had a huge discovery! There's an inheritance room, I've found a map of this Radiant Battleship, and there seems to be some sort of inheritance place on it."

Sibica's eyes lightened up as she exclaimed, "Really?! Let me see!"

"This is the map!!"

He pulled out a piece of paper and gave it to her.

"Isn't this just a blank piece of paper?"

When Sibica received it, she suddenly had a bad feeling and retreated explosively.

Unfortunately, while her reaction was fast, Bolius's claws had already torn into her abdomen, slashing out a chunk of meat, as blood flowed out profusely from her wound.

Sibica's eyes flashed with fury, "Bolius!! Why?!"

"It's simple, I want you to die!"

Yue Zhong channeled his Dark Dou Qi, turning into a flash of light that shot towards Sibica.

"Human? Yue Zhong! You are Yue Zhong, the one who got the Treasure of Hope!! That means to say, Bolius is already your puppet!! No wonder his strength had diminished!! How are you here?!" Sibica was truly an elite, coming to a conclusion on Yue Zhong's identity in such a short time.

Yue Zhong had already become a must-kill target within the Saint Clan. All members of Type 2 and above had received the orders, and would not spare any means to hunt him.

"Once you've become my puppet, I'll naturally tell you!"

"Wishful thinking, I will never become your puppet!"

Sibica called out once, and swiftly retreated by pushing her speed to the limit.

Her speed was much faster than Yue Zhong, thus, disappearing

within a second.

"Shit!"

Yue Zhong was clear that after a few more tunnels behind the door, the inheritance room would be in sight. He charged right for it in a frenzy.

He might not be sure what would happen in there, but he did not want Sibica to gain the advantage over him, gaining control over this Radiant Battleship.

Even if there was no chance of transcending to a god, if he could reach the level of a Type 6 or even Type 7 expert, he was willing to risk it all.

Right as he charged out the door, a premonition arose in his heart. He twisted his body, dodging to one side, at the same time, he channeled his Devil Flames, billowing out from him in a fearsome tornado.

Above the door, Sibica had leaped towards Yue Zhong like a coiling dragon, slamming into him with a speed that surpassed the sound barrier. Her kick sent him crashing into an electronic door, causing him to spit out a mouthful of blood.

As she was about to chase after him, a ball of Devil Flames came rushing towards her. Her eyes flashed with pity, forcing her to lightly tap off the door, leaping backward.

"This woman is truly strong, I've been careless!!"

Yue Zhong wiped off the blood at the corner of his mouth, looking towards the direction where Sibica fled and quickly followed after with heightened wariness.

After passing a few more tunnels, Yue Zhong arrived at a large hall.

"This is!!"

Yue Zhong took a look at his surroundings and was shocked.

The hall was about the size of a soccer field. There was a large podium in the middle of the hall, where a half-sphere was floating, with countless strange runes carved on it. There were some other valves connected to it, also engraved with runes.

At the center of that glowing half-sphere, there was a small gold nucleus the size of a fist, emitting a powerful and mysterious source of power.

"God-Devil Nucleus!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the gold nucleus and reeled with shock. In his sea of knowledge, there was an exact replica, just that the size and degree of detail were on different levels.

Sibica had also appeared in the hall when she caught sight of the gold nucleus, her eyes lit up as she leaped towards it.

"Not good!!"

Yue Zhong's face fell as he followed suit.

He was ultimately slower by a step, as Sibica reached the light orb first, reaching out to grab the gold nucleus.

As she touched it, there was a bright flash of light, directly incinerating her right hand, causing her to scream out in pain.

Yue Zhong watched this with shock and he stopped in his tracks. He then changed to send a fist towards Sibica.

Chapter 787: Gaining the Radiant Battleship!

Sibica was truly an elite among the Type 4 realm; she gritted her teeth and brought her left hand to block in front of her.

Yue Zhong's fist slammed into her, sending her flying.

Sibica borrowed the force to bounce off the wall with her lithe body, sending a vicious kick towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong twisted his body, sending his own kick towards Sibica's waist without mercy, causing her to slam into a wall like a broken toy.

In terms of Strength, Yue Zhong was actually weaker than Sibica.

However, after Sibica had expended her Radiance of Life, plus her right arm having been incinerated, her current condition was too weak to handle Yue Zhong.

After gaining a successful hit, Yue Zhong tapped his foot and appeared right beside Sibica, slamming another fist into her chest without mercy.

A look of despair came over Sibica's face, as she released her Radiance of Light.

As it glowed brightly, Yue Zhong was forced back a few steps, his eyes narrowing as he stared at Sibica.

If a peak-Type 4 expert were to go all out, it would be a dangerous thing. With Yue Zhong's current strength, if he were careless, it would likely end up in mutual death.

"Cunning human!"

Sibica glared at Yue Zhong with gritted teeth, and with a flash, she turned to flee. She was smart and knew that if she stayed on, it would only result in death. She might as well escape first, and seek

a comeback later on.

Yue Zhong swept a glance before turning to gaze at the God-Devil Nucleus.

As he came up to it, he hesitated slightly, before using his God and Devil Imprint to scan the half-orb. A bright golden light came out from his imprint, shooting into the God-Devil Nucleus.

"Smart!"

All of a sudden, a bright voice sounded beside Yue Zhong's ear. His heart turned cold and he swiveled quickly to the left, retreating a few meters.

There was a young man who looked extremely ordinary, where one could even say he was slightly ugly, smiling at Yue Zhong. He was decked in black armor.

"Hologram? Who are you?"

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, noticing that the glow around the young man and came to the understanding that he was a hologram.

The young man chuckled, before squatting down casually, "Me? I'm called Liu Shi Tou, nickname Dog-egg. I'm a failure, yet, the only one in 10,000 years to be closest to God."

Yue Zhong could not help but be startled, "Dog-egg?"

Liu Shi Tou seemed to have discerned Yue Zhong thoughts, and laughed lightly, "A truly frustrating name, don't you think? Before the world changed, I was just an ordinary farmer. After that, with the God and Devil System helping me, I slowly climbed to the ranks of a Type 9 Divine Warrior. I was just a slight distance away from the realm of true Gods. However, I still failed in the end, as I went to challenge that entity calling himself God, who had toyed with me every step of the way. I was squashed by a single hand of his, and forced to live here."

"Type 9 Divine Warrior!!" Yue Zhong eyed Liu Shi Tou and was shocked.

The Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor already possessed earth-shaking might. With every single movement, it could cause tsunamis everywhere. A Type 9 Divine Warrior was simply superhuman.

Liu Shi Tou continued, "You're called Yue Zhong right! Since you're a human, I'll hand over the rights and authority of this Radiant Battleship to you. However, don't get too cocky. A treasure like this is merely one out of hundreds that God controls in his 800 worlds. This is a Gold-Level Treasure. Most of them are in the hands of other races, whereas we humans only control 3 of them. This Radiant Battleship is one of them."

Yue Zhong asked respectfully, "Senior, may I ask, what is a Gold-Level Treasure?"

Towards this Type 9 Divine Warrior, Yue Zhong maintained his respect. After so many difficulties and obstacles, grabbing every chance he could to strengthen and evolve, he had only reached the Type 4 Stage. Liu Shi Tou had been able to reach the Type 9 Divine Warrior realm, this was proof of how much he had to endure and go through.

Liu Shi Tou responded, "A Gold-Level Treasure is something that is able to resist God. Below that, the other treasures are White-Silver and Bronze respectively. You have a Treasure of Hope, those are classified as White-Silver. While they are powerful and useful, every one of them does not possess the ability to threaten God. Only treasures of Gold-Level can help you bridge that gap, surpassing the barrier, and becoming a true God!"

Liu Shi Tou gazed off into the distance, sighing in pity, "Otherwise, even if you have the strength to wipe out an entire star, you're still merely an ant."

"Destroy a star! What a tone!!" Yue Zhong sucked in a breath of cold air.

"Time's running out, I hope that you can escape the clutches of that person, this can be considered as helping me fulfill my last wish."

When he said that, the God-Devil Nuclei inside the half-orb immediately shattered, turning into countless beams of light that shot through the valves in all directions.

A number of messages appeared, entering Yue Zhong's mind, connecting his own God-Devil Nucleus.

At that instant, it felt like his entire body was one with the Radiant Battleship.

"Your strength is still too weak before I disappear, let me help you Evolve!"

Liu Shi Tou pointed at Yue Zhong, and a golden light enveloped him, under its nourishment, Yue Zhong's God-Devil Nucleus expanded once more.

"Congratulations, your Shadow Clone ability had been raised to the Second Order!"

"..."

Amidst a flurry of messages, all of Yue Zhong's skill below the Second Order stage was instantly pushed to the Second Order realm. Those which were already Second Order were pushed to the peak, with just one more enhancement and a Third Order skill book, they would change.

Yue Zhong's broken right arm also quickly healed.

Liu Shi Tou took a look and sighed, as he slowly disappeared from the world, "What a pity, my strength is only a fraction of what I had, and I can't push you to the Type 5 realm."

The fist-sized God-Devil Nuclei also finished shattering, disappearing from the world.

Yue Zhong opened his eyes, feeling the boundless energy

coursing through his body. He turned towards Liu Shi Tou's earlier position and bowed with solemnness, "Many thanks, Senior."

Although Liu Shi Tou had been unable to help Yue Zhong evolve to the Type 5 realm, he had qualitatively improved Yue Zhong's constitution as well as the God-Devil Nuclei, causing him to reach the pinnacle of the Type 4 realm.

"Expel all foreign races!"

Yue Zhong immediately gave his first order since coming in control of the Radiant Battleship.

With a bright flash, all the Type 4 Divine Warriors were sent out of the ship.

"What happened?"

Seeing the sudden appearance of the various Type 4 experts, the few Type 5 Divine Warriors still in a clash immediately stopped, gazing at the Radiant Battleship in suspicion.

The earth rumbled, and the battleship began to rise, as it lit up from within.

Holf stared at it and lost his mind, "It has fallen under someone's control!! Damn it, who the fuck is it?!"

"Since the Radiant Battleship expelled our 3 races, there must be a 4th race inside there! They must have gotten the control over it!"

The beautiful Sidopeia came to a conclusion as she gazed at the rising Radiant Battleship.

The body of the ship fired out a number of white beams in thin air, revealing a large hole.

Right at this moment, another huge hole appeared out of nowhere, and a gold hand the size of a mountain shot out, trying to grab that Radiant Battleship.

The moment that golden hand appeared, a pressure was emitted,

weighing down on everybody, preventing them from breathing as they dropped to their knees, terrified. Even the strongest and most arrogant Dino-General was no exception. Everyone's faces were written with shock.

The huge hand grabbed onto the Radiant Battleship, intending to pull it towards its hole.

The Radiant Battleship immediately responded by blasting out with a powerful golden beam, piercing the hole, slamming into the terrifying entity on the other side of the hole.

There was a spray of blood from the hole, as a roar of fury that rocked everybody who heard it, "Damn you Dog-Egg Liu!!! Even in death, you still want to attack me!! I'll bear this in mind!!"

Another beam of light shot out from the Radiant Battleship, twisting the puff of golden blood, before disappearing into the hole it created.

When it disappeared, the mini-pocket world was instantly engulfed by water.

Chapter 788: Signs of Humans!

"Even if I can't gain the Radiant Battleship, capturing these Mid-Grade Dino-Generals as slaves of our Sea Clan isn't too bad!"

Sidopeia laughed lightly, swishing her mermaid tail and charged towards the Dino-General she was fighting, pointing at his abdomen. Immediately, a powerful gush of water shot out like a blade, slicing through his stomach.

"Retreat!!"

Holf saw how easily Sidopeia dealt with a Mid-Grade Dino-General of the same realm and his face fell, quickly ordering the rest of the Saint Clan.

If it were on land, Holf could at least hold his own against Sidopeia, however, in these waters, it was her domain. Any warrior of the same realm would suffer.

Sidopeia chuckled lightly, but gave her order with any mercy, "Capture them all, our Sea Clan is in need of some powerful foreign races to be our research subjects!"

The rest of the Sea Clan experts charged over, grabbing or killing any of those not from their race.

On the other side, Yue Zhong was piloting the Radiant Battleship through the void. As he fiddled around with the ship, he got to know it better.

The Gold Treasure Radiant Battleship had 2 main abilities. The first was the ability to shuttle through space. With it, he could get to Earth and the other worlds without the Gates of Hell. On it, there were the coordinates of 800 other worlds. With enough power, he could freely shuttle between them. The 2nd ability was its combat strength. There were 3 main cannons, 300 auxiliary cannons. The 3 main cannons could easily blast a Type 9 Divine Warrior to his or her demise, while the 300 auxiliary cannons

could deal with Type 8 experts easily.

However, while it was seemingly almighty, its energy consumption was likewise immense. In order to kill a Type 9 Divine Warrior, one had to fork out that same level of energy. Of all the nucleus that Yue Zhong had, even if he combined them all, he could not even muster enough for a single blast.

The single shot that had injured the owner of that huge, golden hand earlier was from the residual energy left by Liu Shi Tou's God-Devil Nucleus when it shattered.

Yue Zhong felt a pang of pity, "What a mess, although this ship is strong, I'm still too weak, I can't even exhibit it to its maximum."

Other than the 2 main abilities, there were other repair and maintenance cabins inside the battleship. As long as one had a single breath left, they could make use of these machines to regenerate themselves.

After a week, he appeared out of a forest of the Third World, through a void, and he leaped out from the hole.

"Over there!"

The moment he landed, he swept his surroundings a glance, closing his eyes to sense and dashed off towards a direction.

Inside a cave.

Sun Lan Lan was curled up in a corner, her beautiful face sunken and pale. Her right hand was swollen, as disgusting maggots crawled around her wounds.

Han Qiong was kneeling by her side, suppressing her disgust and used a wooden stick to pluck out the maggots from her right arm.

Sun Lan Lan suddenly grabbed hold of Han Qiong's arm, crying miserably, "It hurts!! It hurts!! Qiong Qiong, am I going to die? Will I die?!"

From an idol that was adored by countless, to her current plight,

it was enough to drive anyone insane. She did not dare to look at her own hand. Every time she caught sight of those maggots, she felt like throwing up.

Han Qiong patted her gently and consoled, "No! Don't worry, Lan Lan, we'll be alright!"

Sun Lan Lan grabbed her tighter as she sobbed, "Qiong Qiong, I want to go home, I miss home!! If I can go home, I will not make my mum angry anymore!! I will study hard! Qiong Qiong, I want to go home!!"

Han Qiong's heart soured as she tried to soothe her, "Lan Lan, we'll definitely make it back!!"

Sun Lan Lan continued to ask Han Qiong fearfully, "Qiong Qiong, why is Yue Zhong not back yet? Has he abandoned us?"

Sun Lan Lan's mental state was currently extremely weak and only knew to rely on Yue Zhong.

When Greenie had finished evolving, it had flown into the skies.

Lightning was also merely one of the average beings here, and could only guard around the cave while bringing food back.

Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong were initially not used to consuming the bloody and raw meat. However, after 2 whole days of hunger, they could only obediently consume the meat while holed up in this cave.

Sun Lan Lan had started to feel sick of this life and wanted to head out to pluck some fruits. Unfortunately, she was bitten by a Mutant Fly, and her right arm had started to swell, infested with maggots.

Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong finally understood the frightening nature of the wild, not only were there terrifying dinosaurs out there, there were also powerful bugs that could kill humans.

Han Qiong consoled her, "Don't worry, Yue Zhong would not

abandon us. Look, Lan Lan, you're so cute, and your figure is nice, Yue Zhong definitely likes you. Otherwise, he would not have saved us!"

Sun Lan Lan muttered meekly, "Really? But, I'm not as pretty as you, will he really like me?"

Han Qiong was their top beauty among the girls in the group. Sun Lan Lan had never thought that she could compare with her.

Han Qiong smiled brightly, "Of course, I promise!"

Han Qiong was smart and knew that if Sun Lan Lan continued to have wild thoughts, it would be bad, thus she brought the conversation to other topics.

"Is anyone there?"

All of a sudden, there were human voices outside the cave.

When Sun Lan Lan heard their voices, she became excited, and shouted shrilly, "We're here!! We're here!!"

Han Qiong's face fell, reaching out to muffle her mouth, but she was too late. Han Qiong knew that human nature could be incredibly ugly. Two weak girls out here, in this cave, in such a lawless world, who knew what would happen to them.

Hearing her voice, 7 men walked in.

Chapter 789: Shao Village!

The 7 men were decked in beast hide, their faces with coarse beards. They looked like wild barbarians. In their hands, there were bows and arrows, spears, some of them even had dead rabbits, wolves, and snakes that they caught. Their bodies were ordinary, however, their muscles were ripped and full of vitality. They were seemingly good hunters.

When Sun Lan Lan caught sight of them, her heart shook, and she instantly felt fearful. After all, when they had first arrived, the actions of those hooligans had terrified her.

Han Qiong also grabbed a wooden stick up and eyed them warily.

One of them caught sight of Han Qiong and his eyes lit up, "I'm Shao Yun! Do you guys want to come to our village? Your friend here has been stung by a parasitic fly, if she doesn't receive treatment in time, she will not last a week."

Han Qiong had wanted to reject their invitation, but hearing the last sentence, she hesitated.

Sun Lan Lan's wound was starting to fester, with multiple maggots crawling all around. Han Qiong had no means of treating the wound. If things went on like that, Sun Lan Lan would definitely die.

When Sun Lan Lan heard this, she grabbed Han Qiong's hand, "Qiong Qiong! Let's go! Let's go together!"

Han Qiong glanced at Sun Lan Lan's swollen hand and gritted her teeth to look at Shao Yun, "How do you guys do, I'm called Han Qiong. She's Sun Lan Lan. Do you guys have the means to treat her?"

Shao Yun grinned, "Of course! The parasitic fly is everywhere, if we don't have any medicine, we would have been wiped out. However, the medicine is obtained through our hard work, why

should we give it to you for free?"

Han Qiong faltered, and felt a bad premonition, "What do you want then?"

Shao Yun exclaimed boldly, "I want you to be my woman! As long as you agree, I will take the medicine out to save her. Otherwise, you can watch her die. The parasitic fly can release countless of small eggs in their prey, right now, it's only a small number on her right hand. Most of the eggs have already infected the rest of her body. Soon, the eggs will hatch and if she doesn't receive the right treatment, she would be eaten alive from within. The pain is the most horrific form of torture available."

When she heard this, Sun Lan Lan began to tremble in fear, her mind almost crumbling at the thought of being eaten alive.

She began to squeal, "I can be your woman. I'm pretty and my body's good! I'm also a virgin! Please, save me!! As long as you save me, I can be your woman!!"

In order to live, Sun Lan Lan could not care less. Not many could deal with the fear of being eaten alive by maggots. When she heard of her impending fate, she almost lost her mind.

Shao Yun glanced at Sun Lan Lan and barked coldly, "Don't be silly! How can you compare to Han Qiong? I'm not interested in you."

Sun Lan Lan was pretty, but she had not managed to keep herself neat and tidy for an entire week, plus her current state was frail. It was easy to mistake her for being ugly.

Shao Yun turned to eye Han Qiong with desire, "Have you thought it through?"

Sun Lan Lan was practically pale as she begged Han Qiong, "Qiong Qiong, please, save me! Save me!!! I don't want to die!!"

Han Qiong fell in a dilemma, on one hand, it was her friend's life, on the other, it was her own happiness. It was a difficult choice.

"I...agree..." Han Qiong struggled in her mind, before making the decision. Compared to her own happiness, she was not willing to watch her friend being eaten alive.

"Wait!"

At this moment, a voice traveled over.

Shao Yun and the rest felt their backs turn cold, as they readied their weapons, turning around warily.

In this world, there were fearsome, prehistoric creatures, as well as dangerous, mutated Dino-people. Even humans were capable of murdering others.

Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan immediately perked up upon hearing that voice, recognizing whose it was.

Under everyone's gaze, Yue Zhong walked out from the forest and into the cave.

With a flick, Yue Zhong pulled out a Type 2 Mutant Beast nucleus, "I want the medicine. I won't ask for it for free, hence, this Type 2 Nucleus is your payment."

"Type 2 Mutant Beast nucleus!!"

"He actually has one, what luck!!"

"...."

When the 6 others saw the nucleus, their eyes lit up with excitement.

Shao Yun held it tightly with greed in his eyes, staring at Yue Zhong.

The rest also turned to look at Yue Zhong with a hint of greed, as though they might do something stupid. In such a lawless society, it was common for people to kill over belongings.

Yue Zhong could sense their intentions and laughed coldly in his heart. He had seen plenty of such people. If they decided to do

something, he would not mind killing them.

Shao Yun observed Yue Zhong carefully and felt guarded when he realized Yue Zhong was extremely calm. Hesitating a little, he decided to forego his previous thoughts, and nodded to him, "This Type 2 Mutant Beast nucleus is indeed more valuable than the medicine. We're willing to exchange. Please come with us to the village, that's where the medicine is kept."

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong turned to look at Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan, who quickly arrived by his side.

Sun Lan Lan came up to him and wiped her tears, thanking him profusely, "Thank you, Yue Zhong! Thank you for saving me!!"

Yue Zhong had already saved her twice, no matter how selfish or wilful she was, she knew what gratitude was. In this dangerous world, all she could think of was to rely on this dependable and strong person.

"En!"

Yue Zhong did not say much, he had saved her because of Han Qiong. It was merely a minor act. Although he was not a saint, saving someone out of convenience was not something he was reluctant to do.

Sun Lan Lan saw how distant he was, and hesitated. If it were in the past, she would have immediately grabbed hold of him. However, she knew she had not bathed for a week, plus due to her injury, she was stinky and smelled of rotting flesh. She did not want to destroy her image further.

The group of them proceeded carefully through the forest, fortunately not coming across any prehistoric life forms, and reached Shao Village.

The village was located at a plain at the corner of the forest, with countless huts made out of wood.

The inhabitants did not seem to possess any construction or building flair, as the wooden huts resembled those of the ancient Red Indian tribes.

All around the village, there were about a hundred people, and 20 kids cheered when they saw Shao Yun and the rest return.

A number of topless women of different skin color also surrounded over, retrieving the hunting spoils of their men, before kissing them passionately. Each man was surrounded by about 4 or 5 women.

Shao Yun had 11 women surrounding him, taking down the hunting trophies from his body before kissing him passionately.

He laughed smugly as he showed off to Han Qiong, "See that, Han Qiong? I'm the most outstanding hunter here. I have 11 women, however, my prey is enough to feed 20 people. If you were to become my woman, I will not let you go hungry, and I will feed you well every day!"

In this world, although food was plenty, there were many Mutant Beasts and Mutant Bugs, as well as prehistoric animals. In this strange world, humans were at the bottom of the food chain. The fact that Shao Yun could hunt so much prey was pretty impressive, thus, many women were willing to give themselves to him.

Seeing his arrogance, Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan wore blank expressions. Their lifestyles were extremely different, especially where they came from, they could not understand why he was so arrogant.

Yue Zhong interrupted his speech, asking indifferently, "Where's the medicine?"

When he was stopped so abruptly, Shao Yun felt pissed, but he pointed to an elder, "The medicine is with him. I'll go get it for you."

The old man came forward and introduced himself, "How do you

do, I'm the village chief, Shao Sheng. Although having visitors is a joyous occasion, we don't have much food. If you join us, we can give you food. Otherwise, we can only allow you to stay the night, you'll have to settle your own food and water."

Chapter 790: Beast Meat in exchange for Beauty!

Yue Zhong did not stand on ceremony and replied, "Sure! Where's the medicine I want?"

Shao Sheng carefully took out a packet of medicine wrapped in leaves and handed it to Yue Zhong, "It's here! This is used to treat those stung by the parasitic worms. Apply half on the wound, and the other is to be consumed. After 2 rounds of diarrhea, it'll be ok."

Yue Zhong pulled out a bottle of water and handed them to Sun Lan Lan, "Do as he says!"

Sun Lan Lan thanked Yue Zhong, her eyes full of gratitude, "Thank you!!"

Yue Zhong nodded to express his acknowledgment.

Shao Sheng continued, "Ah Hua, take them to the guest room!"

"Yes, Dad!"

A young girl of 14 or 15 came bouncing over, with only a few leaves covering her chest and private areas, revealing plenty of healthy, wheat-colored skin. Her looks were adorable and pretty.

Shao Sheng replied, "This is my daughter, Shao Hua, she will bring you to the guest area."

Yue Zhong nodded and followed her to a simple wooden hut.

Inside, there was a big bed and some simple cooking utensils. Seeing this bed, Sun Lan Lan's pale face turned red, as her eyes glimmered slightly, looking towards Yue Zhong.

Shao Hua smiled brightly at them, before waving and leaving the hut, "This is your accommodations! Other than food, you may look for me if you require anything else. If you guys change your mind and want to join us, you can find me too! I'm off!"

When she left, Sun Lan Lan quickly administered the medicine according to the chief's instructions.

The weather turned dark, and many villagers began to prepare their meals, skinning their prey and putting the meat into the stoves. Soon an aroma of cooked meat wafted throughout the village.

Shao Yun came into the wooden hut, and grinned at Han Qiong, "Han Qiong, you must be hungry! Let me treat you to dinner!"

She shook her head to reject him, "No need!"

Shao Yun's expression froze in dissatisfaction, coldly snorting, "Just don't regret it!"

After that, he left in big strides.

"Let's go out to eat as well!"

Yue Zhong drawled lazily before he walked out.

At the center of the village, a number of woks were placed together, while the villagers sat around.

At every wok, there was a man as the nucleus, while the children and women he was in charge of sat beside him. The boys came first, then the girls. Every one of them held coconut shells for bowls.

The men had meat, bones and some wild vegetables. The boys had a little meat and bones, while the rest were vegetables. Many of the women only had broth and vegetables, while the girls had a similar, but smaller, portion.

Everyone was treasuring their meal.

Shao Yun's wok had the most meat and bones. His own bowl was stacked with meat and bones, while the women he kept also had meat and bones. Those he did not favor as much only had vegetables.

Seeing Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan walking out, Shao Yun

purposely pulled out a large fox leg and spoke something to the 13-year-old beside him. The girl immediately came into his arms, receiving the fox leg, and started making out crazily with Shao Yun.

After that, he shot a challenging gaze at Yue Zhong, eyeing him with contempt.

Yue Zhong snorted at the childish challenge, as he pulled out his own cooking utensils, and threw a few pieces of Type 5 Mutant Beast meat in to start cooking while adding some spices.

Soon, an irresistible aroma spread throughout the village, suppressing the flavor of the rest of the food.

Sun Lan Lan smelled the aroma and felt her stomach rumble. She had been forced to consume raw meat the past few days, just smelling the fragrance was enough to set her stomach off. She was a bubbly girl, in the past, she would have taken a piece without asking. However, after coming to this world, the cruelty shook her, and she did not rush, instead, waiting for Yue Zhong's permission.

Han Qiong looked at the meat and could not help but swallow her saliva as well, revealing a hopeful expression.

"Help yourselves!"

Yue Zhong's words had just fallen, and Sun Lan Lan immediately grabbed a piece to shove it into her mouth, gobbling it up in seconds. Her chopsticks did not stop, as she continued to stuff meat into her mouth.

Han Qiong also could not care about her image as she filled her mouth, exclaiming in praise, "This is amazing! So delicious!! What meat is this?! I have never eaten something as tasty as this before."

As an idol of the world she came from, there was nothing Han Qiong had not eaten. However, she had truly not tasted the flavor of a Type 5 Mutant Beast meat. Furthermore, she had been hungry

for a few days, which added to the mindset.

Yue Zhong smiled mildly but did not say much, continuing to grasp his own meat.

"Can I try one piece?"

At this time, a sweet voice sounded, as Shao Hua appeared, looking extremely expectantly at the meat and asked Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong nodded, "Ok!"

Shao Hua picked up a piece and placed it in her mouth, softly chewing it.

The moment she swallowed it, she could feel the hot sense of energy flowing through her body, enhancing her body.

Shao Hua immediately smiled brightly, "Delicious! That was extremely tasty! You must be Yue Zhong!! If you let me have this wok, I can give you my first time, how about that? I'm the prettiest girl in the village!"

Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong became shocked when they heard this, they did not expect that such a pretty girl would sell herself for a wok of meat.

Yue Zhong retorted perfunctorily, "This wok of meat is precious! Your first time is not enough. But using your entire person would be barely sufficient."

Shao Hua was not bad looking, although she wasn't an absolute beauty, she had youth and vitality. However, Yue Zhong was numb due to the sheer number of beauties he had by his side.

Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong heaved a sigh of relief. They could feel the energy flowing within their bodies, and knew that this wok of meat was definitely something valuable. They did not want Shao Hua to finish it.

Shao Hua seemed to consider it for 3 seconds, before laughing, "En! That's true! This wok is definitely precious! My virginity is

not enough. Fine then! I will sell myself to you! From now on, I'm your woman. That should be enough right?"

"Wait a minute!!" Right at this moment, Shao Yun came over, his face dark.

Shao Yun continued to declare boorishly, "Shao Hua, you're the prettiest woman of the village, you should belong to the strongest, which is me. You should belong to me! I will use 2 wild cows, 8 foxes, 3 goats to exchange for you. After you become mine, I will let you oversee the rest!!"

Shao Hao did not hesitate to reply, "Shao Yun, I'm not yours yet. If you want me, you need to get my father's approval. I think, my dad should be willing to exchange me for this wok of meat."

Shao Sheng came over just then, and Shao Hua immediately exclaimed, "Dad! You're here. I want to exchange myself for a wok of this meat from Yue Zhong. Dad, you can have half, I'll have the other half!"

Shao Yun continued loudly, "Chief!! I will use 4 cows, 16 foxes and 6 goats in exchange for your daughter!! Let her be my woman!!"

That sort of figure was quite a sum of assets in the village, and most other women would jump at that offer.

Shao Sheng was slightly moved. Women in this village were low-status, and since men had to go out and fight, their risk of dying were high. Hence, they held elevated positions. Even the Chief's daughter had a price, as long as it was sufficient. Furthermore, Shao Yun was the strongest warrior, following him would not be a bad thing.

Shao Hua fed her father a small piece of Type 5 Meat, "Try one!"

The moment he swallowed that meat, he felt a surge of energy in his body, pushing his strength up.

"Deal! Yue Zhong, from now on, Ah Hua is your woman!"

Shao Hua's eyes were filled with delight as she poured half her bowl into her father's bowl, watching as he ran off.

Shao Yun watched this and his mouth fell open, standing there in embarrassment. He glared at Yue Zhong fixedly, before turning around. He could not determine Yue Zhong's bottom line, but his instincts told him this man was truly fearsome.

Shao Hao continued to stick by Yue Zhong's side as she helped herself to the Type 5 Mutant Beast meat.

Chapter 791: Vulture Tribe!

Yue Zhong pretended to rummage through his haversack, bringing out some cakes and bottles of milk, handing them to Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong.

The Type 5 Beast Meat could strengthen a person's constitution, easily allowing a normal person to possess the physique of a trained veteran. Yue Zhong might have a few hundred tonnes of such treasures, but it was not enough. After all, his people numbered in the millions. If he wanted to increase the combat strength of his soldiers, the Type 5 Mutant Beast meat could not be squandered.

Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong could only eat their cake silently. Such delicacies were already rare in this world, but compared to the Type 5 Beast Meat, it paled in comparison.

After dinner, as the villagers returned to their own huts, the sounds of moanings echoed throughout the village.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the hut, Shao Hua had already taken off her bra and panties, revealing a youthful and lithe body.

Yue Zhong frowned, "What are you doing?"

Shao Hua smiled coyly, "Sleeping with you! I'm already your woman, of course, I have to sleep with you."

Yue Zhong took a glance at her body and could feel the heat of passion rising within him. He had already been busy for a few months, and numbed himself during times of stress and pressure. Now that things were slightly peaceful, he could not help but be aroused.

He pulled out a cape and covered her body, pulling her out, "Let's go there!"

Shao Hua wore a bright smile and followed, "En!"

Yue Zhong quickly came behind the hut and set up a tent, carrying Shao Hua in.

Very soon, there were sounds coming out from within the tent.

Inside the wooden hut, Sun Lan Lan heard those sounds, and blushed as she muttered enviously, "He has bedded that girl!! Qiong Qiong, I'm in no way inferior to that girl, how come he didn't choose me, but her? How is she better than me in any way? Her chest cannot compare to mine, and her looks are obviously inferior!"

Han Qiong chuckled and consoled her, "Forget it, Lan Lan, Yue Zhong don't know that you like him after all. He just took her out of convenience. Compared to her, you're obviously cuter."

Sun Lan Lan nodded in agreement, "En! That's right! Compared to her, I'm definitely cuter. Since Yue Zhong can like her, he will definitely like me. Once my injuries are better, I will make him fall for me!"

Just then, as the village was ringing out with the passionate moans, in the nearby forest, a number of eyes stared fixedly, their hands wielding long spears. They charged for the village like specters.

Inside a hut, a burly villager was currently hugging 6 women. Suddenly, 3 men appeared in his hut with long spears, and his expression turned to one of shock as he reached for his spear.

At that moment, the 3 men instantly thrust out, sending their spears through his body.

The 6 women stared in fear and horror.

After killing that villager, out of the 3, 2 of them had lust in their eyes as they took off their pants and pounced on the 6 women.

"Attack!! Enemy attack!!"

By the time the third hut was infiltrated, a villager of the Shao

Village screamed out.

The moment his voice rang out, every villager charged out with their own weapons.

"Ah!!"

"Beast!!"

"It hurts!!"

"...."

The intruders numbered more than 50, every single one of them ripped and strong, their combat experience plentiful. They had the advantage of the sneak attack as well, and those villagers that charged out were quickly taken down by them, and the moans were replaced by screams and wails.

The sounds alerted Sun Lan Lan, whose eyes flashed with fear, as she exclaimed, "Something is happening out there!!"

Han Qiong had already gotten off her bed to rush towards Yue Zhong's tent, "Go! Find Yue Zhong!"

"Yue Zhong, there're intruders!"

The moment Sun Lan Lan entered the tent, she caught sight of Yue Zhong's defined upper torso, as well as the satiated Shao Hua in his embrace. Seeing her nestled in his arms, she could not help but be jealous.

"Not good, they must be the people from other villages. Let's escape quickly. Otherwise, we will be captured by them. If our luck is good, we might be absorbed into their village, otherwise, they might just kill us all or make us slaves." Shao Hua's face turned pale, twisting her body in a bid to get up. However, she frowned and her head felt light. After all, she had just gotten it on with Yue Zhong in a crazy manner and lacked the strength now.

At this moment, 3 spear-wielding men charged in.

One of them had thick hair across his chest, his right arm

tattooed with a vulture. He stared at Sun Lan Lan with lust, "Great! These 3 women are all good stuff. Seems like we're lucky this time. The big-breast is mine!"

Another black-skinned man with a smaller stature and crooked features licked his lips, "The fairer chick is mine. I want to have a good time. It's been so long! The rest of the women in this village are so ugly!"

The last man had a face full of beard, he laughed savagely at Yue Zhong, "That man over there, crawl over here and lick your daddy's shoes. Otherwise, I'll skin you, and use your skull as my pissing pot!! Haha!!"

Shao Hua caught sight of the vulture tattoo on their arms and her face turned ugly. Trembling, she muttered, "Vulture Tribe, they're from the Vulture Tribe. We're finished, we're all finished. They're the most notorious bandits around these parts, everytime they attack, they will kill the men and capture the women as slaves after they're done playing, they will eat them alive."

"Cannibals?!"

Hearing her words, Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong felt a cold sense of dread. They had not expected these men to be such vicious beings. If they ended up in their hands, they might as well die now.

The bearded man barked out aggressively, his eyes flashing with cruelty. He thrust out with his spear, "Damn dog, CRAWL OVER!!"

"Seeking death!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a chilly light, flipping his hand, he pulled out his Stinger and fired.

Peng!

Following a loud sound, the bearded man's lower half was blasted apart.

"Ah!!! AH!!! IT HURTS!! IT HURTS!! SAVE ME!!"

Having his lower body blasted off, the bearded man's upper torso rolled on the ground in his own pool of blood, struggling and screaming. The sound rang throughout the Shao Village.

"Audacious! You damn dog, you actually dare to hurt our Vulture Tribe people, I will tear your tendons apart!!"

The hair chest stepped forward with a roar, together with his midget friend, as both of them swung out with an 8-times speed towards Yue Zhong.

With an enhanced physique and abundant combat experience, even Earth's special forces might not be a match for these guys.

Facing the 2 warriors, Shao Hua's face drained of color as she screamed, "Watch out, Yue Zhong!!"

Yue Zhong's face remained impassive as he fired twice, and the 2 men soared through the air, screaming in agony.

"Strong!!!"

Seeing how Yue Zhong took care of them easily, there was none of the shock towards a gory scene, instead, Shao Hua's eyes were filled with reverence towards him.

Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong, on the other hand, saw the viciousness of the attack, and almost vomited.

In this third world, humans killed each other, and Shao Hua had seen her fair share of violence, hence she was not affected, instead, idolizing Yue Zhong.

"Come on!!"

He put on his clothes and walked out.

Currently, at the center of the village, there were 20 men and boys tied up together. The Vulture Tribe men had grabbed the women out and were fucking them right in front of their partners.

The warriors panted in excitement while the women screamed.

This time, the leader of the Vulture Tribe troops did not partake in the madness, instead, standing coldly at one corner. He caught sight of Yue Zhong walking over with his Black Tooth Blade.

The leader ordered, "Deal with him!!"

4 of the warriors beside the leader immediately charged towards him with 8 times speed.

The moment they reached near Yue Zhong, his blade flashed out, and the men were instantly turned into multiple slices of meat, fresh blood spraying everywhere.

Among the captives, Shao Yun was kneeling obediently on the floor. When he caught sight of how the 4 warriors were turned into minced meat by Yue Zhong, his heart went cold and was full of fear, "That is Yue Zhong!! He's strong!! Thankfully I didn't antagonize him!!"

Chapter 792: Slice the Enemy!

The moment he saw his warriors diced apart by Yue Zhong, the leader of the Vulture Tribe troops narrowed his eyes and roared with fury, "Stop fucking around! Get ready for battle!"

The various warriors quickly got up from on top of the women and grabbed their spears. They did not even wear their pants properly, gathering together with their lower halves naked.

Yue Zhong suddenly pulled out his assault rifle and started to fire wildly into the warriors.

The bullets found their targets in the foreheads of the soldiers, instantly killing them.

Yue Zhong's Firearm Manipulation had been enhanced to its Second Order stage, coupled with his physique that could surpass most Type 4 Divine Warriors, the rifle in his hand had suddenly become even deadlier than any of the strongest gunmen before the apocalypse. Within a hundred meters, he executed headshots after headshots.

He calmly killed them while assessing their strength, "8 times that of a normal person physique, but bullets can still claim their lives. Human bodies are still weak after all. These Vulture Tribe members might be good seedlings for the special forces, but in view of the large war, they're still weaker than an infantry."

In this world where there were plenty of prehistoric life forms, dinosaurs and Mutant Beasts, any human, even the women, had a physique that was at least 2 times stronger than those on Earth. Those who had gone through battle and enhancement would be at about 4 times. If they were placed on Earth before the apocalypse, they would be classified as freaks. However, in a large-scale battle, they could not contend with a weaponized army.

As for the dino-people, they were different. Each of them was at

least Type 3 and above, their bodies stronger than Yue Zhong when he had just conquered the capital, by at least 3 times. Such monsters would be able to unleash a terror on the battlefield.

Only explosives, guided missiles, cannons, and anti-tank missiles would be able to deal damage to them. Other light weapons might not be effective.

In a matter of breaths, 20 Vulture Tribe members lost their lives.

The rest of their comrades stayed still, eyeing Yue Zhong with fear, their hands gripping their weapons with fear. Their backs were cold as they awaited orders from their leader.

Any ordinary person would collapse when they saw their friends or comrades dying, and might even lose their will to fight, fleeing as far as they could. These Vulture Tribe members actually stayed where they are, proving their will.

The leader watched his subordinates die with a sunken expression, asking hoarsely, "Who are you? I'm Xi Xiang Sheng, the 100-men commander of Vulture Tribe."

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "I'm Yue Zhong! All of you should just surrender, I can grant you your lives."

Xi Xiang Shen's eyes flashed with a wild glint, "Big words. Our Vulture Tribe has over a thousand soldiers, and our Chief, the great Muto Genji has the strength of a Type 3 Divine Warrior. You might be strong, but you can never compare to our chief. You had better surrender. As long as you join us, food and women will be available. Based on your strength, even granting you a village is no issue."

A Type 3 Divine Warrior was considered a powerful existence among humans. Yue Zhong had also only been at a Type 3 stage when he left Earth. At that time, he had belonged to one of the peak existences on Earth. Among the humans, only the 12 Apostles could give him a little headache. Other than the other monstrous

talents hidden elsewhere in the world, he was basically invincible.

Even in this prehistoric world, where the dino-people reigned supreme, in the human societies, it seemed that the Type 3 Divine Warrior was the highest existence.

"Since you're unwilling, you can go to hell!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold, and he fired out without mercy, his bullets entering the foreheads of the Vulture Tribe members, turning them into corpses.

Xi Xiang Sheng's eyes turned red as he roared, "Kill!! Everyone! Kill him!! Only then we can live!!"

The 20 beast-like Vulture Tribe members roared and charged at him.

Yue Zhong watched them coldly, keeping the rifle in his storage ring. He pulled out his Black Tooth Blade, swinging forcefully. The warriors charging at him were immediately sliced up.

The 5m-region around Yue Zhong seemed to turn into a meat grinder, as long as anybody entered, they would be turned into meat and blood.

When the Vulture Tribe warriors saw this, they still charged forth with frenzy and savageness.

In a breath, all the Vulture Tribe members, including Xi Xiang Sheng, were turned into corpses.

Yue Zhong eyed the corpses, thinking, "These Vulture Tribe people are truly fierce!"

An ordinary troop would have long since collapsed when facing pressure from Yue Zhong. They might have surrendered or fled. However, these Vulture Tribe warriors actually fought till the end, even when they knew they were not his match. Such enemies were rare.

Shao Sheng came out from the captives and thanked him

profusely, "Yue Zhong, thanks to you, we're saved. Let me represent the village to thank you."

Yue Zhong asked immediately, "Where's the base of the Vulture Tribe?"

Yue Zhong did not intend to hole himself up to enjoy himself. Right now, he needed to get in contact with all the human powers. Shao Sheng did not prove to be of much value, hence, Yue Zhong did not want to stay in this village for long.

Shao Sheng replied, "The Vulture Tribe is one of the largest forces of this Bandit Dragon Mountains. Their exact location is unknown. Our Shao Village has only kept to ourselves around these parts. The Vulture Tribe's existence was made known to us by a few warriors that joined us. I only know they are somewhere roughly west of us."

Shao Sheng tried his luck, "Yue Zhong, why don't you stay in our village? If you stay, you're the strongest warrior, all the prettiest women can be yours!"

Yue Zhong's display of might had been shocking, every woman looked at him with wonder and amazement.

Even Shao Yun had fallen silent. He was clear now that he was never a match for Yue Zhong. If Yue Zhong stayed, their Shao Village could possibly expand to become a powerful faction. Under such circumstances, he did not stand out to object.

Yue Zhong rejected, "Not interested."

Seeing Yue Zhong reject, Shao Sheng was disappointed, but at the same time, he sighed with relief. He had been used to his authority as chief and did not wish for someone to be higher in position.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong packed up and brought Shao Hua, Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong out.

At the village entrance, an unexpected person was waiting. It was

Shao Yun!

When he saw Yue Zhong approach, Shao Yun's eyes lit up as he hurried over, "Yue Zhong, let me follow you as your subordinate."

Yue Zhong was taken aback, "Why? I thought you disliked me?"

Shao Yun gripped his spear tightly and spoke straightforwardly, "That's right! I did hate you because I thought I was stronger, and a beautiful woman like Han Qiong should not follow you. I was unconvinced! However, I know better now, you're strong. Stronger than anyone I've seen. I hope to learn from you and build something by your side, not stuck in the village, living like a brute all my life."

Yue Zhong then asked, "What about your women?"

Shao Yun replied with a carefree ease, "I've handed them to my friends and brothers, they will take good care of them."

Seeing how nonchalant he was with his women, Sun Lan Lan and Han Qiong shot him disproving looks of contempt.

Only Shao Hua was unaffected, in this world, the men hunted, their death rates were high. Once they died, for the sake of survival, their women would automatically move on to another man. It was normal for Shao Yun to give his women away.

Yue Zhong's tone then turned frosty, "Sure! You may follow me, but let me make this clear. You have to obey my every command. If you don't, don't blame me for being merciless! It's not too late for you to back out now."

Shao Yun felt his heart turn cold, but he did not back down, instead, replying, "Ok! I understand!"

With that, he joined Yue Zhong's group, and they made their way westward.

As their group came to a part of the forest about 7 or 8 km away, there were the sounds of slaughter that rang out.

Chapter 793: The Sun Alliance!

"Let's go take a look!"

When Yue Zhong heard that voice, he made his way towards the source of commotion swiftly.

Soon, they arrived at the location, noticing that out in a plain, there were a number of men dressed in leather clothing wielding spears surrounding a village.

The size of the village was more than twice that of Shao Village. Also, they had wooden fences and basic constructions, the people within the village made use of these structures to defend themselves. The battle was thus much fiercer.

The leader of the men in leather clothing eyed the village that did not seem to give in and waved his hands with a frown. Another dozen warriors behind him came charging forth, each of them 2m in height, wielding large beast bones.

Seeing their appearance, the village immediately panicked. One man hollered loudly as 6 archers came forward and fired arrows at those warriors.

When the arrows fell upon those warriors, they just bounced off the Mutant Beast hides they were donning, not harming them in the slightest.

These warriors were like tanks that basically bulldozed through the relentless attacks on them, slamming into the wooden fences.

Under the relentless assault, the gates of the village were finally destroyed by the brute force of the warriors.

As the gates came crashing down, the warriors outside invading roared out and charged into the village like hungry wolves.

Very soon, there were the pitiful sounds of wailing, excited panting and heavy breathing from the village. In this sort of world

where law and society were non-existent, once a village fell to attacks, the people would be killed, robbed, or pillaged. Such things were already unavoidable on earth, not to mention such a planet where civilization was still backward.

Han Qiong caught sight of a girl being dragged out as 7 or 8 men surrounded her. She could not help standing by not doing anything and shouted, "Stop!!"

One of them, who was decked in a tiger hide, swiveled round and caught sight of Yue Zhong's group.

He coldly ordered, "Go kill those 2, and bring those 3 women here."

The 8 elite warriors beside him charged forth with their long spears, their speed 8 times that of a normal person.

Yue Zhong eyed them coldly and walked forward with an impassive expression.

3 of the warriors had just reached Yue Zhong when a blade flashed past. Before they could even react, they were already sliced into multiple pieces, blood spraying everywhere.

Seeing such a horrifying scene, shock was written on the faces of the 5 other soldiers. They faltered and retreated subconsciously, trembling under the display of might. It was the first time that they had seen such a powerful expert.

From this, one could tell the difference between these warriors and those from the Vulture Tribe. As elite soldiers, they were actually hampered by their fear, whereas the Vulture Tribe would continue to attack even in the face of death.

The man in the tiger hide also had a pale expression as he retreated a few steps.

Yue Zhong swept a cold gaze and barked, "Kneel and surrender, or die!!"

One of the warriors suddenly waved his hands, sending a flying dagger towards Yue Zhong.

Peng!

The moment he moved, his head exploded like a watermelon, his headless corpse crumpling to the ground.

Seeing this, the rest of the warriors felt a chill in their hearts.

The man in tiger hide barked, "Go grab those 3 women!!"

The 20 elite soldiers waiting behind immediately got into action, charging towards Han Qiong and the other 2 girls.

Shao Yun's body went tense when he saw the approaching enemies, his hands gripping his spear tightly. Every one of the warriors did not lose out to him in strength, facing all 20 of them at one go was too much of a stretch.

Yue Zhong shot them a glance and flipped his hands, an assault rifle appearing. He then fired wildly into the group of warriors.

They had not even gone past a few steps when each of their foreheads had a new bullet hole, as they crumpled to the ground.

"Ah!!"

Seeing his fallen comrades, one elite could not take it anymore and fled, few could withstand the threat of death.

He had just run a few meters when he also fell down, a bullet hole at the back of his head.

The rest of the warriors froze, eyeing the assault rifle in Yue Zhong's hand with fear and shock.

Yue Zhong shot one of them a look, and that warrior's legs instantly went weak as he kneeled down, screaming in fear, "I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

"I submit!!"

With one taking the lead, the rest followed suit quickly.

The man in tiger hide suppressed his fear as Yue Zhong walked over, and he stammered, "I'm Huangpu Liehuo. This brother, If you have set your sights on this village, I will take my men away immediately. This time, we've offended you. I apologize deeply. Let me present something as a token of my sincerity."

Yue Zhong replied coldly, "Surrender, or death! Choose!"

Huangpu Liehuo crumpled to the floor, calling out solemnly, "I surrender!! Spare my life!!"

Yue Zhong shot him a cold look and ordered, "Go gather your men. Stop whatever shit they were engaging in and round up all the villagers as well."

"Yes!"

Huangpu Liehuo heaved a sigh of relief in his heart, before rushing towards the village. Under his barking of orders, all the soldiers who were engaging in their pleasure gathered disgruntledly. The various men and women of the village were also chased out, looking over in fear and uncertainty.

With over 100 of his subordinates gathered, Huangpu Liehuo felt his mind settle, and he started to harbor some thoughts again. He looked towards Yue Zhong, only to discover Yue Zhong staring at him with a smile that did not seem to be a smile. His heart sank, and his ambitious thoughts were dispelled. He came up and reported obediently, "Leader, our Crazy Wolf Troop are all gathered."

Yue Zhong pointed to one burly man whose body was covered in wounds and scars, saying solemnly, "Come over."

The man eyed Yue Zhong before walking over quietly.

Yue Zhong asked, "What's your name?"

He replied, "Ximen Hui!"

"Work for me, or live a life as a slave with no dignity."

Ximen Hui struggled, before saying respectfully, "I'm willing to work for you, Sir!"

Although he was unwilling, he chose to submit. Yue Zhong then quickly reorganized this ragtag group.

From the Crazy Wolf Troops as well as the able-bodied men of the village, Yue Zhong pulled out 50 of the young men to be under Shao Yun's lead. He then gathered the strongest fighters and organized them to be a group that he commanded personally. Huangpu Liehuo and Ximen Hui were the respective vice-commanders of those 2 groups as well.

With such an arrangement, the warriors of the Crazy Wolf Troop and Ximen Villag were just engaged in slaughter but forced to mix together. Although there was still hatred, under Yue Zhong's stifling aura, they obediently followed his orders.

Huangpu Liehuo, how much do you know about the Vulture Tribe?"

After consolidating the 2 forces, Yue Zhong directly called for a meeting and fired this question.

Huangpu Liehuo's Crazy Wolf Troop was actually a vagabond bandit group. They had no fixed campsite, and tend to travel around. They hunted smaller animals, and when they came across a good opportunity to ransack a village, they would do so, selling their slaves to other villages. Due to their vagrant nature, they were in a position to gather intelligence.

He quickly answered, "The Vulture Tribe is the strongest village out here, and is one of the Sun Alliance's forces. This force has over a thousand people, each and every one of them fierce and savage. They're a force not to be messed with."

Yue Zhong continued to ask curiously, "Sun Alliance? What kind of a group is that?"

Huangpu Liehuo's eyes narrowed, "They are one of the 3 major

players in the entire Green Region. There are a hundred members of the alliance, each one of them a powerful force like the Vulture Tribe. The leader of the Sun Alliance is even rumored to be a Type 4 Divine Warrior from the legends, his name is Takehito Shinya. He, together with the Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing of the Storm Valley, T-Rex King Zheng Zhen, and Pterosaur King Dao Ge are known as the Green Region 4 Greats."

A Type 4 Divine Warrior exceeded the human limit and were known as peak experts. In this third world, the number of Type 4 Divine Warriors could be counted with fingers. Otherwise, there would not be only 6 Type 4 Divine Warriors sealed in Temron.

Yue Zhong continued solemnly, "Sun Alliance eh? I want to see just how powerful these humans are."

Chapter 794: Storming the Vulture Tribe!

The Vulture Tribe was located in a valley with mountains on 3 sides, leaving only one point of entry. The singular direction was further fortified by a huge boulder formation as a city wall, with plenty of soldiers standing guard.

Huangpu Liehuo was currently lying prone in a forest, eyeing the city wall that was dozens of meters tall. He could not help but ask Yue Zhong meekly, "This is the headquarters of the Vulture Tribe, Leader, are we really going to do this? Aren't we short on manpower?"

Inside the forest, there were a hundred other warriors. These were the subordinates Yue Zhong had just brought under his wing, and as they looked at the city wall, their hearts turned cold. They had just submitted to Yue Zhong, not knowing him well enough. They did not know how they were going to get past the wall.

"No! We have enough! Your task is to stand guard here, and not let anyone escape. Wait for my order to go in and claim everything. I'll go destroy their defenses."

After leaving this sentence, he sauntered towards the base himself. Since having absolute strength, he preferred using his might to demolish those in his way.

Huangpu Liehuo looked at Yue Zhong leaving his shock, "He's really going in!!"

At the same time, his eyes flashed with a strange glint. Now that Yue Zhong was gone, it was the best time for him to flee.

Yue Zhong had just swallowed up the Crazy Wolf Troop and the Ximen Village, the sentiments of the subordinates had not calmed down yet. If Huangpu Liehuo left now, he could bring half of his troop away safely.

The moment he had that thought, he looked towards Shao Hua,

Han Qiong, and Sun Lan Lan, only to discover a cloaked figure beside them. His heart turned cold. When that person appeared, how he appeared, Huangpu Liehuo did not know, but he could tell that he was extremely dangerous. He instinctively felt that should he make a wrong move, that cloaked figure would kill him instantly.

Ximen Hui was on the ground and he watched Yue Zhong walk over towards the Vulture Tribe with a bated breath.

"Who goes there?!"

The sentries on top of the wall had decent eyesight, locating Yue Zhong from afar, and barked out loud.

Yue Zhong eyed them and drawled, "I'm Yue Zhong, get your leader Muto Genji out to see me."

The sentry who shouted became furious, "Audacious! Our leader is not someone the likes of you can get to see. Since you dare to offend him, you shall leave your life behind to atone for your sin! Fire the arrows!"

The soldiers swiftly aimed and fired, as dozens of arrows shot towards Yue Zhong.

The soldiers of the Vulture Tribe had 8 times the attributes of normal people and were used to hunting humans and wild beasts. Their archery was extremely efficient, and their arrows could find their targets with no problems.

Yue Zhong eyed the arrows casually and took a side step, causing the arrows to strike the ground.

"It seems like words don't work and since you guys dare to act, you can all die!"

He pulled out his Dark Tooth Blade and with a flash, he leaped up the wall of over a dozen meters. He swung out and one of the soldiers was sliced into a pile of meat.

Huangpu Liehuo watched this with shock, "F**king strong!"

Ximen Hui had the same thoughts, "This man is truly fearsome!"

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

Within the Vulture Tribe base, the sounds of alarms quickly went off and the soldiers quickly charged out from their rooms with their weapons.

From a lavish building at the center of the tribe, a 2m-tall man with bald head and naked upper torso sat on a piece of tiger hide, a dozen women by his side. His brows furrowed when he heard the shouts and alarms, and kicked a woman aside, before grabbing a huge blade and storming out.

A scrawny but beautiful man came scurrying towards him, crying out, "Your Highness, Your Highness!! That man is killing his way in!! He has already barged into the city, please act now, Your Highness, and kill that man!"

Muto Genji grabbed the scrawny man and barked, "Oni Meichi! Say it one more time?! It's only a single man?!"

Oni Meichi became dazed as his body started to tremble, "Yes!! He's only one person! He's only one person!! Dead! They're all dead!! Those soldiers that tried to stop him are dead!! He's a ghost!! He's a ghost!! Help!! Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!!"

"Trash!! Go to hell!!" Muto Genji flared upon seeing such a pathetic scene and flung Oni Meichi to a side. The unfortunate man slammed into a wall, turning into a lump of flesh and blood under the immense force.

When the dozens of beauties saw this, their eyes flashed with fear, not daring to say anything.

Muto Genji was a vicious and cruel man, everyone knew this. Every day, there would be a woman who would die under his torment. However, no one dared to retaliate, because the consequences would be dire.

Having killed Oni Meichi in a single throw, Muto Genji grabbed his blade and went out.

The moment he left the hut, Muto Genji caught sight of Yue Zhong grabbing a warrior of the Vulture Tribe walking towards him.

The various other warriors were all standing one side, watching in fear.

"Go to hell!!"

All of a sudden, 3 warriors charged out from the crowd. The moment they got close to Yue Zhong, a cold blade flashed, and their bodies immediately burst apart in a shower of blood and flesh.

"Shit! He's strong!" When he saw this, Muto Genji's gaze narrowed, his heart becoming more alert. Now he knew where there were so many of his warriors standing by, but no one dared to charge up.

Muto Genji roared out in anger, "What the f**k are you all doing? Are you still Vulture Tribe warriors? He's only a single person and you are all so scared? Charge!! Get up there and kill him!! Otherwise, I won't show any of you cowards mercy!!"

"Kill!"

"For His Highness!"

"Kill!!"

"..."

The moment Muto Genji's voice rang out, all the soldiers burst forth with a savage glint in their eyes, roaring as they charged at Yue Zhong.

However, the difference in strength was too vast, once they got within 5 meters of Yue Zhong, they would be sliced and diced.

Within moments, dozens of Vulture Tribe members had already

turned into corpses, but no one had yet reached Yue Zhong. Under such circumstances, the wills of the Vulture Tribe warriors crumbled, their eyes flashing with despair. Had Muto Genji not been out to hold the fort, they would have long since collapsed and kneel to surrender.

Yue Zhong shot Muto Genji a cold look and spoke indifferently, "You must be Muto Genji? Kneel and surrender, or die!"

Muto Genji pulled out the curved blade that he used often, made out of a Type 3 Mutant Beast claw, and retorted, "Who are you? This seat is the leader of the Vulture Tribe and a member of the Sun Alliance, Muto Genji! Going against me means going against the Sun Alliance!! Even if you are strong, you can't possibly contend with the Sun Alliance!"

"Your bullshit is rampant! Just die!"

Yue Zhong's brows arched as he shot forwards like an arrow, his Black Tooth Blade swinging out in a beautiful curve towards Muto Genji's head.

Muto Genji felt an intense danger enveloping him and his body went tense, all his muscles tightening. His speed reached the maximum that he could and he brought up his curved blade in haste.

The cold light of the blade flashed, and when Muto Genji's blade had just arrived above his head, his body had split apart in the center, both halves flying opposite each other.

When the Vulture Tribe warriors saw their god-like existence Muto Genji being cleaved in half, their hearts crumbled, everyone not believing what they saw.

Yue Zhong then turned to eye the 200-plus members and coldly ordered, "Kneel to surrender, or die!"

"I surrender!!"

"I surrender!!"

"..."

Like a chain reaction, those Vulture Tribe warriors who had sworn never to submit to the enemy before going down on their knees.

Yue Zhong then waved his hands, sending a signal flare into the skies.

Outside, Huangpu Liehuo saw the flare and his eyes widened in disbelief, standing up in a swift motion, "He succeeded!! He actually conquered the Vulture Tribe!!"

Ximen Hui also muttered in disbelief, "He actually succeeded! A single person attacking the Vulture Tribe!! Fearsome!!"

Seeing the flare, Huangpu Liehuo quickly brought the men and charged into the Vulture Tribe base.

Inside, there were members of the Vulture Tribe kneeling with their hands on their head, as well as the other subordinates curled up in fright. When they saw the group of strangers coming into the base, their faces turned to one of apprehension, not knowing what was to become of them.

Chapter 795: Han Qiong's Transformation!

Huangpu Liehuo, Ximen Hui, and Shao Yun quickly led their men to gain control of the entire valley.

Yue Zhong observed carefully, noticing that the entire space of the valley was about 900 square meters, with mountains on 3 sides. There was a clear river flowing through the camp, and fertile soil aplenty.

Over a thousand male servants were set to work in the fields, growing a variety of crops. Even though there was such a huge commotion outside, they were numb to it, instead, they continued to tend to the fields.

The struggles of this world were extremely cruel. Most victors would not even spare the slaves. Thus, to these slaves, their future was bleak.

Even when Yue Zhong walked past them, they only eyed him with either blank or frightened stares, not knowing how their future would pan out.

Yue Zhong looked at them, these slaves that had been tortured and starved, leaving only skin and bones. He kept quiet, turning around back to the center of the base.

When he returned, he noticed a dozen of warriors of the Ximen Village being bested by a warrior of the Vulture Tribe. They continued to charge up at him, but no one was a match for him.

More soldiers were rushing over.

Yue Zhong immediately barked out, "Stop!"

"Leader!"

Seeing Yue Zhong appear, all the soldiers immediately stopped, their postures and gazes filled with respect.

The Vulture Tribe soldier's face turned pale, but he stood still

and looked straight at him, while his body trembled uncontrollably, evident of his fear towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong asked, "What happened?"

One Ximen Village soldiers quickly reported, "Leader! This Vulture Tribe member suddenly lost his cool and injured dozens of our brothers."

Yue Zhong looked at the Vulture Tribe warrior.

The soldier stood straight and immediately spoke loudly, "Leader Yue Zhong! Earlier, you told us, as long as our Vulture Tribe members surrendered, we would be treated fairly. Some of these guys suddenly started to rape some of our women. We had already surrendered, yet that person raped a woman in front of us. I could not take it anymore that was why I went to beat him up. Your strength is absolute here, and I'm not your match. If you want to kill me, just say the word, and I will kill myself. However, I hope that you can remember your promise!!"

Yue Zhong swept a glance towards the Ximen Village warriors and asked coldly, "Is what he said true?"

Under that piercing gaze, the soldiers of Ximen Village lowered their heads.

One of them was about to deny it when Yue Zhong's cold voice sounded, "I will get to the bottom of this, if anyone dares to hide the truth, then they will be treated the same as those that raped, beheading as a punishment!"

Upon hearing that, the warriors of the Ximen Village turned pale, their mouths twitching, turning quiet.

The soldier who had raped a woman from the Vulture Tribe turned pale and he immediately got down on his knees in front of Yue Zhong, "Leader, it was my fault! It was my fault! Don't kill me, please! On account that I'm your subordinate, please give me a chance, don't kill me!!"

Yue Zhong shot him a cold look, and barked, "What were my orders before, say it!"

The soldier turned pale, "After entering the camp, those who slaughter innocent parties will be executed! Those who rape women will be executed! Those who pillage or steal will be executed!"

Yue Zhong continued coldly, "Since you've heard my military order, you still went ahead and disobeyed, you sure got guts!"

The soldier felt cold sweat down his spine as he continued to kowtow out of fear.

Yue Zhong looked at the Vulture Tribe warrior, "What's your name?"

The soldier replied, "I'm called Ma Lei!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Not bad! I admire your personality, how about being my direct subordinate?"

Ma Lei immediately got down on a single knee, exclaiming brightly, "I'm willing to serve Leader!!"

The Vulture Tribe had already been vanquished, Ma Lei had no icon to be loyal to. Yue Zhong's strength had also amazed him. Being able to serve someone like this, he was obviously elated.

As for Yue Zhong, he needed someone like Ma Lei in his troop. With such a righteous person within his new organization, it would help the expansion in the long run.

Yue Zhong then looked coldly at the Ximen Village warrior, "Drag him to the square and behead him in full view of the public. Announce the consequences of going against my orders!! Those who dare defy orders will be beheaded!"

"Yes! Leader!"

Ma Lei responded with respect, before bringing the offending soldier towards the distance.

Very soon, the soldier was executed in front of everyone. His death caused a ripple among the Vulture Tribe soldiers as well as those who were still wavering. The cold, bloody truth of the matter was that it was imperative that they followed Yue Zhong's orders.

Having settled this issue, Yue Zhong came to the lavish house of the late Muto Genji.

"Greetings Master!"

A number of women were kneeling on the ground in two neat rows, welcoming their new master. These beauties were just toys and trophies for the strong, in order to live a decent life, they had to gain the favor of their new master, otherwise, their fate would be miserable.

Right at this time, Han Qiong's flustered screams came ringing, "Qi Qi!! How did you become like this?! Qi Qi!!"

Yue Zhong followed the sounds and appeared beside Han Qiong.

In front of her, there was a naked, young woman, whose legs and hands had been chopped off. Han Qiong was crying uncontrollably and trembling as she held her in her arms.

Sun Lan Lan was also standing by the side, her body trembling with fury and fear at the same time.

Inside that room, there were many beautiful young women who had their arms and legs removed. They were all placed like trophies within the room, their eyes filled with despair or numbness.

Qi Qi seemed to stir as she screamed out, "Qiong Qiong! Is that you?! I regret it so much!! I regret it so much!! My hands and legs were chopped off by Master!! I'm sorry Master!! I will be obedient!! I will listen to you, please don't chop my hands off, don't chop my hands off!!"

Han Qiong screamed with rage as she held the smelly Qi Qi in her

arms, "SCUM!! BASTARD SCUM!!! BEAST!!!"

Enough could be said about those foreign species like the Dino-people, but Han Qiong had never expected a human to be so sick towards his own kind. She was filled with an intense fury and killing intent towards Muto Genji.

Sun Lan Lan stared at the limbless Qi Qi, celebrating inwardly, "Thankfully I followed Yue Zhong, if I were to become like this, I'd rather die!"

The crippled Qi Qi regained her clarity, as she saw her good friend hugging her, and she sobbed, "Qiong Qiong, I regret it so much! I should have followed you guys! I want to dance!!! I can't dance anymore!!! Wuwu!!!"

At that time, of the surviving members of the girl group, 2 had chosen to flee into the forest, one of them was Qi Qi who had her limbs chopped off and turned into a decorative ornament.

Han Qiong hugged Qi Qi and asked, "Where's An An? Where is she now?"

Qi Qi revealed a frightened look, muttering in a half-sane state, "An An? An An is already dead. She angered Master and was eaten by her. No! Master! No! I didn't say anything!! I will be good! I will be a bucket!! I will be good! I will listen!!"

Yue Zhong sighed when he watched this and turned to leave this revolting room, "Those with no power, truly lead a harsh life in this cruel world!"

Sun Lan Lan also could not stand it anymore and followed behind. Only by following Yue Zhong could she feel safe. Seeing the plight of those in the room, she was truly at a loss in this cruel world.

"Lan Ling greets Master!"

Yue Zhong had just entered the living room, when a woman of about 1.62m, her skin as fair as snow, with a lush head of hair

stepped forward. She was dressed in a plain white dress, her demeanor pure and charming. She greeted Yue Zhong, flanked by 4 other girls.

"What a beautiful girl!!" Sun Lan Lan was stunned by the sudden appearance of this beauty, and her eyes flashed with envy. Although she knew she was a cute and pretty girl herself, compared to this beauty in front of her, other than her impressive bust size, she felt inferior in all aspects.

Yue Zhong was also taken aback slightly. Lan Ling was on par with Qi Qing'er, such a beauty, he rarely came across.

"Get up!"

"Yes!"

Hearing his words, Lan Ling stood up and assessed this master of hers.

Right at this time, Han Qiong came out from the room of horrors, her eyes red. She came up to Yue Zhong and stared straight at him, "Yue Zhong, I want to gain strength. I want to become stronger, becoming a proper expert. Please help me. I'm willing to exchange everything of mine in order to gain the strength you can provide. I know you have it. Please don't reject me."

Yue Zhong eyed her, frowning slightly, "Have you thought it through? Even if you don't have the strength, as friends, I can still guarantee your safety somewhat. As long as I'm not dead, I can help you lead a safe life."

"I know!" Han Qiong's expression was resolute, as she bowed deeply, "But I know that even if I were to live safely under your protection, I will never be happy. I want to protect those I love, I want to stop these cruel violence. Without power, I cannot do any of those. In this short period of time, I have realized how powerless I am. I need strength. Please grant that to me, please!!"

Chapter 796: Explosive Potential!

Yue Zhong flipped his hands, as an Evolving Liquid appeared in his hands, "Alright! Since you've made up your mind, take this. After running a fever for one night, you'll gain the strength you're seeking. However, you will be deployed on the battlefield. If you're ok with that, show me your resolve."

Han Qiong grabbed the liquid, bowing to Yue Zhong, before leaving, "Yes!"

Lan Ling, Sun Lan Lan and the rest of the ladies looked at Han Qiong with envy, a hint of desire in their eyes.

After consuming the concoction, Han Qiong's potential exploded out, awakening as a Strength and Agility dual-attribute Evolver. At the same time, she learned the Second Order Divine Speed skill, becoming a powerful expert.

Yue Zhong then busied himself in the following days by granting Ma Lei and Han Qiong authority and responsibilities, leading 2 troops of the 200 elite Vulture Tribe warriors. At the same time, he pulled out another 500 warriors into his direct supervision.

There were over a thousand elite warriors and 4,000 ordinary warriors of the Vulture Tribe. As for the slaves, there were about 10,000 of men and women together.

At the same time, there were enough rations stored to feed 50,000 people for an entire year. Hence, there was no issue with food for the time being.

Yue Zhong did not kill the slaves, instead, he presented a chance for them to regain their freedom. He expanded his source of recruitment to them, as long as these slaves gained enough contributions, they would become true soldiers.

When these slaves who were originally in despair saw this chance, everyone became excited, stepping up to register. At the

end, Yue Zhong had managed to recruit another 1,000 able-bodied men among the slaves, while 3 women became medics.

As he was establishing some form of governance, Yue Zhong discovered a talent, and that was the seemingly-harmless, with no brains but boobs, and had been a burden most of the journey, Sun Lan Lan.

Her family had been in politics, and her parents and elder brother were government officials. She had been raised and nurtured as a politician as well. While she might not be comparable to those who were working in government, in this backward civilization, her upbringing gave her an edge over the rest, other than Yue Zhong, no one could compare to her.

Since he discovered her talent in this area, after setting up a cabinet, he threw all matters of governance to her.

Through the various challenges and combat, Yue Zhong might not be strong in the governance and political field as compared to professionals, but his experience set him ahead of Sun Lan Lan. However, he was still best at combat, thus, he would rather her handle such matters.

If Yue Zhong decided to take everything into his own hands, then just the system within the Vulture Tribe would cripple his plans.

After shuffling and shaking them up, Yue Zhong quickly gathered the troops to launch an assault towards the surrounding members of the Sun Alliance.

The Raptor Tribe was one of the members of the Sun Alliance closest to the Vulture Tribe, with over 600 elite soldiers, 2,000 ordinary villagers, 6,000 slaves, and was considered one of the tyrants of the area. The leader Qian Long was a Type 3 Divine Warrior, with a Type 3 Velociraptor as a steed, even Muto Genji would be wary of his strength.

Right as Qian Long was drinking with a few of his trusted aides

inside a stone hut, the splitting sounds of alarms rang out through the camp.

One soldier came running hastily in, exclaiming in panic, "Leader!! Things are bad!! There's an enemy!! Enemies are attacking!!"

Qian Long frowned and barked, "What are you panicking about!! Speak slowly! How many of them are there?"

The soldier responded in fear, "One!! Just one!! He has already destroyed the gate and stormed into our camp!! Over 30 of our velociraptor troops have been killed!"

The Velociraptor Troop consisted of the elite soldiers of the Velociraptor tribe, every warrior possessing the strength of a Type 2 Divine Warrior. The moment they heard that 30 of these elite soldiers had been killed, those in the banquet turned pale.

Qian Long grabbed his curved blade, his eyes flashing fiercely, "Prepare for battle! Let's go and claim the life of this bastard!"

The rest of the warriors immediately made to grab their weapons.

"There's no need, I'm already here!"

The voice had just resounded out, and Yue Zhong had already stepped into the house, his hand wielding his Black Tooth Blade.

Qian Long swiveled to see Yue Zhong, his pupils narrowing, "Who are you?!"

Yue Zhong eyed him coldly and spoke icily, "I'm Yue Zhong, the man who has attacked your Velociraptor Tribe. You have 2 choices, kneel and surrender, or die!"

One lady who was standing nearby had a lost expression when suddenly, her gaze turned savage as she pulled out a dagger and thrust towards Yue Zhong's heart viciously.

Yue Zhong did not even glance at the woman, slashing out with

his Black Tooth Blade, and her head soared through the air. Her headless corpse stumbled forwards before crumpling to the ground, blood spraying everywhere.

Yue Zhong's strike was swift and clean, causing everyone's expression to turn ugly.

The pretty woman was the famed Black Widow among the Velociraptor Tribe, with a peak Type 2 Divine Warrior's strength. She had even killed 2 Type 3 Divine Warriors before. Such an expert was casually slaughtered by this Yue Zhong, causing them to feel like a bucket of ice water had been poured over them. If they were to charge up, they would not fare any better.

Qian Long's pupils narrowed as he asked, "You're a Type 4 Divine Warrior?"

Yue Zhong shot him a condescending look and asked, "That's right! Surrender, or death?"

Qian Long knelt and spoke bitterly, "I surrender! A Type 4 Divine Warrior is not someone we can resist. We seek your grace and mercy! I'm willing to hand over the entire Velociraptor Tribe to you, sir!"

Type 4 Divine Warriors were existences that surpassed the limits of humans. Many of them could use their flesh bodies to destroy machines and with enough time, a single one could wipe out the entire Velociraptor Tribe.

Even an initial Type 4 Divine Warrior required at least 10 Type 3 Divine Warriors with exceptional physique or abilities to take on. Among the entire Velociraptor Tribe, only Qian Long was someone like that. In addition to his Type 3 Velociraptor, it was still not enough to face Yue Zhong.

In order to contend against one, such a tribe would have to rely on technologically advanced weapons. However, in such a backward civilization, it was obviously impossible.

When Qian Long surrendered, the entire Velociraptor Tribe fell into Yue Zhong's hands easily.

When Yue Zhong conquered the tribe, he quickly deployed people to transport the resources and captives over to the valley of the Vulture Tribe, while he continued his assault on the surrounding tribes.

Han Qiong, Shao Yun, Huangpu Liehuo, Ximen Hui and Ma Lei would wait for Yue Zhong to slaughter the leaders of these tribes, or convince them to surrender through force, before leading their subordinates in to clean up and maintain order, while transporting the humans and resources over to the valley.

With such an aggressive approach, the number of people in Vulture Tribe valley soon grew explosively, reaching over 50,000 in half a month's time.

The rest of the members of the Sun Alliance were swept clean, they either surrendered or were wiped out entirely.

After reaching a population of 50,000, Yue Zhong stopped his expansion activities and began the intensive training of his troops while consolidating his government.

The troops were messy, with slaves numbering half of the total size. Those factions that he conquered formed the other half, where fishes and dragons mixed. The combat strength and loyalty was an issue.

If the forces were not trained properly, at signs of trouble, they would quickly crumble. Thus, Yue Zhong could only enforce training to raise their discipline and combat strength.

On the government's side, Sun Lan Lan had also crafted a system for the unwilling slaves, allowing them to hand in their workload in exchange for merit points. Once their points were sufficient, they could exchange them for their freedom.

The moment such an initiative was announced, the work ethics

and morale of the slaves rose greatly.

At the same time, their treatment became better, and their eyes were filled with hope once again.

Under such conditions, various structures and fortification were built quickly within Vulture Valley, causing some semblance of a city to appear.

With such measures, Yue Zhong gained the approval and support of many slaves. At the same time, the countless victories also caused his prestige to rise in the eyes of his subordinates.

The chaotic mixture of various tribe members among his soldiers also prevented anyone from having funny ideas. At least, before Yue Zhong fell, no one dared to raise any thoughts of rebellion, instead, following his orders obediently.

Yue Zhong knew that such a method would only cause some unhappiness and unwillingness to breed, but he could only make do for now.

Yue Zhong's actions over at the Vulture Tribe were too huge and earthshaking, soon, he received an invitation.

Chapter 797: Prehistoric Technology!

Gridwood Village was a small place about 20 kilometers away from the Velociraptor Valley.

The village was at an optimal location in terms of transportation, thus, it was an area often contested for.

At the entrance of the village, there was a banquet being held, as a handsome young man sat quietly and enjoyed his wine, accompanied by 2 rows of beauties.

Yue Zhong came out slowly from the forest, walking directly to a table and sat down.

The handsome man with a refined demeanor stood up and bowed to Yue Zhong, "You really came. Hi, I'm one of the sub-leaders of the Sun Alliance, Nishigakete. I'm pleased to finally meet you, Yue Zhong."

"What did you invite me here for?"

Nishigakete lifted his head and sat down, before smiling, "Yue Zhong, our Sun Alliance hopes that you can join us, and become part of us. With the strength of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, as long as you join us, you can definitely become the vice-chief! Power and women will be aplenty!"

The Sun Alliance had not yet acted because they wanted to test and investigate Yue Zhong's true might for themselves. After all, someone who was able to conquer so many factions in such a short time and raise a powerful faction of his own was definitely not some random riff-raff.

If Yue Zhong had not evolved to the peak of the Type 4 realm, he could not have subjugated over a thousand warriors with ease, forcing multiple factions to cohabit together.

Type 4 Divine Warriors were truly peak existences among the humans, even in this Third World where experts were aplenty.

The Sun Alliance had no choice but to tread carefully.

Yue Zhong shook his head, "I've no interest in joining your alliance. However, I'm very interested in whatever technology you might have. If you can provide me any, I will fork out an adequate payment."

On this planet, where there were countless forests, prehistoric animals, and Mutant Beasts, it is likely that the world had already undergone its apocalypse once. After that, humans had fallen off the food chain, and the Dino-people rose to dominance on land, while the Sea Clan rose to dominance in the sea, turning into 2 powers vying for control.

After the apocalypse, human civilization declined rapidly, and those without adequate education could not carry out even the simplest of maths. However, there were still those who possessed some technology of the world before the collapse of humanity, which had allowed them to stand on par with the Dino-people and Sea Clan as well.

Humans were weaker in terms of physique, without any advanced technology, they would have long since been eradicated.

On Earth, if it were not for the firearms and heavy weaponry, a single horde of a million zombies could have easily wiped out all human resistance.

The Dino-people was obviously a tad stronger than the Saint Clan, and since the humans of this world could resist them for so long, the technology they possessed must be extraordinary.

After defeating the Vulture Tribe, Ma Lei had already disclosed some information to Yue Zhong. That was the main reason why he was going around to conquer the factions.

It was a pity that such technology posed too much of a threat, hence, only the Sun Alliance was in possession of them.

Nishigakete's pupils contracted, but he still maintained a smile,

"Prehistoric technology eh! You sure know how to jest. Such valuable things, what would you use to exchange?"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "Type 4 Mutant Beast nuclei!"

"Type 4 Mutant Beast nuclei!" Nishigakete immediately sat up, obviously rocked by those words.

Mutant Beasts were stronger than humans of the same realm; if a Type 4 Mutant Beast were to clash with a Type 4 human, there was an 80% chance that the human would either die or be forced to flee. Only 20% of the time could a human successfully kill a Type 4 Mutant Beast.

In this world, the Type 4 Mutant Beasts were rampant, but few humans had Type 4 nuclei. Every single one of them was beyond precious, and the most important thing was that they were the energy source of the prehistoric technology.

Of the technology in this Third World, almost all required Mutant Beast nuclei to activate. A single Type 4 nucleus could support a powerful weapon.

Nishigakete forced a smile in the end and countered Yue Zhong's offer, "Yue Zhong, our Sun Alliance is willing to use 3 absolutely breathtaking beauties, 500 pretty virgins, and 20,000 slaves in exchange for that Type 4 nucleus, what do you think? I can guarantee you, those 3 beauties are all highly coveted after, more than 10 times as attractive as these women by my side right now. You'll definitely love them!!"

The death rate of males was high in this world, causing an imbalance in terms of gender. However, pretty women were still traded as commodities, and within the various factions, there were still plenty of lustful men. Furthermore, men were still largely in control, only a rare few factions were controlled by women.

Yue Zhong laughed indifferently and stood up to leave, "I'm not interested in those. Forget it, I think the Storm Valley might be

more interested in my Type 4 nucleus."

Nishikagete's face turned as he exclaimed, "Wait!! Yue Zhong, please give me a week. Let me go report this to the chief, I will definitely give you an answer in a week!! These women are a gift to you, every one of them has been trained. They're all virgins as well and can fulfill your every command. Hope you like them!"

Green Region's mightiest factions were the Sun Alliance, Storm Valley, and Pterosaur Mountain.

The 3 groups maintained a balance among each other, with Type 4 Divine Warriors in their ranks. At the same time, they also had their own weapons and technology. No single party dared to attack any other. If either the Storm Valley or Pterosaur Mountain were to gain the Type 4 Nucleus, then the balance would be destroyed.

Yue Zhong swept the ladies a glance and laughed, "Alright fine! Since this gift is decent, I'll give you 2 days to consider. During then, I will not go seek an audience with the other 2 factions."

Nishigakete struggled to maintain a smile, "Isn't 2 days a little too short? How about 3?"

Yue Zhong's face turned wooden and he retorted coldly, "If you're not willing, forget it!"

Nishigakete continued to smile and replied, "Alright, alright, 2 days it is. I hope we can become friends."

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong turned around and headed towards the forest. The ladies behind bowed once towards Nishigakete before following Yue Zhong.

Out here, where Mutant Beasts and Bugs were everywhere, if these ladies were caught by themselves, they would surely die. They had been trained to follow their master's wishes regardless of their personality, thus, they could only follow behind Yue Zhong.

After Yue Zhong left, the smiling Nishigakete turned sullen, and he entered the village, quickly getting on his Velociraptor and galloped towards the distance.

In the middle of a lush forest, there was a huge mountain range. At the corner, there was a small valley that was only accessible through a small tunnel.

This valley was 20 times larger than the area of the Vulture Tribe. A number of majestic stone structures stood tall, forming a vibrant city. At the same time, the architecture was exquisite and beautiful, obviously the handiwork of an expert. Even on Earth, it was hard to compare.

In the center of the city, the buildings were different; made out of white jade-like materials, giving an even more resplendent feel to it. This entire region formed the inner city.

Atop a platform in the palace, a man of about 2m in height, bulging muscles, and a crown on his head, sat on a huge golden throne. Below him, there were 2 rows of men in black uniform.

At that moment, Nishigakete was kneeling on the ground, reporting everything to the man seated on the throne. He was the chief of the Sun Alliance, Type 4 Divine Warrior Takahiko Shinya.

Takahiko Shinya mulled over the report for a while, before asking sternly, "Type 4 nuclei? How many does he have?"

Nishigakete replied respectfully, "Chief, he did not specify. However, based on your subject's conjecture, he should possess at least 5, otherwise, he would not propose such a trade. He's not someone stupid after all, and he should know the value of the Type 4 nuclei."

Type 4 Mutant Beasts had terrifying combat strength, with strange innate abilities and monstrous physiques. Even Type 5 Divine Warriors could not afford to underestimate them. If a Type 5 Divine Warrior were to be careless, he or she could even be

killed. This made the Type 4 Nuclei all the more valuable.

Takahiko Shinya's eyes glinted coldly as he ordered, "Good! Since he wants our technology, then let him experience the might of the technology. Kisame Shinji, go take a hundred Sun Warriors to go wipe this Yue Zhong out, and get that Type 4 Nucleus!"

A burly man with a few scars on his face stepped forward, getting on one knee and responded loudly, "Yes! Chief! I will make sure to get his head and present it to you!"

Chapter 798: Sun Warriors!

Vulture Valley.

Inside the forest, amidst silence, a hundred soldiers in white armor, wielding white battle spears were following the lead of a general in silver armor.

"Attack the city, get Yue Zhong's head, you'll be free to do whatever you want for a week!" The leader wearing the silver armor and holding a huge battle ax was Kisame Shinji, tasked by Takahiko Shinya for this mission. He pointed to the wall and barked out.

"Kill!!"

"Kill!"

"...."

Hearing his words, the 100 warriors immediately radiated a bloodthirsty aura, as they all got excited and charged down the hill, their fighting spirit pushed to the extreme.

The one-week free period meant that after they conquer the city, they could pillage and rape without any punishment. Such a reward was extremely effective in raising morale, causing them all to be extremely motivated.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

The moment the hundred spear-wielding warriors appeared, the soldiers patrolling on top the city wall discovered them and sounded the alarm.

8 warriors nocked their bows and fired down.

8 arrows shot out towards the white-armored warriors, appearing in front of them in an instant.

The 8 targeted soldiers thrust out with their spears, knocking the arrows away.

The arrows continued to rain down on the warriors below, but they were deflected easily.

In a few breaths, the warriors under the lead of Kisame Shinji had already reached the city wall.

He roared out loud, his voice traveling throughout the entire camp, "We are the Sun Warriors deployed here to arrest Yue Zhong! Those who belong to the Sun Alliance, as long as you return to us, we will forgo your past offenses. Those who dare to resist will be put to death immediately!!"

"It's the Sun Alliance!!"

"The Sun Warriors, they're the strongest warriors of the Sun Alliance!!"

"That's great!! The Sun Warriors are here!! Yue Zhong is doomed!!"

"...."

Hearing Kisame Shinji's voice, the many fellows with hidden agendas or dissatisfaction immediately rejoiced.

Qian Long pulled out his blade and killed a Ximen Village warrior, roaring loudly, "It's time to rebel!! Our Velociraptor Tribe will rebel!! All brothers!! Follow me!! Time to kill that bastard Yue Zhong!!"

"Rebel!! The Velociraptor Tribe has rebelled!"

"Our Ferocious Tiger Tribe is also rebelling!"

"..."

Following many enraged shouts, the various ambitious upstarts began to lead their troops and chaos broke out within the walls of the city.

Since Yue Zhong had forcefully conquered these tribes, and the time was too short for him to have made an impact on them, the moment the Sun Warriors appeared, these leaders jumped on the

opportunity to rebel.

The Sun Alliance had relied on this fact, that was why they decided to send a hundred of their elites to assault the city.

Yue Zhong watched this with a disdainful look, as he chuckled slightly, "Seems like I'm still unpopular. Ma Lei, aren't you going to lead the Vulture Tribe against me?"

Ma Lei bowed and spoke solemnly, "Leader, you must be joking. The Vulture Tribe is no more, Ma Lei is loyal only to you, and I'm willing to act on your behalf to quell the chaos."

Yue Zhong swept a glance towards the Sun Warriors that had barged into the city, grinning, "Sun Warriors, eh? Interesting!"

Yue Zhong was currently at the center of the Vulture Town, and many of the rebel troops gathered together with Kisame Shinji's troops, as they marched over.

Through this period of governance and victories, there were a number of warriors who decided to swear by him, and these people gathered behind him. Han Qiong led 300 slaves as well as the Vulture Tribe Warriors to stand beside Yue Zhong.

When they all saw Yue Zhong himself, some of the rebels could not help but falter and take a few steps back. They were once again reminded of what he had done the past few weeks, singlehandedly conquering tribes himself. They knew clearly his vicious and decisive methods. If it were not for the Sun Warriors' presence, they would not have dared to step out like so.

Yue Zhong swept his eyes across them and recognized 2, "Interesting! Huangpu Liehuo and Ximen Hui, I don't think I've treated you unfairly, why would you choose to betray me?"

They were his first few experts that he subjugated, and treated them with respect and gave them responsibilities. He had never expected them to rebel at such a crucial time.

Huangpu Liehuo retreated a few steps and laughed coldly, "Yue

Zhong, you might not have mistreated me, but forcefully conquering my Crazy Wolf Troops, I've always bore that hatred in mind! Compared to the Sun Alliance, you're just a mouse! Today's your death day!"

Ximen Hui's eyes flashed with a complicated glance, before sighing, "Yue Zhong, you might be strong. But compared to the Sun Alliance, you definitely can't win. I choose to stand on the victor's side."

Yue Zhong swept a glance across the rebels, before turning to his own side, and saw many familiar faces. Ma Lei of the Vulture Tribe, Han Qiong, 2 commanders he raised from the slaves, even Sun Lan Lan had led dozens of medics to stand behind him.

There were over a thousand who had chosen to rebel, and many of them were elite soldiers. On Yue Zhong's side, there were 3,000, however, their combat strength was lacking. This was because most of them had been slaves prior, and their physique and constitution required time to recover.

Yue Zhong looked at the rebels and declared cruelly, "Not bad! I still have some support at least. Not too bad. As for those idiots over there, since you guys have chosen to stand out, you can all die today."

When the rebels saw Yue Zhong smiling, their hearts ran cold. They could not help but turn their gazes towards the Sun Warriors.

Kisame Shinji stared at Yue Zhong and laughed coldly, "Yue Zhong! I'm Kisame Shinji from the Sun Alliance, you can choose to kneel and submit, otherwise, when I retrieve your head later, all your women and subordinates will be tortured to death!!"

"Sun Warriors, using the prehistoric technology to become the strongest warriors of the Sun Alliance. All who have been chosen are at least a Type 2 Divine Warrior. Your armor comes from the past era, and with its enhancement, even the weakest soldier

possesses a strength of a Type 3 Divine Warrior. Let me test just how strong you guys are then!"

With a cold laugh, Yue Zhong tapped his foot and disappeared, reappearing in front of one Sun Warrior, his fist smashing viciously into his chest. A terrifying force exploded out, causing the armor to sink in, while the soldier was sent blasting towards a wall. He spat out a mouthful of blood, crumpling to the floor while taking ragged breaths.

Yue Zhong stared at the soldier in delight, "Impressive! This Sun Armor is truly impressive!!"

Although Yue Zhong's strength could not compare to those Type 4 Strength-based races, he was still a force to behold. His fist had not been enhanced by his Dark Dou Qi, but smashing into a Type 3 Divine Warrior could definitely kill him.

However, this Sun Armor had actually negated part of his force, under its protection, the Type 2 Sun Warrior did not die, in fact, the armor did not seem damaged, displaying its powerful defensive ability.

"Everybody! Kill him!! Those who managed to get his head will be promoted 3 ranks, and given a virgin, as well as 50 beauties!!"

Kisame Shinji's body lit up with runes, and a number of air ripples appeared beneath his feet. His speed was pushed to the middle limits of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, as he swung his huge battleax towards Yue Zhong at the speed of sound.

The armors of the other 99 Sun Warriors also started glowing, through the Type 3 nuclei, and enhanced by the armor, their combat strength was enhanced to the peak of a Type 3 Divine Warrior. They all charged right at Yue Zhong.

With a Mid-level Type 4 Divine Warrior and 99 Type 3 Divine Warriors acting, even if Yue Zhong was at the peak of the Type 4 realm, he had to devote 120% to the fight, otherwise, he might

perish.

Qian Long's eyes flashed with a savage glint, "Attack!! Let's go kill those lowly slaves!!"

Huangpu Liehuo eyed Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan, pointing at them and roaring, "Capture those 2, as long as we get them, Yue Zhong can't flee!!"

Ximen Hui's eyes turned red as he shouted, "Kill!! Kill!! Kill!! Yue Zhong had already set his mind on killing us!! The only way to survive is to kill him!!"

Under the various shouts and roars, the maddened rebels began to launch their assault.

Chapter 799: Silencing Kisame Shinji!

Seeing the wildness of the rebels, a number of Yue Zhong's supporters felt threatened and began to flee. After all, many of them had been slaves, their combat strength and will could not compare to these rebels.

Yue Zhong waved his hands and slammed a Sun Warrior backward, roaring in a low voice, "Kill these rebels! Bolius!"

The ever-silent puppet Bolius that had been standing at one corner, shot out with his cape flying behind him, giving an impression of a specter as he charged right into the midst of the rebels.

In his hands were two 2m-long Mutant Beast Bone, used like hammers as he swung them wildly at the rebels.

As long as any rebel soldier got within 5 meters of Bolius, they would be smashed into meat paste. Everywhere he passed by, he was like a devastating killing machine churning out chunks of meat.

As he continued to terrorize the rebels, the elite Sun Warriors were engaged by Yue Zhong and had no chance to impede him.

In merely 3 breaths, Bolius had appeared in front of the handsome Huangpu Liehuo.

The moment Huangpu Liehuo caught sight of Bolius in front of him, his eyes flashed with despair and regret, as he screamed shrilly, "Don't kill me!! I surrender!! I'm willing to lead the Crazy Wolf Troops to swear loyalty to Leader Yue Zhong! I'm willing to be a slave!! I'm willing to be the lowest slave!! Don't kill me!! I will lead my men to quell the chaos!! I was beguiled by Ximen Hui, that was why..."

Before his words finished, there was a loud swing of the bone mace, smashing into his head. His brains exploded out at that

instant, splattering all over the ground.

Having killed Huangpu Liehuo, Boliu continued to charge into the crowd, resuming his meat-grinding actions as he arrived in front of Ximen Hui.

Ximen Hui was full of regret as he sighed, before slashing his own neck, "Seems like I was wrong! I will use my death to atone for my sins, I plead for you to have mercy on my clansmen!"

Boliu charged right in front of him and smashed down, turning his body into meat paste, before continuing on to the 8 other members of the Ximen Village. He then turned and charged back into the crowd.

Qian Long continued to shout while in fear, leading his Velociraptor Tribe to flee, "Attack! Attack! Hold the fort!!"

Having seen the terrifying fate of Huangpu Liehuo and Ximen Hui, as well as Qian Long's attempts to flee, the rebels started to crumble, trying their best to escape. They had heard Yue Zhong's orders to kill them all, and they did not wish to die.

Seeing the collapse of the rebel army, Ma Lei shouted in excitement, waving his blade as he took the lead to chase after them, "Kill!! Leave none of these traitors alive!!"

One of the slave leaders also roared as he charged after the rebel, "Kill!! Kill the traitors!!"

The 3,000-strong army immediately felt their morale rise, as they rushed forward, slaughtering those rebels that had lost their commanders and will to fight.

Qian Long managed to extract himself from the battlefield, but after 5 breaths, the meat-grinding Boliu had appeared right in front of him. In a single swing, he managed to turn this Type 3 Divine Warrior into a squash as well.

With Qian Long's death, Boliu continued on his rampage among the rebels, tearing through them and slaughtering their

commanders or leaders, causing sprays of blood every second. This led to even more mayhem and chaos.

Kisame Shinji felt his heartbeat quicken as he fought Yue Zhong, "Damn it, there are 2 Type 4 Divine Warriors here!!"

He had led this group of a hundred Type 3 Divine Warriors under the assumption that it would not be hard dealing with an ordinary Type 4 Divine Warrior. However, Yue Zhong was a peak level Type 4 Divine Warrior, and even if they all combined their strength, it would merely be enough to keep him occupied, not having any leeway to deal with Bolius.

If they fought on like that, they would all die.

"Everyone, Mad Drive!!"

Under his roar, the Type 4 Mutant Beast nucleus in his silver Sun Armor glowed, and the runes expanded out, as boundless strength poured into him, turning his muscles tighter. His countenance grimaced in pain.

Mad Drive was a last-resort, once they used it, the nucleus power source would be sucked dry, enhancing the armor for a last-ditch power boost. Since the strength of Mutant Beasts was stronger than humans of the same realm, with such a force entering the human body, while it gave them more power for a short period of time, the backlash would be an extremely heavy price to pay, sometimes, even crippling a person.

Under his orders, the Sun Warriors all unleashed their Mad Drive, forcing themselves to absorb a large amount of power.

At the next instant, dozens of them suddenly spat out blood, crumpling on the floor, their orifices bleeding. Due to most of them being at the Type 2 realm, the peak of the Type 3 realm was their absolute limit. Their bodies could not handle even greater power.

One of them immediately died as blood flowed out all of his

orifices. However, there were some who managed to grit through the pain and began to emit a dangerous aura. They had actually gained the might of an initial Type 4 Divine Warrior.

"Mad Drive, what fools!"

Yue Zhong looked at them and laughed coldly, activating his Art of Fear, as a powerful Spiritual attack spread out and enveloped all of them.

"Ah!!"

These Sun Warriors might possess the strength of a Type 4 Divine Warrior now, but they did not have the same Spirit. Faced with such a powerful Spirit attack, they all hugged their heads and let out screams.

Even though the armor had some abilities to protect against Spirit attacks somewhat, the Sun Warriors were mostly only at Type 2 realm, thus, the gap was too huge.

Under that duress, Kisame Shinji stepped towards Yue Zhong with a countenance full of pain, swinging his ax at him.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Black Tooth Blade and blocked.

Dang!

With a loud clang, Yue Zhong was actually forced back dozens of meters from that impact, the Type 5 Black Tooth Blade in his hands trembling without stop. There was even a slight dent in the blade. Apparently, the Type 5 Black Tooth Blade could not compare to the Sun Battleaxe in Kisame Shinji's hands.

Having sent Yue Zhong away, Kisame Shinji was like a fiendgod, charging towards Yue Zhong, every step of his causing a heavy footprint on the ground. In a breath, he had already appeared in front of Yue Zhong, swinging his battleax at him.

"What a pity, your actual strength is lacking a little, otherwise, you could contend against me with this added strength!"

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, and enveloped himself with his Dark Dou Qi, dodging towards the right with a sudden burst of speed, evading the blow from Kisame Shinji.

At the same time, he pulled out his Stinger and pointed it at Kisame Shinji's head.

A bad feeling arose in Kisame Shinji's heart, and he twisted his body in order to dodge that imminent killing blow.

Peng!

Following the loud gunshot, Kisame Shinji's brains were blown apart, his body crumpling to the ground, and the silver Sun Armor on his body lost its luster.

He had borrowed the might of the Silver Sun Armor to boost his strength, but his personal ability was still lacking, and could not control the power well. As for Yue Zhong, he was at the peak of Type 4, together with the Dark Dou Qi, he almost neared the level of a Type 5 Divine Warrior. The differences between them were too huge.

With Kisame Shinji's death, the rebel army immediately fell apart and tried to flee, while the morale of the Vulture Tribe rose even higher. They displayed 120% of their combat strength, slaughtering all the traitors.

After paying a painful price, a few hundred of them managed to reach the entrance. However, the sight there caused them to despair even further. Lightning, which had reached Type 4, was currently lying in wait.

Yue Zhong had already gained a large number of nuclei from the battle at the sea. After swallowing a number of Type 4 Mutant Beast nuclei, Lightning had evolved pretty soon after.

Seeing the appearance of the traitors, Lightning flashed forward into their midst, and their heads were all removed in a shower of blood.

With Lightning guarding the entrance, and many chasing warriors from the back, the rebels were plunged into despair. Some tried to push their way through the entrance with numbers, however, the moment they got close, their heads were separated from their bodies. A Type 4 Mutant Beast was an invincible existence to these Type 2 Divine Warriors.

Many of them threw down their weapons in a bid to surrender but were met with countless spears thrusting into their bodies, turning them into sieves.

In their despair, many of them decided to fight to their deaths. They were still wiped out in the end, although they managed to slay a few slave warriors. However, any of them who revealed their abilities would almost be immediately dealt with by Bolius.

After 3 hours, every single rebel soldier was killed.

Chapter 800: Blood-sucking Bee Swarm!

After the chaos settled, Yue Zhong began issuing out new orders and reorganizing his subordinates.

Han Qiong, Shao Yun, Ma Lei and Sun Lan Lan had obtained great merits in the rebellion this time, and Yue Zhong conferred upon them titles.

At the same time, Yue Zhong also promoted a number of slaves that had performed well, directly removing their slave status, allowing them to become commanders. On top of that, he punished all the family members of the rebels, branding them as slaves, while assigning the women of the rebels as rewards to those who had just risen in rank.

Seeing their comrades achieving a different status, a bright home, beautiful women, many of them became extremely motivated to build the city up. They put in more hours and efforts, some even going out of their way to excel in their military training.

Through this rebellion, the total number of elites under Yue Zhong had reduced drastically, but after the baptism, many of their hearts and loyalty were now firmly towards Yue Zhong. At the same time, he had gained a hundred Sun Armor, allowing his military might to leap.

Since he gained the 100 Sun Armor, he began to study them carefully. Although the design was simple, the armor consisted of the top of mankind's intelligence on this world. Even the material used to make them was something Yue Zhong could not discern.

After studying them for an entire day, he chose to give up. His strength was in combat, researching into something like this was not a strength of his.

Hong!

Near a small stone mountain, a sudden explosion rocked the

entire area. The 20m-tall stone mountain suddenly blew up, revealing a small hole at the center of it.

In front of the mountain range, Yue Zhong was wearing the silver Sun Armor, equipped with a Type 4 Nucleus. He felt the energy coursing through his body, and was excited, "This Sun Armor is truly powerful, when equipped, I can exhibit the strength of an initial-stage Type 5 Divine Warrior."

Yue Zhong recovered from his joy while reassessing his knowledge about the armor, "However, since the Sun Alliance sent this unit to deal with me, that means that there should be other equivalent armors, if not stronger ones. The Sun Alliance is truly not weak!"

Having come to the conjecture that the Sun Alliance was not to be underestimated, Yue Zhong abandoned thoughts of deploying his troops against them.

"What is that? Shit!!" Yue Zhong had just kept the armor into his storage ring when he suddenly caught sight of a swarm of huge bees in the distance. Each of them was the size of a fist, their sharp stingers could be seen clearly. Looking at them, his face fell, and he dashed towards the Vulture Valley.

In a few breaths, he appeared beside Sun Lan Lan and exclaimed, "Quick! Gather everyone and hide in the bunkers!! There's danger!!"

In order to deal with the threat of airborne Mutant Beasts and the possibility of aerial combat, Yue Zhong had designated a plot of an area to be used as bunkers for his people to hide if need be.

Sun Lan Lan's face fell, without asking, she quickly picked up a simple telephone line and spoke with her clear voice, "Immediately sound the alarm for evacuation! Danger level 9!! All police patrolmen are to help with the evacuation, escort everyone into the bunkers!"

In the various corners of the valley, the burly warriors struck out 9 resounding drum sounds to declare the danger level.

Upon hearing it, everyone who was working stopped whatever they were doing, and began making their way towards the bunkers in an orderly manner.

A number of police patrolmen who had been specially designated for the role escorted the slaves and villagers towards the bunkers as well.

At that moment, as they were running, the swarm of Mutant Bees came soaring over the skies, descending at an alarming speed.

Many warriors ducked to one side, eyeing the cloud of bees that seemed to blot out the skies, their eyes filled with fear.

"Ah!! Help!! Ah!!"

One soldier was slightly slower, and a hundred bees pounced on him. At that moment, he let out a scream of despair and fear. His body was enveloped by the bees as he struggled for a while before crumpling to the ground.

When the bees left his body, holes could be seen everywhere on his corpse, which had been dried out completely.

Seeing such a horrifying scene, all the warriors became even more frightened; they did not want to be sucked dry.

When the swarm of bees descended on the valley, the shrieks and screams rang throughout the area, and within seconds, there were over a hundred people who had been reduced to dried corpses.

The villagers had been running to the bunkers in an orderly fashion, but witnessing such horrors, they could no longer maintain calm, as they pushed and shoved in a bid to reach the bunkers first.

At this moment, a fiery tornado blasted out, covering the skies above them.

With the loud sounds of crackling, a number of the Mutant Bees lost their wings and fell to the ground like rain.

Yue Zhong controlled 5 tornadoes of fire, looking like a fiery demon god that had descended as he appeared in front of them, "What are you panicking for? Maintain your order! Those who dare disrupt the order will be executed immediately! There's nothing to be afraid of! You can kill a single one yourselves! Let me handle the swarms!"

Seeing Yue Zhong appear, the people immediately calmed down, picking up clothes, wooden bats and fans in a bid to fight back those singular bees.

When the bees gathered together, they were truly terrifying, even a Type 4 expert might not be able to handle them, and they might even be sucked dry. If they were separate, then any adult would be able to smack them down as long as they did not lack the courage.

Yue Zhong continued to control his 5 tornadoes of fire to blow all around the skies, each time they blew past part of the swarm, a large number of the Mutant Bees would crash to the ground.

While a dozen people had already been sucked dry, the majority was able to resist the pain of the stings and with help from others, smacked many of the Mutant Bees dead. The rest had also managed to enter the bunkers safely.

The Mutant Bees tried to fly towards the bunkers but were assaulted by the humans within.

In this Third World, every single human had a body constitution stronger than those on Earth. Even the lowliest slave would be at least 2 times as strong as a normal person on Earth.

Of course, even if they had entered the bunkers safely, some of the unfortunate ones were still assaulted by the Mutant Bees, and sucked dry, turning into dry corpses.

Yue Zhong continued to manipulate the Devil Flames everywhere, reducing more bees into crisps. The swarm started to turn its attention towards him. At every second, he was expending a large amount of Stamina and Spirit to maintain his Devil Flame, soon, his forehead was slick with perspiration.

In the skies, the black swarm clashed against Yue Zhong's Devil Flame tornado multiple times.

After maintaining for about 5 minutes, Yue Zhong pulled out the silver Sun Armor.

He quickly put it on, and the Type 4 Nucleus in the back of the armor shone brightly, causing multiple runes to lit up and charge his body with immense strength. His Stamina and Spirit was recovered to their peak, and with a slight push, his Devil Flame tornado became even more violent.

After burning them for more than 20 minutes, the swarm finally started to turn thin. They started to feel fear and began to rise into the air as they fled from the Vulture Valley.

"We finally pulled through!"

He heaved a sigh of relief and relaxed when he saw the bees fleeing.

Kacha!

Right at this time, the Type 4 Nucleus behind the Sun Armor split apart, turning into dust.

The Type 4 Nuclei could be considered powerful energy sources. They were able to absorb the energy in the air to replenish, however, should the consumption exceed the regeneration rate, they would shatter and turn into dust.

Yue Zhong had pushed himself to the limit to enhance himself, and the expenditure had been huge, that was why the Type 4 Nucleus had shattered.

He laughed bitterly as he looked at the pile of dust, "What a loss!"

The Type 4 Nuclei were not common, each of them extremely precious. If it wasn't for his unexpected haul out at the Sea of Mutant Beasts, he might feel heartache for the coming week.

After the blood-sucking Mutant Bees left, the people began to come out from the bunkers again.

The sudden appearance of the swarm had caused 200 deaths. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong's timely discover, 90% of the entire population of the city might have perished.

Ma Lei held up one of the burnt Mutant Bees and came up to Yue Zhong excitedly, "Leader!! These are Blood-sucking Bees! Their corpses are great stuff!! We've struck it rich!!"

Table of Contents

[God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 701: Assistance!](#)

[Chapter 702: The Might of the Sky Fortress!](#)

[Chapter 703: Cleaning up the Traitors!](#)

[Chapter 704: Gates of Hell!](#)

[Chapter 705: Enter! The 2nd World!](#)

[Chapter 706: Strange Land!](#)

[Chapter 707: Brutal Human-like Creatures!](#)

[Chapter 708: Soul Enhancement!](#)

[Chapter 709: Radiation Detector!](#)

[Chapter 710: Precious Water!](#)

[Chapter 711: Mutation!](#)

[Chapter 712: The Price of Water!](#)

[Chapter 713: Mutants!](#)

[Chapter 714: Type 3 Mutants!](#)

[Chapter 715: Half-Mutants!](#)

[Chapter 716: Red Rock City!](#)

[Chapter 717: Sacred Clan!](#)

[Chapter 718: Lisa!](#)

[Chapter 719: Rebel Army!](#)

[Chapter 720: Type RH2 Main Battle Robot!](#)

[Chapter 721: Fleeing Red Rock City!](#)

[Chapter 722: Luo Chen!](#)

[Chapter 723: Contact!](#)

[Chapter 724: Strike!](#)

[Chapter 725: Relentless Assault!](#)

[Chapter 726: Jack!](#)

[Chapter 727: Victory at a Cost!](#)

[Chapter 728: Prophecy!](#)

[Chapter 729: Exchange of Authority!](#)

[Chapter 730: Vast Difference in Strength!](#)

[Chapter 731: The Ancient Ruins!](#)

[Chapter 732: Type 4 Divine Warrior!](#)

[Chapter 733: Battle between the Saint Clan and Mutants!](#)

[Chapter 734: Mysterious Traction Force!](#)

[Chapter 735: Underground Hall!](#)

[Chapter 736: Type 5 Divine Warrior Radis!](#)

[Chapter 737: Treasure of Hope!](#)

[Chapter 738: The Might of Bai Yi!](#)

[Chapter 739: Shaxi!](#)

[Chapter 740: Stunning Torrent of Steel!](#)

[Chapter 741: Important Meeting of the Council!](#)

[Chapter 742: Qing Zhang City!](#)

[Chapter 743: Qi Qing'er!](#)

[Chapter 744: Liu Yi Chen!](#)

[Chapter 745: Courtesan Competition!](#)

[Chapter 746: Hunting Party!](#)

[Chapter 747: Burning Carl to Death!](#)

[Chapter 748: Entering the City Lord's Mansion!](#)

[Chapter 749: Puppet Box!](#)

[Chapter 750: The Airship arrives!](#)

[Chapter 751: Puppet Rune!](#)

[Chapter 752: Type 4 Puppet!](#)

[Chapter 753: Floxenia!](#)

[Chapter 754: The Resistance Headquarters!](#)

[Chapter 755: Traitor!](#)

[Chapter 756: Cluster!](#)

[Chapter 757: The Saint Clan Army!](#)

[Chapter 758: Type 5 Saint Clan Member, Sitolius!](#)

[Chapter 759: Reversal of the Situation!](#)

[Chapter 760: Entering the Ship!](#)

[Chapter 761: Suppressing Xiangma Yiming!](#)

[Chapter 762: Horde of Strange Snakes!](#)

[Chapter 763: The Snake Race!](#)

[Chapter 764: Destroying Sitolius!](#)

[Chapter 765: Type 6 Giant Snake Aremando!](#)

[Chapter 766: Saint City!](#)

[Chapter 767: Returning to Earth!](#)

[Chapter 768: Fury!](#)

[Chapter 769: Consecutively Destroying 11 Cities!](#)

[Chapter 770: Gong Chang Tian's Death!](#)

[Chapter 771: Type 5 Mutant Beasts' Battle!](#)

[Chapter 772: Velociraptors appears!](#)
[Chapter 773: Level 10 Treasure!](#)
[Chapter 774: Prehistoric Giant Mosquitoes!](#)
[Chapter 775: Dino Slave-Hunting Team!](#)
[Chapter 776: Prison Break!](#)
[Chapter 777: Icy Hell!](#)
[Chapter 778: Dino-General!](#)
[Chapter 779: Suppressing Uribi Taichi!](#)
[Chapter 780: Mid-Grade Dinosaur General Ku Misaki!](#)
[Chapter 781: Flee!](#)
[Chapter 782: Sea of Mutant Beasts!](#)
[Chapter 783: Type 6 Cetiosaurus!](#)
[Chapter 784: Face-off of the 3 Clans!](#)
[Chapter 785: Radiant Battleship!](#)
[Chapter 786: God-Devil Nucleus!](#)
[Chapter 787: Gaining the Radiant Battleship!](#)
[Chapter 788: Signs of Humans!](#)
[Chapter 789: Shao Village!](#)
[Chapter 790: Beast Meat in exchange for Beauty!](#)
[Chapter 791: Vulture Tribe!](#)
[Chapter 792: Slice the Enemy!](#)
[Chapter 793: The Sun Alliance!](#)
[Chapter 794: Storming the Vulture Tribe!](#)
[Chapter 795: Han Qiong's Transformation!](#)
[Chapter 796: Explosive Potential!](#)
[Chapter 797: Prehistoric Technology!](#)
[Chapter 798: Sun Warriors!](#)
[Chapter 799: Silencing Kisame Shinji!](#)
[Chapter 800: Blood-sucking Bee Swarm!](#)